

A NEW
SPANISH
GRAMMAR,

More perfect than any hitherto publish'd.

All the ERRORS of the former being
Corrected, and the RULES for Learning
that Language much improv'd.

To which is added, A

VOCABULARY

Of the most necessary WORDS:

Also a COLLECTION of

PHRASES *and* DIALOGUES

Adapted to

FAMILIAR DISCOURSE.

By Capt. **JOHN STEVENS**, Author
of the large **SPANISH DICTIONARY.**

The SECOND EDITION.

The whole Improved, Corrected, and Amended,
By **SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.**

L O N D O N:

Printed for **T. MEIGHAN** in *Drury-Lane*,
T. COX at the *Lamb* under the *Royal-Ex-*
change, and **J. WOOD** in *Pater-noster-row.*

MDCCXXXIX.





A L

Múi ilustre y nóble Señor

Don *GUILLELMO STANHOPE*,

Señór Barón de *HARRINGTON*,

Embaxadór que fue en la Corte de España, Plenipotenciário en los Congressos de Sevilla, y Soissons; y al presente úno de los Principáles Secretários de Estado de su Magestad Británica, del Consejo de su Mag^d. &c.

Exc^{mo}. Señor.



O dexára en mi de ser animosidad temerária, el poner éste libro à los piés de V. Ex. si su buén índole y afabilidad no le quitássen el ser Ossadía.

El Nombre de Stanhope es tan conocido en España, de tantos años à ésta parte; y su múi ilustre y nóble Profápia, tan altamente respetáda y apláudida, que nunca cederá al olvido su Memoria: yá

DEDICATION.

por las Muchas y continuadas Embaxadas conque han ilustrado aquella Corte ; yá por las heróicas hazañas, que, en tiempo de Guerra, han merecido los aplausos de la Europa toda ; ò yá por la tranquilidad, que han fegerido en vários Congrésos para el bién público. En tiempo de Páz, les ha venerado la España como Nativos de aquél País, y en tiempo de Guerra les há considerado tan Galanes como Valerosos. En recíproca benevolencia, siempre aquella familia há mostrado tal inclinación y Caríño à los de aquella nación, que, parece, le asiste una propensión innata à beneficiarles y protegerles.

Esto es, loque esfuerza mi humildad à ofrecér à V. Ex. éste tenuísimo obsequio ; pues V. E. há heredado, como que en compléxo, lo heróico y especiales prerogativas de la familia toda : há seguído los pássos, continuado los progréssos, y adelantado la glória de sus Antecessóres. Háí muchos, que conságran sus libros à Príncipes y Proceres, ajénos del conocimiento de que trátan, dando por motivo la necesidad de su proteccion cóntra los Malévolos (como si con el libro no se compráse la libertad de murmurár del) : Mas cuerdos y menos Lifonjéros éran los Antíguos, que dedicában los súyos, ò à sus Amigos, ò algùn Príncipe inteligente, à quién, por razón del argumento, se le debía la óbra. Y revoquando yo al úso moderno la práctica de los Antíguos, Nádíe podrá negár mi acierto en la eleccion de V. E. pues elíjo à Persóna tan beneméríta, que puede juzgár y aprobár : luégo en váno solicitára yo à V. E. para la acceptacion, quando de justícia se le debe esta dedicatória. Sé bién, que el tributárle elógios, será ofendér su Modéstia : Porloque suplico, solo, elque V. E. se digne de recebír y patrocínár ésta obrilla, como à demostración de mi Afecto y Veneración. En caso, que V. E. halláre algo de su agrádo

DEDICATION.

grádo y mereciére su aprobación, me quedará el consuélo de decírle, loque Horácio à su Mecénas :

Magnum hoc ego duco, quod placui tibi.

Y la obligación de rogár à Diós, le G^{de}. y prospére por dilatádos años : Afsegurándole, que en tanto me tendré por feliz, en quanto publicaré que fói, con el debído rendimiento, de

V. Exc^a.

El mas humilde y Obediente servidór

Q. B. S. M.

SEBASTIAN PUCHOL, D. D.



THE P R E F A C E.

UPON a careful Examination of this Grammar, (*altho' the best that is extant,*) I found the Rules laid down so very deficient and incorrect, that I thought I could not do the Publick a greater Service, than by presenting them with one more perfect. This induced me to undertake the Correction of it; to lay down a new, modern, and approved Orthography and Etymology; and to add so many necessary Rules to it, that the Reader, who is acquainted with the former Edition, will hardly know that this is STEVENS'S GRAMMAR. I do not intend to undervalue what others have done of this Nature: What I can say without Presumption is, that I have consulted all former Grammars, and inserted in this what I have found well grounded: I have rectified Abundance of Mistakes, which other Authors have passed over, and corrected others laid down by them as established Rules; and I leave the Learned to Judge of the many Improvements made in this Edition.

The

The P R E F A C E.

The Rules for the true Pronuntiati^on are as clearly expressed as can be done in Writing. The Articles and Parts of Speech are explained in a Manner easy and intelligible to young Beginners. The Conjugation of Verbs (one of the most intricate Parts of the Castilian Language) is laid down in the most plain Manner, to each of which is added that of the Passive, Reciprocal, Impersonal, and other irregular Verbs. I have also inserted two Tables, by which the Learned will, at first view, see the Difference between the three Conjugations.

The Curious will herein find all that is requisite and necessary, to lead them into the perfect Knowledge of the Castilian (commonly called the Spanish Tongue) which has been preserved in those Provinces, in a greater Purity and Perfection, than in any other of the more distant ones from the Court: This was the Reason that induced King Don Alonzo the Wise to order that all publick Writings, &c. should be made in the Castilian Tongue. I have laid down some fixt Rules in the Rudiments, to avoid ambiguity in the Pronuntiati^on of the Letters B, V, &c. erroneously used before, even among the Spaniards. The Vocabulary, Familiar Phrases, and the Colloquies are carefully amended; and all the Words are accented to avoid Mistakes in the Pronunciati^on.

*It was high Time (nay there was an absolute necessity) to make a new Edition of the Spanish Grammar: For all Languages alter by Time and Custom; and the Castilian has received so many Alterations, that no-body can pretend to teach it, or learn it in Perfection, as it is spoken at Court, and used by modern Authors, without some new Instructions. The c,
(called*

THE PREFACE.

(called cedilla) which was so much in use before, is now left off, and the Reasons for it the Reader will find in my Observations on that Letter, and the *z* is substituted in its Place. The *y*, which commonly passed as a Vowel, is now a Consonant in Composition. Some of the Spanish Words are softened, and others altered, as more conformable to the Latin; as instead of *Coraçon* we say *Corazón*: for *vezes*, *dezir*, *hazer*; *véces*, *decir*, *hacer*: instead of *estoy*, *doy*, *Reyno*; *estói*, *dói*, *Réino*: for *dava*, *iva*, *devo*, *escrivo*; *dába*, *íba*, *débo*, *escribo*: for *Cavállo*, *Gobierno*; *Ca-bállo*, *Gobiérno*: for *abuelo* or *aguelo*; *avuélo*: *háí* for *ay* or *hay*: *Ahí* for *aí* or *haí*, &c. I have followed, in the Correction of this Grammar, the Dictionary lately published by the Royal Academy of Madrid, which is the only Standard for all those who aim at Speaking and Writing correctly and elegantly the Spanish Language.



A NEW,



THE
R U D I M E N T S
OF THE
Spanish Grammar.



S there are many who study the CASTILIAN language, without understanding before-hand what Grammar is, and that every body may have certain rules for his guide, I think it may not be useless to make an epitomy of it and its parts.

GRAMMAR is the art of speaking and writing properly. And is divided into four parts, *viz.*

ORTHOGRAPHY, or the method of true writing.

ETYMOLOGY, or the knowledge of the original words.

SYNTAX, or the manner of forming the words into sentences.

PROSODY, or the knowledge of the accent or quantity of the syllables, as to their being pronounced long or short.

B

PART

P A R T I.

Of O R T H O G R A P H Y,

Which contains some very curious and necessary observations to learn the Castilian tongue in perfection.

C H A P. I.

Of the Letters in general.

THE *Spanish* language has not a peculiar alphabet of it's own, tho' it is not disputable, but that before the conquest of *Spain* by the *Romans*, the *Spaniards* had characters or letters to express their language in, and that the *Goths* also introduced theirs. But there is no memorial of the former, and the *Gothic* ceased in the year 1091 by decree of the national council at *Leon*, in the reign of Don *Alonso VI.* in which it was appointed that no characters should be used besides that of the *Roman*: Ever since which time they have continued the *Latin* letters; with the addition of a few borrowed from the *Greek*, in order to own their debt for such words as they took from that language, and these are *cb*, *k*, *ph*, *th*, *y*, correspondent to *χ*, *κ*, *φ*, *θ*, and *υ*.

The *Castilian* alphabet consists of twenty-six letters, including the *b*: the twenty-three following are common to other languages.

A, B, C, D, E, F, G, H, I, K, L, M, N, O, P, Q,
R, S, T, U, X, Y, Z.

a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i, k, l, m, n, o, p, q, r, s,
t, u, x, y, z.

And

And the other three letters ç, j, ñ, for their different pronunciation are peculiar to the *Castilian* language.

Of the common, these five are vowels A, E, I, O, U, to which the Y is added for the Greek words, so called from their expressing a sound without the help of any other letter. The rest are consonants, so called from their having no sound alone, and are regularly divided into *mutes* and *semi-vowels*; or, as others say, into *natural* and *confus'd*: the *mutes* or *natural* are B, C, D, G, K, P, Q, T, Z, and the *semi-vowels* or *confused* are F, H, L, M, N, R, S, X, so called for their being pronounced with a vowel before and after it.

Of which L, M, N, R, S, are liquids: ç, j, ñ, v, and y, are likewise consonants in the *Spanish* language.

Of the pronunciation of the letters.

A Letter is nothing more (in the sense we speak here) than a note of a peculiar sound, and an individual part of a syllable.

Letters are (as some authors affirm) in comparison to the languages what notes are to Musick. If from the notes may be formed various and innumerable tones; whose sweet and pleasant harmony cherish, and with sounding eloquence persuades; so are the concerts of words infinite, which result from the letters, whose composition with an eloquent melody describes to us the thoughts, and brings the invisible to life: both as written, speak to the eyes, and as pronounced, to the hearing. And if nobody without the perfect knowledge of notes can boast of being a Musician; less can any one presume to know with delicacy a language without a full knowledge of the letters.

4 *The RUDIMENTS of*

For which reason, and as in the order of nature, the simple is first, and then the compound, it appears proper to begin by the vowels, whose sound is so simple as to be formed only by opening the mouth.

Of the vowels.

A a

IS pronounced as in *English*, *aw*, as in the words *all*, *ball*, *call*, *ball*: without differing from the manner in which it is pronounced by other nations.

E e

Is pronounced the same as in the *Latin*, *Italian*, and *French* tongues, nay even the same as in the English in the words *to bless*, *to send*.

Tho' *e* be doubled it never loses its pronunciation, so that when there are two *ee* in a word, both are plainly and distinctly pronounced, as *créer*, to believe; *léer*, to read.

I. Y.

These letters are called *i Latin*, and *y Greek*: the former preserves it's natural pronunciation in composition, and is pronounced by all nations, as in these words, *visible*, *vision*, *terrible*: the latter has the same pronunciation; but when in composition is a consonant, and is pronounced as two *ii*, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast.

Of *j* called *i jóta*. See letter G.

O

Has the same pronunciation as in *Latin* and *English*, in these words *thróno*, throne; *obediente*, obedient.

I

U.

U. V.

The *Spanish* language has two *u*'s as well as the *Latin* ; *u* vowel called by the *Spaniards* an open or square *u* ; and *v* consonant called *v* close, or *de Corazoncillo*, which always goes before the vowels, and is never joined to a consonant, nor ends any word. *U* vowel is pronounced as double *o o* in *English*, and these words *Cupido* a *Cupid*, *Cúra* a *Curate* or a *Cure*, are pronounced as if they were written thus *Coopido*, *coora* ; because the pronunciation of the words book *libro*, cook *cazinéro*, is exactly the same as that of the *u* vowel in *Spanish*.

V consonant is pronounced by the *Spaniards* in the same manner as the *u* vowel ; tho' there are some authors who pretend to say, that it's pronunciation is a sound between that of *b* and *u*, but I see no manner of ground for this exception.

Observations upon the vowels.

A.

THIS letter has often the masculine accent, as *amará*, he will love ; *bará*, he will do it ; and the feminine, as *amára*, when I might love, in the last syllable. There are four diphthongs formed of this vowel when it goes before other vowels, as we shall shew hereafter.

A when by itself, stands for a preposition which denotes the dative case, as *dói la preferéncia à Pédro*, I give the preference to Peter ; it governs also the accusative, as *yo ámo à Dios*, I love God ; denotes the part or place where one goes, as *vói à Róma*, I go to Rome, it also precedes the accusative when before an infinitive governed by another verb, as *vámos à cenár*,

6 The RUDIMENTS of

cenár, let us go to supper ; *à passeár*, to walk ; *à jugár*, to play.

When before the adverbs or adverbial moods it denotes the manner in which an action is executed, as *à sabiéndas*, knowingly ; *à trúeco*, by changing ; rather purposely, *à brázo partido*, upon equal terms : *à* denotes likewise when a thing is to be done, as *à las doce del día*, at noon.

It is often an interjection, as *à señór fuláno*, ho there such a one ; *à señór Pédro*, ho there Peter.

It is taken for *con*, with, as *castíguese el oficial à péna capital*, let the officer be punished with a capital punishment.

For *bácia*, towards, as *volvió la cabeça à tal parte*, he turned his head towards such a place.

For *pára*, for, as *condúce à este fin*, it is proper for this end.

For *por*, by, as *à fuérza ganó la ciudad*, by force he gained the city.

For *según*, according, as *à la móda de Francia*, according to the French fashion.

For *si*, if, as *à saber esto*, if I knew this—, upon knowing of this.

For *sino*, if not, unless, as *à no venir à tiempo*, if he should not come in time, &c.

For *en*, in, as *à vista de tal proceder que quiere que haga?* upon sight of such proceeding what will you have me to do ?

And tho' there are many authors who are of opinion, that *à* stands for the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *haver*, to have, saying *aquél á*, I say that then it is to be written with an *b* thus *aquél bá*, observing the same in all the tenses and moods ; for *haver* is derived from the Latin verb *habere*, and regard being had to this there will happen no mistake or equivocation.

There are other authors who assert, that *à* stands for *bái*, there is, which is absolutely false ; for in the speeches which denote time, as *à un año que vine à Londres*,

Lóndres, it is a year since I came to London, à must be written with *b* thus *bá* abbreviated, or by the figure Apocope, because then it is the third person singular of the present tense indicative of the verb *hacer*, to do, and is the same as *báce un año que vine à Lóndres*, according to the rule.

Apocope demit finem, quem dat Paragoge.

But of these we shall speak more at large in another place.

E.

E either is masculine, as in the last syllable of *amaré*, I shall love; *aprenderé*, I will learn; *enseñé*, I have taught; *oiré*, I shall hear, &c. or feminine, as *quando amáre*, when I shall love; *quando olvidáre*, when I shall forget; and it is so because the accent is not acute in these last examples.

Of the *è*, when before other vowels, may be formed four diphthongs.

E is sometimes used as a first person of the verb *haber*, but then it must be written with *b*, saying *yo he comprado un anillo de oro*, I have bought a gold ring.

It is often a conjunction, and is used instead of *y*, when the following word begins with *i* vowel, as *los Holandésés è Inglésés*, the Dutch and the English *España è Italia*, Spain and Italy.

Poets often take the liberty to add the letter *e* at the end of some words using the figure Paragoge, saying *amóre* for *amor*, love, and this they do for the sake of the rhyme.

E is sometimes an interjection, but then *b* must be added to it, as *bé, que dices?* ha! what do you say? *bé, que quierés?* ha! what you will have? it stands likewise for an adverb, as *bé, la mugér*, see! the woman,

I. Y.

The *Latin i* stands for a vowel in the *Spanish* language, and the *y* for a consonant ; but when a strong aspiration is required in the pronunciation, then *j* serves as a consonant, as *yá*, already ; *jústo*, just.

When the accent is laid on the *i* as *leí*, *ví*, then it has a masculine pronunciation, and when not, a feminine one.

There are four diphthongs also formed from this vowel.

When *y* is by itself in a speech, it is generally a conjunction copulative, and sometimes suspensive, as *Juán y Pedro*, *y búyen*, *y corren*, *y peléan*, John and Peter, fly, run, and fight : But it must be observed, that when the following word begins with *i*, then by Euphonia *e* must be made use of instead of *y*, as *los Españóles e Italiános*, *Francésés e Inglésés*, the Spaniards and the Italian, the French and the English.

I or *y* are sometimes put instead of *abí*, there, but as this use is merely voluntary it must be never used.

O.

This letter is also pronounced sometimes with a masculine accent, as *amó*, he loved ; *respondió*, he answered.

Four diphthongs are formed of this letter, when it precedes other vowels.

When the *o* is by itself in a speech, it is often a conjunction disjunctive, as *ò sábio*, *ò ignorante*, *ò brávo*, *ò covarde*, *ha de venir*, *con mígo*, let him be wise, or ignorant, or brave, or a coward, he must come with me.

It is likewise an interjection, as *ò maldad !* *ò dolor !* O wickedness ! O pain ! but of this we shall speak more largely in another place.

As an adverb, as *ò si yo fuéa rico*, O that I were rich.

U is

U.

U is sometimes pronounced with a masculine accent, as *tú*, *fü*, thou, his ; of it are likewise made four diphthongs.

When after a *g*, *u* is joined to *e* or *i*, then *u* loses its pronunciation ; and these words, *Guedéja*, a lock of hair ; *guía* a guide, are pronounced as in the English words of giddy, Guinea, or as in the French words *guerre*, war ; *guérir*, to cure. *Aguéro*, an omen ; *verguénza*, shame, &c. are excepted.

When it is by itself in a speech, then it is a conjunction, or interjection, instead of *o*, when the word following begins with an *o*, as *impediméto ù obstáculo*, impediment or obstacle.

Of the pronunciation of the Consonants.

B. b.

THIS letter is pronounced as in other languages, closing the lips, and as if it had an *e* after it, as in the English word *Bay*.

As to the letter *b*, its difference, and similitude of pronunciation with the letter *v*, we must refer the reader to the 2d chapter as to its proper place.

C, ç, Z.

C when before the letters *e i* is pronounced softer than *s*, as *cédro*, a cedar tree ; *ciélo*, heaven : when before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced as *k*, as *cára*, the face ; *comér*, to eat ; *cuérda*, a cord or rope.

When *b* follows the letter *c*, it is pronounced as in the English cheese, *quéso* ; child, *niño-niña* ; thus are *cbánza*, a jest ; *chocoláte*, chocolate ; *chíco*, little, small ; *múcho*, much : these words excepted *charidad*, charity ; *chóro*, a choir ; *Archángel*, an Archangel, &c. which are

are derived from the *Latin* *charitas*, *chorus*, *archangelus*, for *c* then is pronounced as *k*.

Upon the *Cedilla* formed with a small dash under it, I think it convenient to observe; first, that as by a resolution newly taken by the members of the Royal Academy at *Madrid*, the *ç* had been only invented to supply the defect of combination of *ce*, *ci*, in the three vowels *a*, *o*, *u*, in order to pronounce *ça*, *ço*, *çu*, instead of *ca*, *co*, *cu*; and this having taken place, and with the same softness as the *z*; the *ç* is reputed at present as superfluous; and the reason is, because *ç*, in the opinion of several authors, is not a different letter from the *z*, but the same differently formed, this being the reason why many authors have used both promiscuously, for their pronunciation are very much alike in these words, *çapatér*, *ozapatéro*, a shoe-maker; *cáça*, *cáza*, hunting, &c. Besides, because *ç* is not found in the mother tongues, and the *z* is; further the *z* is a general letter in the beginning, middle, and ending of any word, which cannot be said of the letter *ç*, for which reason, it often cannot be used in the middle of a word, and in the end never; no body having written as yet *almirantáçgo*, admiralty; *balláçgo*, a reward for a thing lost; *mereçeo*, I deserve; *padeçco*, I do suffer; *desliç*, a slipping; *luç*, light; *paç*, peace; *veloç*, swift. Wherefore I am of opinion that *ç* is superfluous in the *Spanish* language, and as such it's use must be avoided, placing the *z* in it's stead in every word where *ç* used to be.

But as *ç* is found in most of the *Spanish* authors, I think it proper to acquaint the curious, that it's pronunciation is the same as that of *c* when before the vowels *e* *i*; because, as has been said, *ç* was invented to supply the combination in the vowels, *a*, *o*, *u*. And tho' a certain rule might be given to keep both the *ç* and the *z* in the said language, which is, to use the *ç* when a consonant precedes, as *alabánça*, a praise; *enseñança*, instruction, teaching,

&c.

&c. and to use *z* when a vowel goes before, and in the beginning and end of words, as *altéza*, highness; *razón*, reason; *zélo*, zeal; *lúz*, light, &c. but as the foregoing opinion is better grounded, I think it more right to take away the *ç* and to use the *z*, as the modern authors do, whom I follow. *Z* is pronounced as the *English* pronounce the double *ff*.

D. d.

D has the same sound in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin* and other languages. And although there are several authors who are of opinion that *d* is not to be pronounced when at the end of a word, yet I am of a contrary opinion, and say that it always is to be pronounced if it is written, with this difference only, that when it ends a word, its sound is softer, laying the accent on the preceding vowel, as *amistád*, friendship; *bondád*, goodness, &c.

F f

Does not differ in its sound from that of the *Latin*, or of other languages; but it must be observed, that the *Spaniards* never use *ff* in their writings, as will be said afterwards, and if some do double them it is by way of a voluntary affectation. A certain author takes notice, that the *Spaniards* confound *f* with *ph*, or, to speak more proper, they use *f* instead of *ph*; I don't doubt but that in every nation there are ignorant people, but those who are skilled in Orthography ought to conform to the manner in which words are written in the original.

G. g. J. X.

G is only guttural before the vowels *e*, *i*, but *j* and *x* are always aspirated, or guttural letters in the whole combination of the vowels, because in the
same

same manner is pronounced *ja, je, ji, jo, ju*, as *xa, xe*, &c. *x* is not guttural in some words derived from the *Latin*, as *eximír*, to exempt; *exámen*, examination, &c. as it will be said in the 2d chapter, and when it goes before a consonant, as *excedér*, to exceed; *excitár*, to excite; *excluír*, to exclude; *excremento*, excrement, &c.

G before the vowels *a, o, u*, is not aspirated or guttural, and is pronounced as in other languages, as *gállo*, a cock; *gólpe*, a blow; *gústto*, taste, pleasure. I cannot agree with some authors, who say, that when *g* comes before *n* it is sunk in the pronunciation, because the men of learning in *Spain* generally pronounce it, as in *Ignácio*, Ignatius; *ignorár*, to be ignorant; *ignóto*, unknown; *magnánimo*, magnanimous; *magnífico*, magnificent, &c.

H.

Jordan, Martinianus, Tominque, in his *Elench. Elem. P. II. Art. III.* *Littleton* in his *Latin Dictionary* lett. *H*, and other authors are of opinion that *H* (called by *St Jerom* an extensive vowel) is a letter for the following reasons.

First, a Letter is nothing else than a note of a peculiar sound, and a single part of a syllable; *h* is the same: therefore the *h* is a letter.

Secondly, The *h* comes originally from the *Hebrew* and *Greek* tongues; it was a letter with them: why then should it not be the same in the living languages? &c.

The *Spanish* authors place the *h* among the semi-vowels, because before and after it has a vowel in its pronunciation. See the abovesaid authors. But as the public has received the *h* with *Priscianus* as a note of aspiration and not as a letter, we must conform to it whether with reason or without it. *H* is generally pronounced so gently, that in many words it can scarce be perceived, as *bómbre*, a man; *humilde*, humble;

humble ; but when *ue* follows *b*, then *bu* is pronounced as the *English* *w* ; *búerta*, a garden ; *buésped*, an host or guest ; *buéssó*, a bone : like *wérta*, *wésped*, *wéssó*.

H after *c* is pronounced as in *English*, *church*, *much*, *iglésia*, *múcho*. Although some authors observe, that the *Spaniards* very rarely use the *b* after *p* and *t*, I say, that the *Spanish* tongue does not allow them the liberty to do it, and thus the learned must conform themselves to the etymology of words, saying *Thomás*, Thomas ; *Theología*, Theology or Divinity ; *Philosophía*, Philosophy.

K.

The *Spaniards* make use of this letter only in conformity to the etymology of the words derived from other languages, as *Kalendário*, a Kalendar ; *Kalendas*, Kalends, the first day of the month, *Kyrie eleison*, &c. Greek ; and in proper names of cities, towns, &c. at *Kelmo*, *Kenard*, *Kunigunda*, &c. Saxon.

L. 1.

Besides the single *l*, there is a double *ll* in *Spanish* language as in the *Latin*, but differently pronounced : the single one is pronounced as in other languages, but the double *ll* as in the *Italian* *gl* in the words *Figli*, *Moglie*, &c. or as the double *ll* in *French* in the words *coquille*, *fille*, &c. which sounds as if an *i* was after the first *l*, as of *lláve*, a key ; *llover*, to rain ; *callár*, to be silent, read *liáve*, *liovér*, *caliár*. *L* is never doubled in the end of words.

It must be observed, that all words that have a double *l* in the *Latin*, are written in *Spanish* with a single one.

M.

M is pronounced as in other languages, as *máno*, a hand ; *camino*, a way ; *mádre*, mother, &c. in what manner 'tis to be doubled, or when it is to be kept single

14 The RUDIMENTS of

single in the composition we shall speak afterwards in chap. 3.

N.

There are two *n*'s in the *Spanish* language, one which is common to all languages, and is pronounced alike with them; another proper and peculiar to the *Spanish*, written thus *ñ*, which is equivalent to two *n n*, and is called *n con tilde*, and is pronounced as *gn* in *Italian* and *French*, or, as if it had an *i* after *n*, as in these words, *áño*, a year; *níño*, a child; *montaña*, a mountain; saying thus, *agno* or *anio*, *nigno* or *ninio*, &c.

P.

There is nothing to be observed in the letter *p*, but that its pronunciation is the same as in *Latin*, as *pán*, bread; *Pédro*, Peter.

Pb are used as *f*, and pronounced in the same manner; but that in writing *f* ought to be used for *pb* is an insupportable error: because with *pb* and not with *f* are to be written the following words, *Philósopho*, a Philosopher; *Phyfico*, a Physician; *Physiología*, Philosophy, &c.

The *Latin p* is often changed into *b*, as of *recipere*, *recebír*, to receive; but of this we shall speak hereafter.

Q.

U always follows this letter as in other languages, and is pronounced in the same manner. When *ui* follows after *q*, then it is pronounced as if there was a *k* instead of *qu*, saying *quinto*, *kinto*, fifth, *quince*, *kince*, fifteen; but when it follows *ua* or *ue*, the *u* is pronounced, tho' not strong, as *questión*, a question; *consequência*, a consequence; *quátro*, four, &c. the following are excepted, *tóque*, let him touch or ring;

ring; *repique*, let him ring out; *líquido*, liquid; *que*, that; *querer*, to be willing; *quién*, who; which are pronounced as if they were written with *k*.

R

No way differs in it's sound from the *Latin* and *English*; but it must be observed, that at the beginning of words it is pronounced stronger than at the middle and end, because the initial *r* is equal to two *r r*, which always are pronounced with vehemence.

S.

S simple, as well as compound, is pronounced as in *Latin*: *cum amassem sanctos, como amásse los santos*, when I could love the saints; *ò altísimo Dios*, O most high God: from whence it may be inferred, that all the preterimperfects of the optative, and the superlatives, are written and accented as in the *Latin*.

S in the *Spanish* is doubled in words derived from the *Latin*, of which we shall give sufficient notice in its place, but never is doubled at the end of words; and when they begin in the *Latin* with *s* to which follows a consonant as *c, m, p, t*, then is added an *e*, as from *scholasticus* say *escolástico*; *scribere, escribir*; *smaragdus, esmeralda*; *spina, espina*; *spiritus, espíritu*.

T.

This letter is pronounced as in *Latin*, in the combination of all the vowels, as *Tácito, Taño, tenaz*, &c. still or quiet, the sense of feeling, tenacious, in the middle of several words *t* is changed into *c*, and especially in words ending in *tia* and *tio*, as from *beneficentia* say *beneficencia*, from *essentia, essencia*; *justitia, justicia*, &c. beneficence, essence, justice.

There

There is no double *t* in the *Spanish* language.

When the original words have *tb*, they are to be written in the same manner in the *Spanish*; as *Cátbedra*, *Catbólico*, *Mathéo*, *Theología*, pronouncing the *tb* as a single *t*.

X.

This is a guttural letter. Vid. Let. G.

I do only observe here, that all the *Spanish* words that begin with *x* are *Arabick*, except the following that come from the *Greek*, *Xanthénia*, a precious stone like amber in its colour; *Xánto*, a precious stone of a very yellow colour; *Xeniolo*, a small gift; *Xenodóchio*, an hospice, or an inn for strangers; *Xenón*, an habitation, a dwelling-place, a lodging; *Xenopárochos*, officers appointed to provide for the Ambassadors; *Xyrotbéca*, the case wherein the Barbers put their razors and scissars; *Xysto*, a gallery, a summer-house, or an open place to take the air about a garden.

Y. Vid. Let. I.

Z. Vid. Let. C.

C H A P. II.

Of the letters when in composition.

THE only and sure rule to reduce the *Castilian* language in perfection, is to write it as it is spoke, and really pronounced; it is by this only that it is distinguished, and exceeds all other languages, not excepting the *Latin*; I have said the *Latin*, because that language joins the diphthongs, pronouncing only one letter, when they are wrote with two as *Celum* is pronounced *Celum*; but the *Castilian*

Castellan pronounces its diphthongs in such a manner, that without losing a letter it preserves the sound of both vowels in one syllable, as *alcáide*, *áire*, *réy*, *léy*, *buéy*, &c. this being agreeable to the sense which the Antients gave of the word *diphthong*, defining it thus: *Diphthongus est duarum in una syllaba vocalium sonus perceptus*, a diphthong is the distinct sound of two vowels in one syllable; for which reason I am of opinion, that the Antients pronounced *Latin* in the same manner that the *Spanish* is now pronounced; and if it was not foreign to my present purpose, I would prove clearly the time when and how the *Latin* pronunciation has been corrupted, and by what means the syneresis in the diphthongs was introduced, but as this suffices for the present, I shall proceed in my design.

In order to form the Orthography, it is necessary to observe the modifications by which time has smoothed the roughness of words, and reduced them to the modern stile and manner of discourse: But as there are many, who manage the *Castilian* tongue in proportion to their genius, confounding letters together in their pronunciation, and using the consonants at their pleasure; to avoid such abuse it is proper to know,

That the springs from whence flow such variety and confusion in the Orthography are the following. First, the similitude of the pronunciation of some letters, whose use is so uncertain, that they are often mixed, and by the meer pronunciation it is difficult to distinguish their proper use: such are the *B* and *V* consonant, the *C* and the *Z* in the proper combinations, and in those of the *C*, in the two vowels *e* and *i*, the *G*, *J*, and *X* in the two vowels *e*, *i*, the *J* and *X* in their entire combinations; the *C* and the *Q*, and the *G* and *H*, in the combinations where the *u* interposes. Secondly, the use of the double consonants, which are commonly found in compound words, as *accesión*, *immortal*, *anotár*,
C *arreglár*,

arreglár, dissimulár, &c. Thirdly, the use of many consonants which come together in various words, as *assumpto, sanctidad, demonstraci3n, redempci3n, &c.* This being supposed.

I say, first, that the *B* ought not to be pronounced and written instead of the *V*, nor the *V* be confounded with the *B*; since every one knows that they are different letters, and therefore it is absolutely necessary that their sound should be likewise different. To surmount this difficulty, regard must be had to the original from whence proceed the words in which these letters are found, because if they are derived from a word written with a *B*, as *Baculus, Beatus, Beneficium, bibere, bonus, &c.* they must be written with a *B*; and if from a word written with a *V*, they must be wrote so; as *Vácuo, valér, váno, vapór, vendér, venír, vída, &c.* which are derived from the Latin *vacuus, valere, vapor, vendere, venire, vita.*

For which reason all the preterimperfects of the indicative mood must be wrote with *B*, and not with *V*, as is usual, saying, *amába, cantába, bablába, orába*, because they come from the Latin *amabam, cantabam, loquebar, orabam.*

It must be observed likewise, that when in the original of a word there is a *P*, then the *B* must be used and not the *V*, because from *caput, concipere, lupus, sapiens, &c.* comes *cabéza, concebír, lóbo, sábio.*

Before the letters *L* and *R*, the *B* must always be put and not the *V*, saying *amáble, dáble, dóble, bablá, abrí, brávo, Hómbre, Póbre.*

Therefore that barbarous distinction ought to be avoided which ignorance has introduced, viz. that there must not be two *BB*'s or two *VV*'s in one word; because, if they are in the root they ought to be used, as in *Bárba, Bebér, Bárbaro, vivetidad, vivir, viviente, volver, &c.*

And when the original of words is doubtful, I am of opinion that we ought to use the *B*, and not the *V*, the pronunciation of the first being more agreeable to our manner of speaking than that of the second.

I say, 2dly, that the *ç* called *cedilla*, is now superfluous in the *Spanish* tongue, and therefore the *Z* ought to be used in its stead, in all words whatsoever, as was said in chap. 1. Lett. C.

But it ought to be taken notice of, that the words ending in *Z* which are derived from the *Latin*, ought to change the *Z* into *C* in the plural, because it is so found in the original, and thus *felíz*, *luz*, *páz*, *véz*, *vóz*, make in the plural *felices*, *lúces*, *páces*, *véces*, *vóces*.

Hitherto has been written *bazér*, *dezír*, but these verbs being derived from *facere* and *dicere*, now the *Z* is changed into *C*, conformable to the original, and now we say *bacér*, *decír*, observing the same rule in all their derivatives.

I say, 3dly, that *G* being guttural only before the *e* and *i*, it ought to be used only in the primitives and derivatives, such are *afligír*, *cogér*, *colegír*, *elegír*, *protegér*, *regír*, &c. writing *aflige*, *cóge*, *colíge*, *elíge*, *protége*, *ríge*, without being extended to the derivatives of *j* and *x*.

When the infinitives in *gér* or *gír* change *ér* or *ír* into *a* or *o* as in the present, then the *G* is changed into *j*, that the true pronunciation of the infinitive may be preserved; and thus from *singír* say *sínjo*, *sínja*, from *Regír*, *Ríjo*, *Ríja*, &c.

All words which in their original have *g*, *i*, or *l*, are written with *j* and not with *x*, as from *longe* say *léjos* from *Tagus*, *Tájo*; from *tegula*, *téja*; *jaſtancia*, *jaſtancia*; *jaſpis*, *jaſpe*; *jurare*, *jurár*; *juſtitia*, *juſticia*; *juvenis*, *jóven*; from *conſilium*, *conſejo*; *Filius*, *Hijo*; *melior*, *mejór*, in all the combination of the vowels; and when the infinitives end in *jar*, the *j* must be kept in all the tenses without exception.

In these words *Magestád*, *Mugér*, *Tráge*, &c. common use has prevailed in keeping the *g* instead of the *j*.

If the words have *x* in their original, as *Texér*, *exémpló*, *execución*, *perpléxo*, *vexíga*, &c. it would appear ridiculous to write them with *j*, and not with *x*; and it must be likewise observed, that when the words have the letter *f* in their original, as *cáxa*, *dexár*, *xabón*, *xémé*, *xúgo*, &c. derived from *cap-sa*, *deserere*, *sapo*, *semipes*, *succus*, are to be written always with *x* and not with *j*; and the reason of it is, because the *f* has the sound somewhat like the *x*, and as the *Spaniards* do take the guttural pronunciation from the *Arabians*, and they pronounce the double *ff* as *x*, it cannot be absurd to change *f* into *x*.

Nouns ending in *x*, as *Bóx*, *Baláx*, *Relóx*, &c. keep the *x* in the plural; as well as all the verbs, which have *x* in the infinitive mood are to keep it in all the tenses, as from *baxár*, *dexár*, &c. say *báxo*, *baxába*, *Baxé*, &c.

Q is frequently in vulgar writings changed into *C*, but the true rule is to be guided by the original *Latin*: otherwise the derivation is obscured, and the pronunciation corrupted; from *C* are formed *cuájo*, *cuénta*, *cuérda*, &c. and from *Q* *quál*, *questión*, *quátro*, &c.

It is an impropriety, that many fall into of using *u* and *i* vowels instead of *y* and *v* consonants: but this irregularity is cautiously avoided by all correct writers, and exploded by the *Spanish Academy*; having established the letter *y* to be always a consonant in the *Spanish* words, and the accent is always laid on the annexed vowel, as *ayúda*, help; *ayúno*, a fast; *arróyo*, a rivulet, or a brook. It must be likewise avoided to put the *y* immediately before or after a consonant, or at the end of a verb or word, except the following *Léy*, *Réy*, *Buéy*, &c.

The *Spaniards*, to retain the softness of the sound of the *Latin* consonant *j*, for want of an exact equivalent, change it into *y* consonant, as in *adjuvare*, *jejunare*, *jacere*, which the *Spaniards* make *ayudár*, *ayunár*, *yacér* : and in conformity to the *Greek*, in words borrowed from that language, they preserve it as a vowel, *Σύμβολον*, *Μυστήριον*, *ἄζυμο*, *Μάρτυρ*. *Symbolo*, *Mystério*, *ázy-mo*, *Mártyr*. So likewise in the third conjugation of verbs, as *argúyo*, *argúyes*, *argúye*, I dispute, &c. but in the imperfect say thus : *arguía*, &c. the accent being to be put on the vowels and never on consonants, the same is the first person of the preterperfect, as *arguí*, I disputed, &c. the *Spaniards* likewise say at present, *dói*, I give ; *estói*, I am ; *bói*, to day, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of the use of letters doubled.

E and **O** are often doubled in *Spanish*, to come the nearer to the radical pronunciation, as *Acree-dór*, *Creér*, *Leér*, *Cooperár*, *Loór* : in which both the vowels are pronounced distinctly. And it is on the contrary, wrong in some, who superfluously add *e* in words derived from the *Latin*, as in *Fee*, *Veer*, instead of *Fé*, *Vér*.

As to consonants, the variety is great, but to avoid all affectation, and speak properly it is to be observed, that *C* is never to be doubled before the vowels *A*, *O*, *U*, or before consonants, and we therefore write *Acaécér*, *Acomodár*, *Ocáso*, *Ocasió-n*, *Acusár*, *Acumulár*, *Aclamár*, &c. But before the vowels *E* and *I*, *C* is doubled in such words as are derived from the *Latin*, and had them originally, as *Accelerár*, *Accéssó*, *Accénto*, *Occidente*, except the following words *Aceptár* and *Sucedér*,

because altho' in their original they have two *c c*, they are not specified in the pronunciation by the *Spaniards*.

Latin words terminating in *ctio*, change the *t* into *C*, as *Acción*, *Cocción*, *Dicción*, *Lección*, *Producción*. And if either of these two *C*'s were omitted, the derivation would be the less evident.

M and not *N* is always to be made use of before *B*, *M*, *P*, as *Ambiente*, *immortál*, *império*.

Words compounded of the *Latin* prepositions *In* and *Con*, follow the *Latin* rule of turning *In* into *Im*, and *Con* into *Com*, as *Immaculado*, *Inmediato*, *Immemorial*, *Immortal*, &c. *Commensurar*, *Commovér*, *Commutár*, &c. In all which words the *M* is doubled, tho' in several other common words one *M* is lost, as *Comércio*, *Común*, *comunió*, &c. Some change *Im* into *Em*, as *Emmascarado*, *emma-grecér*, *Emmudecér*, &c.

N is likewise doubled in several words compounded with *An*, *En*, *In*, *Con*, as *Annexión*, *Annotár*, *Connatural*, *Connexión*, *Ennegrecér*, *Ennoblecér*, *Innato*, *Innocente*, *Innovár*, &c. except *Anulár*, *Anunciár*, *Anillo*, &c.

The letter *R* is doubled in the words that have a strong pronunciation in the middle; as *Abórro*, *Bórro*, *Errór*, *Guerra*, *Pérro*, &c. Those words that have one *r* in the middle are pronounced softly, as *âra*, an altar; *aréna*, sand; *ira*, wrath. There is no word in the *Spanish* language that begins or ends with two *rr*, but the initial *R* has always a strong sound, as *râbia*, rage; *razón*, reason; *reñór*, rector; *reñír*, to quarrel, &c. it must be observed, that when any consonant precedes the *R*, then *R* is never doubled, and it would look but barbarous to write these words with two *rr*, *bónra*, honour; *bonróso*, honourable; *enriquecér*, to grow rich, &c. because the preceding consonant makes the pronunciation strong, so that the *r* is only to be doubled when between two vowels, as *tierra*, earth; *errór*, an error.

S is to be doubled in the words that have two *ss* in their original, as *assár*, to roast; *cessár*, to cease; *essência*, essence; *necessidad*, necessity; the same is to be observed in the second preterimperfect of the subjunctive mood, as *amásse*, I might love; *enseñásse*, I might teach; *buviéssse*, I might have: in all the superlatives, as *amantíssimo*, most loving; *beatíssimo*, most holy, most happy; *doctíssimo*, most learned; and in adverbs superlatives, as *doctíssimamente*, wisely; so are the words *acceso*, access; *congreso*, congress; *exceso*, excess; *progreso*, progress; and all the compounds of simple words that begin with *s*, as of *saltar*, to jump, comes *assaltar*, to assault; of *sentir*, to be sensible, or to feel, comes *assentir*, to assent, of *susto*, fright, comes *assustar*, to frighten.

The two *l l*, which in *Spanish* have a peculiar pronunciation, are doubled before the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, when in Latin *c*, *f*, *p*, &c. precedes *l*, as *llano*, plain; *llanto*, crying, grief; *llave*, a key; *llama*, flame; *lleno*, full; *llorar*, to cry; *llover*, to rain; *lluvia*, rain; as it will be said at large in the treating of the formation of the *Spanish* words from the *Latin*, which will be put at the end of this Grammar.

The said consonants only are to be doubled in the *Spanish* tongue, because no body now pronounces two *bb*, two *dd*, two *ff*, two *gg*, two Latin *ll*, two *pp*, two *tt*, nor double *w*. This is the method newly taken of the Royal Academy of *Madrid*, and this is that which the modern authors follow.

CHAP. IV.

Of the rules that are to be observed upon the concurrence of divers consonants.

FROM two to four are the consonants, which occur together between two vowels, of which there is some diversity in writing, which varies from the manner in which they are pronounced, and are *BST*, *BSTR*; *CT*, *CTR*; *MPC*, *MPT*; *NCT*, *NSC*, *NSCR*, *NSP*, *NST*, *NSTR*; *SC*; *XC*, *XCL*, *XPL*, *XPR*, *XQ*, *XT*, *XTR*; to understand which observe the following rules.

Rule I. The letters *BST* and *BSTR* are to be pronounced in all the words in which they occur, according to their original, as *absténér*, to abstain; *abstinencia*, abstinence; *obstáculo*, obstacle; *substituir*, to substitute; *abstrabér*, to make an abstract; *abstrácto*, an abstract; because they are all distinctly pronounced in the *Spanish*.

Rule II. *CT*, and *CTR*, are also to be pronounced and written as in the original, as *dócto*, learned; *doctór*, doctor; *récto*, right; *doctrina*, doctrine; *pléctro*, a quill, used to play upon the strings of a harp; and this without any exception, otherwise it would appear an affectation.

Rule III. In the words in which concur *MPC* and *MPT* the letter *P* is lost, because it is not really pronounced in *assumpción*, assumption; *exempción*, exemption; *redempción*, *redemptór*, *promptitud*, &c. so that they are to be written thus *assunción*, &c.

I cannot pass over an observation which occurs to me here, and is that the gentleman of the Academy change *MP* into *N*, being of opinion that the said words are to pronounced thus *assunción*, *redención*; for which resolution I cannot see nor find any other foundation,

foundation, than the mere affectation of pronouncing *M* as *N* (an abuse which I observed when at *Madrid*) confounding in it not only the *Spanish* but even the pronunciation of the *Latin* tongue: I say, that I observed many to 'pronounce the words of Transubstantiation thus: *hoc est enim corpus meun*, instead of saying with distinction and clearness, *hoc est enim corpus meum*. I can't but be much surprised that an academic body, and such as that of the Royal Academy of *Madrid* composed of persons of such learning and eminency, had taken no notice of the like abuse, and to give to the *M* the pronunciation as they ought in the combination of all the vowels, there being no reason to make the least alteration in it.

Rule IV. When *nē* occur together in *Latin*, all the letters are often preserved in *Spanish* in writing, but the *c* is hardly, if at all pronounced in speaking, as *sāncto*, *sanctidād*, *distīncto*, *pūncto*, &c. write *sānto*, *santidād*, &c.

N S C and *N S C R* are to be pronounced in the words where they are found, as *transcendentāl*, *conscripto*, *inscripto*, this word *consciencia* excepted, in which the *s* is not specified.

N S P and *N S T* are retained in the *Spanish*, as *conspiración*, *transparēnte*, *transposición*, *transportār*, *transplantār*, *constār*, *constāncia*, *constitución*, *institución*, &c. the use of the letters *N S T R* must be kept in the words *constreñir*, *construír*, *construcción*, *demonstráble*, *demonstración*, *instruír*, *instrucción*, *ménstruo*, *mónstruo*, &c. which otherwise happens in *mostrar*, *mostrador*, *mostrénco*, and their derivations in which *n* is omitted.

N. B. It is to be observed by the by, that the *n* is lost in these words *Trasteár*, *Trasladár*, *Trasládo*, *Traslucir*, *Trasnochár*, *Traspalar*, *Traspáso*, *Trastrocár*, for the reason of being so admitted: but is preserved in the following *Transferir*, *Transfiguración*,
Transgresión,

Trafgreffión, Translación, Transmigración, Transmulár, Transformár, Transubstanciación, Transversál.

Rule V. The two consonants *ſ* *c* are to be retained in those words, in which the vowels *a* or *u* follows them, as *escála, escáma, escóta, escuela, escória, Pescádo, Pescúezo*: and although the *f* is not pronounced in the words *apacentár, adolecér, conciência, ciência, conócér, crecér, florecér, pacér*, yet it is retained in *ascendér, ascendência, ascendenté, adolescência, condescendér, descendér, desceñír, aquiescência, disceptación, discernír, disciplina, discípulo, miscelánea.*

Rule VI. *XC*, when between two vowels, are to be pronounced if they are so in the original, as *excélso, éxcelénte, excídio, excommunióñ, excúsa, excusár, &c.* without exception. The like is to be observed in the concurrence of *XC L* and *XC R*, as *exclamár, excluír, excremento, &c.* as likewise when after *x* follow *p* alone, *pl*, or *pr*, as *experiência, exposición, explanár, explicár, explorár, exprimir.* And lastly, when *q* or *t* follow *x* their original is to be attended to, as *exquisíto, extendér, exterioridad, extinguír; extrabér, extrémó, extrangéro, extraordinário, &c.*

CH A P. V.

Of the Diphthongs.

THE concurrence of two vowels, which compose but one syllable, is so frequent in the *Spanish* tongue, that the like is hardly to be found in any other. For tho' the vowels are but five, yet they admit twenty combinations; to which *Anthony de*

de Nebrîxa, in his treatise of the Spanish Orthography, gives the name of diphthongs ; Valéra, Sandoval, on the Rudiments of the Grammar, and several other authors are of the same opinion, tho' Rensîgo in his poerical treatise attributes the joining of the two vowels in one syllable to the figure Synerefis. But as it is said in the 2d chapter, a diphthong is a perceptible sound of the two vowels in one syllable, and as in the following examples, the combination of the vowels make only one syllable in the Spanish tongue, they are admitted as diphthongs, and both vowels pronounced with some distinction, and a perceptible sound, viz.

In *ae*, as *acaecimiêto*, accident ; *albalaes*, a sort of bills of the court of justice.

In *ai*, as *âire*, air ; *alcâide*, a governor of a castle.

In *ao*, as *chaos*, a confusion ; *daos*, do ye give, or give ye.

In *au*, as *causa*, cause ; *cautêla*, caution.

In *ea*, as *beatitúd*, blessedness, holiness ; *sea* from *sêr*, to be, pres. optative.

In *ei* or *ey*, as *pêine*, a comb ; *rêino*, a kingdom ; *lêy*, the law ; *rêy*, king.

In *eo*, as *Geometría*, Geometry ; *beodêz*, drunkenness.

In *eu*, as *dêuda*, a debt ; *fêudo*, a fief.

In *ia*, as *liadura*, a binding ; *súsia* or *súzia*, a foul dirty thing.

In *ie*, as *Ciêlo*, Heaven ; *miêdo*, fear.

In *io*, as *súsio*, adj. dirty, foul ; *dió*, he gave.

In *iu*, as *ciudad*, a city ; *viudo*, a widower.

In *oa*, as *lôa*, praise ; *loáble*, praise-worthy.

In *oi*, as *dôi*, I give ; *bói*, this day ; *sôî*, I am.

In *oe*, as *bêroe*, an hero ; *roedúra*, a gnawing.

In *ou*, as *Contiño*, the surname of a family, or a shed in a park ; *Móura*, a town, or a surname of a family.

In

28 The RUDIMENTS of

In *ua*, as *quál*, which ; *cuájo*, rennet to make cheese.

In *ue*, as *buéno*, good ; *fuégo*, fire.

In *ui*, as *búitre*, a vulture ; *cuidádo*, care.

In *uo*, as *águo*, I water, or mix water to wine, &c. *mútuo*, mutual.

But it must be observed, that not always the two vowels tho' joined together compose one syllable or a diphthong : because when the accent is put on the last, then they form two vowels, *cáe*, *bói*, *ráe*, *mútuo* are monosyllables, and the same vowels in *caér*, *ói*, *raér*, *mutuó* make two syllables.

It must be noted also, that in the concurrence of those vowels, the *i* is always the *Latin* one, and not *y* ; and so it would be a notorious error to make use of the *y* in these words, writing *áyre*, *búytre*, *réyno*, *toyson*, when they are to be written thus *áire*, *búitre*, &c. because the *i* does not strike as the *y* on another vowel : except from this rule all the nouns terminated in *y* which in plural is made consonant, *réyes*, *léyes*, *buéyes*.

Of Triphthongs.

A Triphthong is the sounding of three vowels put together in one syllable, and are five in *Spanish*, viz.

In *iai*, as *decíais*, ye did say ; *bebíais*, ye were drinking.

In *iao*, as *avíaos*, make ye ready ; *precíaos*, let ye be valued.

In *iei*, as *envicíeis*, that you may corrupt ; *sentenciéis*, that you may give sentence.

In *uai*, as *agúais*, ye put water into the liquor ; *gúai*, a lass.

In *uei*, as *juguéis*, that ye may play ; *bueitre* for *buitre*, a vulture.

There

There are some authors who add another diphthong of *iue*, but in this they must be deceived, because the *i* or *u* in the nouns where *iue* is found, are consonants, as *Arroyuelo*, a little brook; *vive*, live thou.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Accents, &c.

ACCENTS are tones in speaking, of which there are two sorts in *Spanish*, the *Grave* and *Acute*. *Grave* is that which descends obliquely from the left to the right thus [˘], and is only used in the *Spanish* language on the four vowels *à, è, ò, ù*, when each is separate, and makes a perfect sense by itself. *Acute* is that which descends from the right to the left thus [˙], and serves to prolong, make acute and strong the pronunciation, as *arnés*, armour; *amó*, he loved; *amará*, he will love; and it is also used to denote the quantity of the syllable.

But the most common use of the acute is to shew upon what syllable the strength of the pronunciation lies, for some words quite alter their signification according to the placing of the accent; as *cántara*, a sort of measure or pitcher; *cantára*, I would sing; *cantará*, he will sing; *libro*, a book; *libró*, he delivered, discharged, or gave a bill. When two or three consonants follow a vowel, there is no necessity to mark the accent upon it, their pronunciation being long by nature: the words whose consonants are mute or liquid are excepted, as *árbitro*, an arbitrator; *cátbedra*, a chair in which a professor teaches

teaches any science ; *lúgubre*, mournful ; the same is to be observed in the words called *esdrúxulos*, dactyles ; as *águila*, an eagle ; *música*, musick ; *máximo*, greatest ; which have the accent in the antepenultima. From whence is inferred, how erroneous is the opinion of those who make use of the Grave accent instead of the Acute, without understanding the sense of these words ; because the accent Grave never makes a syllable long, but depresses and moderates the pronunciation.

To clear these things, and that it may be known where the accent might be laid on the *Spanish* words, I insert here the following rules.

R U L E I.

All *Spanish* words are derived from the *Latin*, have their accent on the same syllable as in the *Latin* words, when in the ablative case of the singular, (because, as I intend to say hereafter, the *Spanish* words are formed from the ablative singular of the *Latin* words) except when they retain the *Latin* nominative, as *sénix*, *régimen*, *sál*, &c. viz.

Latin.	Spanish.	English.
<i>Aquila</i> ,	<i>Aguila</i> ,	an Eagle.
<i>Amicus</i> ,	<i>Amigo</i> ,	a Friend.
<i>Baculum</i> ,	<i>Bacúlo</i> ,	a Staff.
<i>Clericus</i> ,	<i>Clérigo</i> ,	a Clergyman.
<i>Limes</i> ,	<i>Límite</i> ,	a Limit, or Bound.
<i>Pontifex</i> ,	<i>Pontífice</i> ,	a Pontiff, the Pope.
<i>Prudens</i> ,	<i>Prudente</i> ,	Prudent.
<i>Spiritus</i> ,	<i>Espíritu</i> ,	a Spirit.
<i>Terminus</i> ,	<i>Término</i> ,	a Term, or Limit.
<i>Vapor</i> ,	<i>Vapór</i> ,	a Vapor.

All the superlatives in *íssimo*, and *íssima*, have their accent in the antepenultima in *Latin*, as *aman-
tíssimo-ma*,

tiſſimo-ma, most loved; *caſtiſſimo-ma*, most chaste; *beatíſſimo-ma*, most holy, &c. add to these *ínfimo*, lowest, meanest, *íntimo*, intimate; *máximo*, greatest; *mínimo*, the least; *óptimo*, best; *próximo*, nearest neighbour; *último*, utmost, last, &c.

Rule II. Of the penultima syllable.

ALL words ending in *ía*, which denote some office, quality, passions of mind, place, or an aggregation of several things, have their accent on the penultima, as

<i>Alcaldía</i> , the office of a magistrate.	<i>Hospedería</i> , a place to entertain strangers in, &c.
<i>Alegría</i> , mirth, &c.	<i>Panadería</i> , a baker's-shop.
<i>Clericía</i> , the clergy.	<i>Mejoría</i> , growing better.
<i>Especería</i> , a grocer's shop.	<i>Menoría</i> , minority.
<i>Enfermería</i> , an apartment for the sick.	<i>Señoría</i> , lordship.
<i>Librería</i> , a library.	
<i>Herrería</i> , a smith's-shop.	

Of this kind are the words that have any of these vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, before another vowel in the penultima, as

<i>Albacía</i> , an executor of a will.	<i>Grangén</i> , gain, purchase, &c.
<i>Aldía</i> , a village.	<i>Livría</i> , livery.
<i>Bilbáo</i> , Bilboa.	<i>Lóa</i> , praise.
<i>Boléo</i> , the flight of a ball.	<i>Píca</i> , a soldier's pike, or a fish so called.
<i>Corréa</i> , a leather strap.	<i>Regadéo</i> , merry-making, &c.
<i>Corréo</i> , a post-mail.	
<i>Floréo</i> , a flourish.	

Except

Except *área*, an area ; *frámea*, a dart ; *foráneo*, belonging to the court of judicature ; *idóneo*, apt ; *incorpóreo*, incorporeal ; *mónstruo*, a monster, &c. which have the accent in antepenultima.

To this rule belong, all the words which carry the diphthongs in the penultima, as

Amáine, let him strike fail ; *báile*, a ball, *náipes*, playing cards ; *apláuso*, applause, &c. without exception.

The diminutives do likewise belong to this rule, as *asníco*, *asnillo*, a little ass ; *boníco*, *bonito*, somewhat pretty, &c.

Rule III. *Of the last syllable.*

A L L nouns ending in *d, i, l, n, r, s, x, z*, have their accent on the last syllable, as those in

B. *Abád*, an Abbot ; *beldád*, beauty ; except *áspid*, an asp ; *huésped*, an host, a landlord.

I. *Albelí*, a clove-gilliflower-violet, *bocací*, buckram, &c. except *cáfi*, almost.

L. *animál*, *caracól*, a snail ; *generál*, except *ágil*, nimble, active ; *ángel*, angel ; *apóstol*, apostle, *cónsul*, consul ; *fácil*, easy ; *defícil*, difficult, &c.

N. *Afán*, labour, weariness ; *almidón*, starch ; except *crímen*, crime ; *exámen*, examination ; *imágen*, an image ; *jóven*, youth ; *márgen*, margin ; *órden*, order ; and other *Latin* words.

R. *Amór*, love ; *mugér*, a woman ; except *acíbar*, aloes ; *alcázar*, a castle, palace ; *almíbar*, sugar, boiled to a consistence ; *ánsar*, a goose, &c.

S. *Ambargrís*, ambergreese ; *anís*, anniseed ; except *ántes*, rather ; *árlos*, shrubs ; *agátas*, on all four like a cat ; *à sabiéndas*, knowingly, designedly ; *de brúces*, with the mouth downwards ; *entónces*, then, &c.

X. *Almóradus*,

X. *Almoradúz*, the sweet marjoram ; *baláx*, a precious stone, &c. without exception.

Z. *Arcadúz*, aqueduct ; *Albornóz*, a sort of upper garment used by the Moors, &c. except *Alférez*, an ensign, &c.

All adverbs of place have their accent on the last syllable, as *acá*, hither ; *acullá*, yonder ; *allá*, thither ; *allí*, there ; *dó*, where ; *adó*, to what place ; *dedó*, from whence ; *aquí*, here, &c. and the following words : *albalá*, a sort of writing ; *Alcalá*, a name of a city in Spain, &c.

As the accent will be put upon the verb through all their tenses and moods, according to order in the conjugations, it will be needless to speak of them here.

CH A P. VII.

Of the manner of Pointing.

THE want of distinctions in clauses makes writing very imperfect, and to put them in an improper place, causes such *equivocation* in the sense, that this sense either is not understood, or at least is confounded. For which reason, and for the proper division of words, and clauses of periods and speeches ; it must be known, that there are eight signs, notes, or particles, used to this purpose.

I. *Comma*, *subdistinction*, encise, or a stroke formed thus (,) and so called to denote the half suspension, or pause, which denotes the expectation of something else to follow ; it serves likewise distinctly

D

34 The RUDIMENTS of

distinctly to separate one clause from another, as *Felicidad es de un Reino tener un Príncipe sabio, que abraze lo bueno, y evite lo malo, baciendo justicia à todos*, it is a happiness to a kingdom to have a wise Prince, that embraces the good, and shuns evil, doing justice to every body.

2. A full stop formed thus (.) serves to denote, that the period is quite formed, and that the speech is perfectly concluded: as *nadie se alabe, bastaque acabe*. Let no body praise himself, till he gets what he is about. *Albricias madre, que pregonan a mi padre*, give me something mother for my good news, for they are crying my father; said of people that mistake good news for bad, or rejoice in other's misfortunes.

3. Comma and a point thus (;) formed; (called by the *Greeks* an imperfect Colon, or Semicolon) is used to denote the implication and contradiction of things in the speech, or that they differ, as *los Padres son dignos de reverencia; Pero Dios de adoración*, Fathers deserve a reverence or respect; but God worship. *Pédro es sabio; pero su soberbia le deslúce*. Peter is a wise man; but his pride dishonours him.

4. Two points (called by the *Greeks* a perfect Colon) marked thus (:) serve to denote that the sense is not perfectly expressed in the speech, and that there is something wanting to perfect it: as *no hacer mal alguno es inocencia: no hacer mal à otro es justicia*, to do no evil is innocence: but justice to wrong no body. *La injuria si es verdad, tómala por advertencia: si es mentira, por crédito*, the injury if it is true, take it as a warning: if false, for reputation and credit.

5. Note of Interrogation formed thus (?) denotes that something is asked or questioned: as *à donde vás?* where you are going? &c.

6. A note of Admiration thus (!) expresses the affection of mind and surprise caused by a sudden

news or consideration of something : as *O Cielos !* O Heaven ! *ò bondad divina !* O divine goodness ! *ò tiempos !* O times ! *ò vicios !* O vices ! *ò costumbres !* O customs ! *ò depravados siglos !* O corrupted age !

7. A Parenthesis thus () serves to separate a clause, without which the speech may have a perfect sense, to the end that it may be more plain, and to avoid confusion : as *el ministro sábio (que juntamente es desinteresado) es digno de toda alabanza*, a wise minister (who is altogether disinterested) is worthy of every body's praise.

8. Dieresis thus : (") is a Greek word (called by the Printers Crema, and signifies a severing or division) and serves to separate two vowels which might be joined in one syllable, and to note that both are to be pronounced plainly and with distinction. Anciently this mark was put upon the *u*, and *i* vowels, when before another vowel ; because there was no difference made in writing between the *i* and *u*, to shew when they ought to be vowels and when consonants ; now this division is to be put on the *u* : as *eloqüente*, eloquent ; *frequencia*, frequency. And this only in the words where *u* is pronounced plainly and openly ; so that there is no need of a Dieresis in these *guerra*, war ; *guia*, guide ; *guinda*, a common cherry ; *quince*, fifteen.

To these add the note of Division or stroke figured thus (-) which is put at the end of a line, when the word is divided or cut, that it may be known that it is not finished : as in these (carefully dividing each syllable as children in spelling) *á-ni-mo*, *áni-mo*, courage, mind ; it cannot be divided thus : *án-imo*, nor thus *anim-o* : in the words where two *ss*, *rr*, &c. are found, then the first consonant is pronounced with the preceding vowel, and the second with the following, and so *accidente*, accident ; and

bonísimo, the best, the most pretty or better are to be divided thus *ac-cidente* or *acciden-te*, *bonif-simo*.

Apostrophe is a stroke put over some letters to denote that another letter, which ought to be there, is left out, and lost by the figure *Synaléphe* of the following vowel: as *d'el* of him, *del'água*, of water; *qu'era*, which was; *s'omíte*, it is omitted. Which manner is much used in the *English*, and *French* languages; and tho' in old *Spanish* books it is often observed, yet common use has left it off in the *Spanish* language, as an insignificant thing, which often confounds; so that by joining the letters are single words formed, saying *del*, *essótro*, the other; *estótro*, this other; or writing the two *ee* or *eo* for better intelligence, thus *de el*, *esse ótro*, *este ótro*, *que éra*, *se ofende*, &c.

Of the use of capital letters.

WITH capital letters are to begin any writing, paragraph, period, or speech, after a final point; all the proper names, as well of persons, provinces, kingdoms, districts, cities, towns, villages, mountains, rivers, fountains, &c. as the surnames, renowns of authority or fame; those of dignities, titles, honourable employments, and other names of distinction, as King, Prince, &c. and altho' capital letters should be used at the beginning of each verse; yet the *Spaniards* are not exact in this point, for they only begin the verses of their heroic and grand Poems with capital letters, being careless in other species of poetry.

PART II.

Of ETYMOLOGY.

GREAT is the difference between the motherly or dead tongues, and the modern or living ones: because what the first of its firmness or stability will not allow the liberty of inventing or changing a word, case, nor tense, without the risk of committing a barbarism or solecism; the latter, being in the arbitrary power of the living, is nourished, either by adding some words, perfecting those in use, or forgetting those which in it's stuttering age were used. To this was likewise subject the *Latin* tongue, till it was cultivated by *Cicero*, *Plautus*, *Virgil*, &c. it sprang up in time of *Janus* and *Saturnus*, in whose language the priests of *Mars* wrote those verses called by their name *Salii*, which are kept in reverence or respect of the age, which shews the unpolished infancy of that language: it increased in time of *Latius*, from whence was derived the *Latin*, when the twelve law tables were written in *Latin*; and was perfect in the flourishing age of the *Romans*: but as soon as their empire finished, the language fell with it, degenerating in such a manner, that at present is looked on as half corrupted, there being so many barbarisms in its Latinity.

For which like reason, many are the words which the tyrant Use has introduced in the *Spanish* language, whose root has no other trench than the good pleasure of men; and other words are so much degenerated from their original, that almost deny their birth: as *desabuciár*, to desert (is called Physician's verb, and is only used to express when

38 The RUDIMENTS of

a man is given over by the Physicians) from the *Latin fiducia*, but has quite opposite sense ; *lavár*, to wash ; from *lodo*, mud, mire, or dirt.

Many have been the authors who treated on Etymologies, but who treated with better order and method was St *Isidore*, a *Spaniard*, whose rules has followed the Royal Academy at *Madrid* in their new dictionary of the *Spanish* language ; to which I refer the curious.

Etymology (as a part of the Grammar) denotes and shews the way to find out the cases of nouns, tenses of verbs, their regularity and irregularity, and the variety of parts in a speech ; some authors define Etymology thus : *The knowledge and discretion of the parts and particles of a speech*. And to proceed to particulars, we think it proper to begin with

CHAP. I.

Of the eight parts of speech, and especially of Nouns.

IN *Spanish* as well as in *Latin*, there are eight parts of speech.

Noun,	}	declin'd.	Adverb,	}	undeclin'd.
Pronoun,			Conjunction,		
Verb,			Preposition,		
Participle.			Interjection,		

Of a Noun.

A Noun is a part of speech, which signifies a thing without any reference to time, &c.
as máno, a hand ; cása, a house.

Nouns

Nouns are divided into substantives and adjectives.

A noun substantive is that which can stand by it self, without an adjective, as *bómbre*, a man; *cabállo*, a horse, &c. whereas the adjective cannot stand by it self, as being of no value without the addition of the substantive, as *buéno*, good; *brióso* mettlesome, &c. give no perfect notion of themselves, but are explained by being conjoined to the substantives, as *bómbre buéno*, a good man; *cabállo brióso*, a mettlesome horse.

Nouns substantives are divided into proper names and appellatives. The proper names are such as signify certain determinate things, as *Juán*, John; *Róma*, Rome. Appellatives are those that signify things undeterminate, as *iglésia*, a church; *cása*, a house. Some of the nouns are called *primitives*, that is original; others derivatives for their being derived of others, as *lección*, *oído*. Nouns are again divided into simple, as *justó*, just; and compound, as *injústó*, unjust.

There are also diminutives and augmentatives, in both which the *Spanish* abounds more than any other language, there being no word but what admits of several diminutives, to represent the thing spoken of, little; and augmentatives, to represent it greater.

Diminutives are formed by adding to the word *illo*, *íco*, *íto*, *éte*, *uélo*, or *éjo*, and sometimes *ote*.

For Example,

Hómbre, a man; forms *Hombrecillo*, *Hombrecíco*, *Hombrecíto*.

Muchácho, a boy; *Muchachillo*, *Muchachíco*, *Muchachíto*, *Muchachuélo*.

Where observe the difference between these several sorts, which is that those ending in *illo* and *uélo*, as

Hombrecillo, *Muchachuélo*, and the like, denote something of contempt, as, a pitiful little man or boy ; whereas those ending in *ico*, or *ito*, only denote smallness, and sometimes kindness, as when we say *Juaníco* or *Juaníto*, which is *Johnny* or *Jacky*.

Diminutives in *ete* and *ino* likewise denote nothing but smallness, as *mózo*, a youth ; *mozéte*, a young lad ; *palóma*, a dove ; *palomíno*, a young pigeon ; whereas those in *ejo* imply at the same time something of contempt or dislike, as *cuchílllo*, a knife ; *cuchilléjo*, a pitiful little knife ; *bidálgo*, a gentleman ; *bidalgóte*, an inconsiderable gentleman.

The same is also used in adjectives, as *grande*, large or great ; *grandezílllo*, *grandezíco*, *grandezuélo*, *grandéte*, all which signify *largish*, as we may express it, or *somewhat large*.

There are moreover diminutives formed upon diminutives ; as *chíco*, small ; *chiquíto*, smaller than the other, and *chiquitíco*, very small.

There are on the other hand augmentatives, as has been said, which enlarge, or represent a thing bigger, without any degree of comparison ; and these are formed by adding *ázo*, *on*, or *óte*, to the word, as *bómbre*, a man ; *bombrázo*, *bombrón* or *bombróte*, a great lusty man ; *pérro*, a dog ; *per-rázo*, *perrón*, or *perrote*, a great large dog.

The nouns numeral, or of number, called cardinals, are as follows :

Uno, one.	Nuéve, nine.
Dos, two.	Diéz, ten.
Tres, three.	Once, eleven.
Quátro, four.	Dóce, twelve.
Cinco, five.	Tréce, thirteen.
Séis, six.	Catórce, fourteen.
Siéte, seven.	Quince, fifteen.
Ocho, eight.	Diez y séis, sixteen.

Dies

Diez y siete, <i>seventeen.</i>	Quatrocientos, <i>four hundred.</i>
Diez y ocho, <i>eighteen.</i>	Quiniéntos, <i>five hundred.</i>
Diez y nueve, <i>nineteen.</i>	Seiscientos, <i>six hundred.</i>
Veinte, <i>twenty.</i>	Setecientos, <i>seven hundred.</i>
Veinte y uno, <i>twenty one.</i>	Ochocientos, <i>eight hundred.</i>
Veinte y dos, <i>twenty two.</i>	Núvecientos } <i>nine hundred.</i>
&c.	or
Tréinta, <i>thirty.</i>	Novecientos, }
Quarénta, <i>forty.</i>	Mil, <i>a thousand.</i>
Cincuénta, <i>fifty.</i>	Mil y Quiniéntos, <i>a thousand five hundred.</i>
Seisénta, <i>sixty.</i>	Dos mil, <i>two thousand.</i>
Seténta, <i>seventy.</i>	Tres mil, <i>three thousand,</i>
Ochénta, <i>eighty.</i>	&c.
Novénta, <i>ninety.</i>	Cién mil, <i>an hundred thousand.</i>
Ciento, <i>a hundred.</i>	Millón, <i>a million.</i>
Ciento y uno, <i>a hundred and one, &c.</i>	
Dociéntos, or Ducientos <i>two hundred.</i>	
Trecientos, <i>three hundred.</i>	

N. B. That all these cardinals are undeclined, and of the common gender, except *uno, una, uno*, in plural *unos, unas*, and *ciento, docientos, docientas*. *Uno* masculine (in the singular only) when it comes before a noun loses *o*, as *un libro*, a book; *un soldado*, a soldier. *Ciento* likewise loses *o* when before a noun, either masculine, or feminine, as *cién soldados*, hundred soldiers; *cién mugeres*, hundred women: but when another number follows it with a conjunction between, then it retains *o*, as *ciento y uno, ciento y dos*, &c. When *ciento* has *un* before, then it is made substantive, and governs a genitive, as *un ciento de cabállos*, or *un centenár de cabállos*, an hundred of horse.

All the numbers from *ciento* to *mil*, are masculine, and may be made feminine, changing *os* in *as*, as *ducientos, ducientás*, *mil* is undeclined, and of the common gender, but *millón*, a million,

42 The RUDIMENTS of

is masculine and declined, as, *un millón, dos millones.*

The ordinals which declare the order of time, or place, are

Primero, <i>first.</i>	Trigésimo, or Treinténo, <i>thirtieth.</i>
Segundo, <i>second.</i>	Quadragésimo, or Quarénténo, <i>fortieth.</i>
Tercero, <i>third.</i>	Quinquagésimo, or Cin-cuenténo, <i>fiftieth.</i>
Quarto, <i>fourth.</i>	Sexagésimo, or Sesenténo, <i>sixtieth.</i>
Quinto, <i>fifth.</i>	Septuagésimo, or Seten-téno, <i>seventieth.</i>
Séxto, <i>sixth.</i>	Octuagésimo, or Ochen-téno, <i>eightieth.</i>
Séptimo, <i>seventh.</i>	Nonagésimo, or Noven-téno, <i>ninetieth.</i>
Octávo, <i>eighth.</i>	Centésimo, Cienténo, or Centéno, <i>hundredth.</i>
Nóno, or Novéno, <i>ninth.</i>	Docientésimo, or Doci-enténo, <i>two hundredth.</i>
Décimo, or Decéno, <i>tenth.</i>	Trecentésimo, or Tre-centéno, <i>three hun-dredth.</i>
Undécimo, or Oncéno, <i>eleventh.</i>	Quatrocentésimo, or Quatrocienténo, <i>four hundredth.</i>
Duodécimo, or Docéno, <i>twelfth.</i>	Quingentésimo, or Qui-nienténo, <i>five hun-dredth, &c.</i>
Décimotercio, or Tre-céno, <i>thirteenth.</i>	Milésimo, <i>thousandth.</i>
Décimoquarto, or Cator-céno, <i>fourteenth.</i>	
Décimoquinto, or Quin-céno, <i>fifteenth.</i>	
Décimo séxto, <i>sixteenth.</i>	
Décimo séptimo, <i>seven-teenth.</i>	
Décimo octávo, <i>eigh-teenth.</i>	
Décimo nono, <i>nineteenth.</i>	
Vigésimo, or Veinténo, <i>twentieth.</i>	

Note, that the Spaniards make use of the ordinals and cardinals promiscuously, as en el año de mil seiscientos y ocho, for en el año milésimo seiscientos y ocho: el año quince, for décimo quinto; ciento y sesenta

setenta y siete, for *centésimo septuagésimo séptimo*, this must be understood only in the computation of years, chapters, &c. the ordinals are masculine, and by changing *o* in *a* are feminine, as *primero*, *primera*.

The nouns numeral called distributives, or of order, are

De uno en uno, one by one.

De dos en dos, by two and two.

De tres entres, by three and three.

De quatro en quatro, by four and four.

De cinco en cinco, by five and five, &c.

as *los Fráiles van de dos en dos fuera del convento*, the Fryars when they go out of the convent they go by two and two.

Note, that when the letter *a* is put between the two cardinals as *uno à uno*, then *à* stand instead of *contra*, against; as *dos à dos*, two to or against two: the same is in these, *tantos à tantos*, so many against so many, as *riñamos quatro à quatro*, or *tantos à tantos*, let us fight four to four, or so many against so many, that is even or equal in number.

OF ADJECTIVES.

THE termination of Spanish adjectives is for the most part in *e*, or *o*, as *grande*, large; *dulce*, sweet; *breve*, short; *bueno*, good; *santo*, holy, &c.

But there are other adjectives also, whose termination is in *l*, as *útil*, useful; *débil*, weak; *frágil*, frail; *fértil*, fruitful; and others in *z*, as *capáz*, capable; *rapáz*, ravenous.

Those that terminate in *e*, never vary in any gender; so in the adjectives, *grande*, great; *dulce*, sweet; *terrible*, terrible, we say in the masculine gender,

44 *The RUDIMENTS of*

gender, *hómbre gránde*, a great man ; in the feminine, *múger gránde*, a great woman ; and in the neuter, *lo gránde*, that which is great.

Those that terminate in *o*, in the feminine gender, change their termination into *a*, as in *buéno*, good, the masculine is, *hómbre buéno*, a good man ; the feminine, *múger buéna*, a good woman ; but the neuter is again in *o*, as *lo buéno*, that which is good.

Such as terminate in *l*, or *z*, never change in any gender.

The adjectives *gránde*, great ; and *buéno*, good ; are often placed before the substantives, and then sometimes they loose the last syllable, as is usual to say, *gran hómbre*, a great man ; *buén caballo*, a good horse ; but the feminine gender, *buéna*, is not liable to that abbreviation, because the cutting off the *a*, would make it masculine, and therefore it must always be said, *buéna múger*, a good woman ; *buéna cása*, a good house.

Sáento, when it signifies a saint, has always the last syllable cut off before the proper name, and we say, *San Pédro*, St Peter ; *San Andrés*, St Andrew, &c. except only out of this general rule, *Sáento Domíngo*, *Sáento Thomás*, *Sáento Toribío*, and any saints names that begin with *Do*, or *To*, because the cutting off the last syllable of *Sáento*, before them would sink the sound of the name. In speaking of a female saint, no letter is cut off, but it is pronounced at length, as *Sáenta Apolónia*, *Sáenta Margaríta*, &c.

The degrees of comparison.

ALL Adjectives have their three degrees of comparison ; the positive, which plainly and simply denotes the thing, as *dócto*, learned ; *discreto*, discreet, &c.

The comparative either enhances or debases the thing, making a comparison, as *mas dócto*, more learned ;

learned ; *ménos docto*, less learned ; *mas santo*, more holy ; *ménos santo*, less holy.

The superlative raises the thing to the highest pitch, or debases it to the lowest, as *caballo velocísimo*, a most fleet horse ; *cara bellísima*, a most beautiful face.

In *Spanish* there is no comparative degree formed from the positive, as in the *Latin*, but that defect is supplied, by adding the article *mas*, more, or *ménos*, less, to the positive ; as *claro*, clear ; *mas claro*, clearer, or more clear ; *oscuro*, dark ; *ménos oscuro*, less dark.

The superlative degree is formed when the positive ends in a vowel, by changing that last vowel into *ísimo*, as from *claro*, clear ; make the superlative *clarísimo*, most clear ; or by the adverb *mui*, very ; or by *múcho mas*, saying *mui*, or *mucho mas claro* : but if the positive ends in a consonant, add *ísimo*, as from *vil*, base ; *vilísimo*, most base ; from *capaz*, capable, *capacísimo*, most capable.

The six following words are an exception from the rules above, in relation to the comparative degree, for their superlatives follow the common rule, where note that in these the comparative quite varies from the positive, as follows.

Bueno, good ; *méjor*, better ; *bonísimo*, or *óptimo*, best of all.

Malo, bad ; *peór*, worse ; *pésimo*, or *malísimo*, worst of all.

Grande, great ; *mayór*, greater ; *grandísimo*, or *máximo*, greatest of all.

Pequeño, little ; *ménor*, less ; *pequeñísimo*, or *minímo*, least of all.

Múcho, much ; *mas*, more ; *muchísimo*, most of all.

Poco, little ; *ménos*, less ; *poquísimo*, least of all.

These two are without a positive and comparative.

Acérrimo,

Acérrimo, extraordinary eager, tenacious, &c.

Ubérrimo, extraordinary fruitful.

Of GENDER S.

IT is no easy matter to determine, whether there are as many genders in *Spanish*, as in the *Latin*, which has five, *viz.* the masculine, the feminine, the neuter, the common of two, and the common of three. The question arises from the *Spanish*, having no substantives of the neuter gender, whence it follows that no adjectives can have it, as being only an accident of the other, and there cannot be that in the accident which is not in the subject; whence it will follow that there can be only three genders, the masculine, the feminine, and the common of two.

But this notion, though supported by many, must needs be erroneous; for it is plain that when adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are used as substantives, there is a neuter gender, as appears by the three several articles that express them, for *el* is the masculine, *la* the feminine, and *lo* the neuter; for example, *el hombre*, the man; *la mugér*, the woman; and *lo bueno*, that which is good. This is again demonstrable in the articles, *éste caballo*, this horse; *ésta Burra*, this she ass; and *ésto*, this thing; which exactly answer to the *Latin*, *hic*, *hæc*, *hoc*: and therefore it is infallible that these three genders must have a being. As to the others, take the following rules.

1. All adjectives, pronouns, and participles, are of the common gender of three, that is, they will admit of three articles, *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, by which the three genders are expressed, which is not only to be supposed when they alter their termination, as *bueno*, *buena*, *bueno*, but also when they always retain the same, as *amante*, *prudente*, &c.

2. All

2. All nouns that are under one and the same termination expressing both man and woman, or the male and female of any sort of living creature, are of the common gender of two, as *éste guarda*, this man keeper ; *ésta guarda*, this woman keeper.

3. The epicene under one termination denotes both the male and female of all animals, and yet has only the masculine, or the feminine article, to express both kinds, for which reason the words *mácho*, male ; or *bembra*, female ; are added to make the distinction, as, *ésta codorniz mácho*, this cock quail ; *éste zorzál bembra*, this hen thrush.

4. All names signifying the males of any sort of animals, are of the masculine gender, as *Pédro*, Peter ; *bómbre*, a man ; *cónde*, an earl ; *León*, a lion. And all that signify the female of any sort, are of the feminine gender, as *María*, Mary ; *mugér*, a woman ; *marquésa*, a marchioness.

Those words are of the doubtful gender, which have sometimes the masculine, and sometimes the feminine prefixed by authors. But for as much as this ambiguity at first proceeded from ignorance, it will be proper for those who understand better, notwithstanding the privilege grounded on custom, to give every word its proper gender. Some words of this sort that occur, are *árte*, *canál*, *colór*, *eclípse*, *embléma*, *mar*, *órden*, *márgen*, *orígen*, *théma*. These we frequently find used with either of the articles *el*, or *la*, as, *el árte*, or *la árte*, the art ; and yet it ought certainly to be *la*, to denote the feminine, as in the *Latin*, from whence it is derived ; the same may be said of all others which of right should ever follow their original.

Rules to know the gender of nouns.

ALL nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender, as *pláza*, a square, or market ; *rósa*, a rose ; *cása*, a house. The exceptions are *planéta*, a planet ; *cométa*, a comet, or blazing star ; *día*, a day ; *prophéta*, a prophet ; *evangélista*, an evangelist ; *poéta*, a poet ; *Calvinísta*, a Calvinist ; *Jesuíta*, a Jesuit ; also such as are derived from the Greek, as *dógma*, a dogma, or a received opinion, *probléma*, a problem ; which are masculine, but *embléma*, an emblem, is of doubtless gender.

Nouns ending in *e* are generally of the masculine gender, as *diénte*, a tooth ; *mónte*, a mountain. Except, *fé*, faith ; *fuénte*, a fountain ; *lláve*, a key ; *léche*, milk ; *ménte*, the mind ; *tórre*, a tower ; *tróxe*, a granary ; *ánade*, a duck ; *alvayálde*, ceruse ; *áve*, a fowl ; *cálle*, a street ; *cárne*, flesh ; *cláve*, a key of an organ ; *córte*, a prince's court ; *corriénte*, a current ; *dóte*, a dowry ; *espécie*, a species ; *frénte*, the forehead ; *génte*, people ; *muérte*, death ; *niéve*, snow ; *nóche*, night ; *núbe*, a cloud ; *náve*, a ship ; *puénte*, a bridge ; *párte*, a part ; *serpiénte*, a serpent ; all which are feminine ; but *córte*, when it signifies cutting, shaping, or contriving, is masculine.

Again, all nouns ending in *re*, that have a mute letter before it, are feminine, as *costúmbre*, custom ; *sángre*, blood, &c. From which general rule are likewise excepted, *cóbre*, coper ; *cófre*, a trunk ; *enjambé*, a swarm ; *nómbre*, a name ; and the names of months, *Setiémbre*, *Octúbre*, *Noviémbre*, *Deciémbre*, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are masculine, if derived from the Arabick, as *albelí*, a violet, according to *Nebriſſenſis* ; yet some will have it to be a clove gilliflower ; *albolí*, or *alborí*, a granary ; *zaborí*, one that pretends to see into things that are not transparent,

transparent, as stone-walls, &c. But such words taken from the Greek are feminine, as *éxtasi*, an extasy ; *Sintáxi*, Syntax.

Nouns ending in *o* are masculine, as *cámpo*, a field ; *témplo*, a church ; except *máno*, a hand ; *náo*, a ship ; *pró*, good ; for we say, *buéna pro os hága*, much good may it do you.

Nouns ending in *u* are masculine, as *Espíritu*, the spirit ; *ímpetu*, violence.

Nouns ending in *y* are feminine, as *léy*, law ; *gréy*, a flock. Except *Réy*, a King.

This is all that can be said of nouns ending in vowels ; next follow those that end in consonants.

Nouns ending in *d* are generally of the feminine gender, as *charidád*, charity ; *babilidád*, ability ; except *césped*, a turf ; *buésped*, an host, or guest ; *ardíd*, a stratagem ; *Adalíd*, a leader ; *Ceníd*, the Zenith ; *almúd*, a certain measure ; *ataúd*, a coffin ; *laúd*, a lute, which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *l* are masculine, as *pardál*, a sparrow ; *arancel*, a list or roll. The exceptions are *cál*, lime ; *sál*, salt ; *señál*, a sign, or token ; *cárcel*, a prison ; *biél*, gall ; *miél*, honey ; *piél*, the skin.

Nouns ending in *n* are masculine, as *carbón*, coal ; *Rabadán*, a chief among shepherds ; *almazén*, a storehouse. Except *fién*, the temple of the head ; *fartén*, a frying-pan ; and all words derived from the Latin termination in *go*, as *imágen*, an image, from *imago* ; *márgen*, a margin ; from *margo*, &c. Likewise those ending in *ion*, as *región*, a region ; *elección*, election ; and those ending in *azón*, as *razón*, reason ; from which again except, *corazón*, the heart ; *tarazón*, a piece ; which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *r* are masculine, as *amór*, love ; *Alcázar*, a palace ; except *segúr*, an axe, *flór*, a flower ; *labór*, work ; *mugér*, a woman.

Nouns ending in *s* are masculine, as *combés*, the deck of a ship ; *País*, a country, or landskip. Ex-

cept *miés*, harvest ; *Rés*, a head of cattle ; *tós*, a cough ; and proper names of women, as *Ignés*, Agnes.

Nouns ending in *x* are masculine, as *relóx*, a clock ; *carcáx*, a quiver.

Nouns ending in *z*, are for the most part feminine, as *páz*, peace ; *niñéz*, childhood ; *naríz*, the nose ; *bóz*, a fickle ; *lúz*, light. Except *agráz*, verjuice ; *soláz*, comfort ; *antífaz*, a veil, or covering for the face ; *almiréz*, a mortar ; *dobléz*, a fold, or falshood ; *jaéz*, furniture for a horse ; *pez*, a fish ; *axedréz*, a chequer, or draught-board ; *varniz*, varnish ; *tapíz*, a carpet ; *matíz*, a shadowing in painting ; *albornóz*, a moorish coat ; *arróz*, rice ; *altramúz*, a lupine ; all which are masculine.

To these rules may be added, that all nouns signifying the male, must of course be masculine, as *Dúque*, a Duke ; *gállo*, a cock ; *león*, a lion ; and those denoting a female, must be feminine, as *Condesa*, a Countess ; *gallina*, a hen.

It is further to be observed, that whatsoever the termination happens to be, the proper names of rivers are always masculine, as *el Guadiana*, and so of any others, &c.

Of the other accidents belonging to a Noun.

THE accidents usually belonging to a noun, are its declination, cases, numbers, and articles ; but all these particulars must be explained in the following manner.

Of Declensions or Declinations.

NOUNS in *Spanish* are not declined by altering or varying the termination, or last syllable, as is done in the *Latin*, but by adding and varying

varying the articles, as they are peculiar to each case.

And if the declensions are known by the variation of the nouns ; it being certain that the *Spaniards* only vary in the plural number : it may be said by deduction that there are five distinct declensions in *Spanish*, as in *Latin* : because the plural numbers end in

As, as *régla*, *réglas*, a rule.

Es, as *pádre*, *pádras*, a father.

Is, as *rubí*, *rubís*, and *rubies*, a ruby.

Os, as *témplo*, *témplos*, a temple or church.

Us, as *tríbu*, *tríbus*, a tribe.

There are three particles or notes to denote the cases of a Noun, viz. *De* for the genitive and ablative, *a* or *pára* for the dative, and *ò* for the vocative. These particles are called by other authors *Articles*, but without reason, because the *article* is declinable, and the above particles can never be declined.

Of the Cases.

THE *Spaniards* have six cases, like other languages, being

Nominative, or that which names the thing, and generally goes before the verb, as *Pédro perdió su cápa*, Peter lost his cloak.

Genitive, or that which shows to whom the thing belongs, or from whom it proceeds, as *éste es el perro de Pédro*, this is the dog of Peter ; *María es hija de Joseph*, Mary is Joseph's daughter ; so that this case answers to this question, *whose* or *whereof* ?

Dative, or that which shows the place or person to whom the thing is given, and answereth to this question, *to whom* or *to what* ? as *dí mi espáda a mi hermano*, I gave my sword to my brother.

52 *The RUDIMENTS of*

Accusative, or that which declares the subject of the verb, and answers to this question *whom or what?* and follows generally the verb, as *ésta mañana recibí éste presente*, this morning I received this present.

Vocative, is called the case of calling, admiring, or saluting, as *O Pédro ven aquí*, O Peter, pray come here, &c.

Ablative, or that which denotes the place or person from whom the thing is taken, and is generally joined to a preposition, as *procédo de la tierra*, I proceed from the earth.

Of the Numbers.

THE Spaniards like the Latins, have two numbers, viz.

Singular, which speaketh of	}	as	{	<i>cása</i>	a house
one,					
Plural, which speaketh of	}		{	<i>cáfas</i>	houses
many,					

The singular *Spanish*, if end with a vowel is made plural by adding the letter *s* after it, as *bombre*, *bombres*; *témplo*, *templos*; if end with an *i* vowel is made plural by adding *s* or *es*, as *rubí*, *rubís*, or *rubíes*, a ruby; *borceguí*, *borceguís*, or *borceguíes*, but generally in *es*, except *maravedí*, which makes *maravedís*, or *maravedises*, &c. if the noun end with a consonant in singular, then is made plural by adding *es*, as *dolór*, *dolóres*; *Apóstol*, *Apóstoles*; *páz*, *lúz*; *véz*, *vóz*, change *z* into *c* in plural, as has been observed before, saying *páces*, *lúces*, &c. *x* is not changed into *g* in plural, as some authors wrongfully observe, but is retained, and so from *relóx* say in plural *relóxes*; *carcán*, *carcáxes*.

Of

Of the Spanish articles.

THERE are three articles in the *Spanish* language, as well as in the *Latin*, and are borrowed of the pronoun, viz. *el* for the masculines, *la* for the feminines, and *lo* for the neuters. An article (which is an accident to the Noun, and a necessary one to the modern languages) is a *monosyllable*, or a *diction composed of one syllable*, it is *declinable*, and serves to distinguish the genders. The *Spaniards* make use of the articles before all the nouns, except the proper names as in the *English* tongue. Note, that the *English* have but one undeclined article, viz. *the* for the masculine and feminine, and the particle *it* which often serves for the neuter : so that the *English* make no difference in genders by their article, when they speak of inanimates, except only the word *ship*, which is feminine, and then they make use of the relative *she*, *élla*, saying *she is a 20 gun ship*, *élla es una náve de 20 cañones*.

El.

This article is irregular in the plural, and make *los*, and tho' always placed before nouns masculine, as *el hombre*, the man : it is also used before the feminine nouns beginning with *a* (and this only in singular, because in plural we say *las álmás*, *las águas*) as *el águá*, the water ; *el álma*, or *ánima*, the soul ; which is permitted *euphoniæ gratia*, for the better sound, to avoid two *a*'s coming together, or the cutting one off, which is little used in *Spanish* ; because *la águá*, would sound like *l'águá*, and therefore for the more distinction they say *el águá*, as in *French* they say *mon ame*, tho' *ame* be of the feminine gender, and not *ma ame* or *m'ame*. Yet is not this a general rule, for the most received

54 The RUDIMENTS of

custom is to preserve *la* for the words of three or four syllables, as *la antigüedad*, antiquity; *la Académia*, the academy.

El is often put before the verb in the infinitive mood, when followed by another verb, as *el comer en tiempo es bueno, como tambien el dormir quando se necesita*, to eat when 'tis convenient does good, as it is also to sleep when it is wanted.

When the particles *de* or *a* are joined to *el*, often happens that the Spaniards make one syllable of both, as instead of *de el* or *a el* they say *del* or *al*, as it is said before in the Orthography.

Le in singular, and *les* in plural are often taken as articles by some authors, but without any grounds for so saying; because they never are used before nouns, but only as relatives after verbs in dative or accusative, according to the case governed by the verb, they are likewise used before the verbs, as *dixele esto*, I told him this; *les acompañé*, I accompanied them.

La

Is to be placed before nouns feminine, as *la mugér*, the woman; except those nouns that begin with *a*, as has been said just above: it is likewise used before and after the verb, tho' not as article, but as relative, as *la llamé*, I called her; *llamadla*, call her; the plural of *la* is *las*, and often supplies the noun substantive, as *béso las de v. m^a* that is *las manos*.

Lo,

As has been said, is the article of the neuter gender, and only used before adjectives, made substantives or taken in that sense, as *lo grande*, that which is great; *lo bueno*, that which is good, this article has no plural number, sometimes *lo* is taken absolutely,

lutely, as *tódo lo que me mandáre v. m^d. haré con gusto*, I will do with pleasure every thing that you will or shall command me. It is used likewise before and after a verb as relative, as *lo díre*, I will say it ; *bázlo*, do it.

What has been said of the articles as articles, I think is sufficient for the present, and for the rest I refer the reader to the chapter of Pronouns, and to the Syntax.

The Masculine article is thus declin'd :

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *el*, the
Genitive, *del*, or *de el*, of the
Dative, *à el*, or *al*, or *pára el*, to the
Accusative, *el*, the
Ablative, *del*, or *de el*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *los*, the
Genitive, *de los*, of the
Dative, *à* or *pára los* to the
Accusative, *los*, the
Ablative, *de los*, from the.

The Feminine thus :

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *la*, the
Genitive, *de la*, of the
Dative, *à*, or *pára la*, to the
Accusative, *la*, the
Ablative, *de la*, from the

The Plural Number.

Nominative, *las*, the
Genitive, *de las*, of the
Dative, *a las*, to the
Accusative, *las*, the
Ablative, *de las*, from the.

The Neuter article thus :

The Singular Number.

Nominative, *lo*, the
Genitive, *de lo*, of the
Dative, *à*, or *pára lo*, to the
Accusative, *lo*, the
Ablative, *de lo*, from the

It has no Plural Number.

Nor are these articles capable of any vocative, without we say, *O* is general to them all, as, *O bómbré*, *O man*, *O mugér*, *O woman*.

*Examples of the Nouns in their several Terminations.*Words end in *a*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hembra, <i>a Female</i>	Hémbra, <i>Females</i>
Fruta, <i>Fruit</i>	Frútas, <i>Fruits</i>

Words ending in *e*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Hombre, <i>a Man</i>	Hómbres, <i>Men</i>
Lièvre, <i>a Hare</i>	Lièvres, <i>Hares</i>

Words ending in *i*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Rubí, <i>a Ruby</i>	Rubís, <i>or Rubies, Rubies</i>
Javalí, <i>a Wild Boar</i>	Javalís, <i>or Javalies, Wild Boars</i>

Words ending in *o*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Caballo, <i>a Horse</i>	Cabállos, <i>Horses</i>
Milagro, <i>a Miracle</i>	Milágnos, <i>Miracles</i>

Words ending in *u*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Espíritu, <i>a Spirit</i>	Espíritus, <i>Spirits</i>
Tribu, <i>a Tribe</i>	Tribus, <i>Tribes</i>

Words ending in *y*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Réy, <i>a King</i>	Réyes, <i>Kings</i>
Léy, <i>a Law</i>	Léyes, <i>Laws</i>

Words

Words ending in *d*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Verdád, <i>Truth</i>	Verdádes, <i>Truths</i>
Mercéd, <i>a Favour</i>	Mercédes, <i>Favours</i>

Words ending in *l*.

Animál, <i>an Animal</i>	Animáles, <i>Animals</i>
Gentíl, <i>a Pagan</i>	Gentíles, <i>Gentiles</i>

Words ending in *n*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pan, <i>Bread</i>	Pánes, <i>Loaves</i>
Celemín, <i>a Peck</i>	Celemínes, <i>Pecks</i>

Words ending in *r*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Pesár, <i>Grief</i>	Pesáres, <i>Sorrows</i>
Dolór, <i>Pain</i>	Dolóres, <i>Pains</i>

Words ending in *s*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Diós, <i>God</i>	Dióses, <i>Gods</i>
Mes, <i>a Month</i>	Méses, <i>Months</i>

Words ending in *x*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Carcáx, <i>a Quiver</i>	Carcáxes, <i>Quivers</i>
Relóx, <i>a Clock</i>	Relóxes, <i>Clocks</i>

Words ending in *z*.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
Paz, <i>Peace</i>	Páces, <i>Peaces</i>
Juéz, <i>a Judge</i>	Juéces, <i>Judges</i>

58 The RUDIMENTS of

Examples of declining the three several Gender.

Example of the Masculine Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Los Pádras, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> Del Pádre, <i>of the Father</i>	<i>Gen.</i> Delos Pádras, <i>of the Fathers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> Al Pádre, or para el Pádre, <i>to the Father</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A los Pádras, or para los Pádras, <i>to the Fathers</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Al or El Pádre, <i>the Father</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Los Pádras, <i>the Fathers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Pádre, <i>O Father</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Pádras, <i>O Fathers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> Del Pádre, <i>from the Father</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De los Pádras, <i>from the Fathers</i>

Example of the Feminine Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> La Mádre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Las Mádras, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De la Mádre, <i>of the Mother</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De las Mádras, <i>of the Mothers</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A la Mádre, <i>to the Mother</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A las Mádras, <i>to the Mothers</i>
<i>Acc.</i> La Mádre, <i>the Mother</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Las Mádras, <i>the Mothers</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O Mádre, <i>O Mother</i>	<i>Voc.</i> O Mádras, <i>O Mothers</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De la Mádre, <i>from the Mother</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De las Mádras, <i>from the Mothers</i>

Example of the Neuter Gender.

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Lo bueno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De lo bueno, <i>of that which is good</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A lo bueno, <i>to that which is good</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Lo bueno, <i>that which is good</i>
<i>Voc.</i> O bueno, <i>O that which is good</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De lo bueno, <i>from that which is good.</i>

These Adjectives used as Substantives have, as has been said before, no Plural Number.

Common Adjectives are declined as Substantives, according to their Genders, and therefore there needs no Examples of them.

Some

Some observations concerning derived and compound Nouns.

THE Nouns of dignity given to Men, are some of them Substantives, and others Adjectives; the nature of Substantives requires, that they be not given to women, who are possessed of the like dignity, without deriving the Feminine from the Masculine; and thus from *Dúque*, a Duke is deriv'd *Duquesa*, a Duchess; from *Cónde*, an Earl, *Condésa*, a Countess; from *Príncipe*, a Prince, *Príncesa*, a Princess; because *Príncipe* in *Spanish* is of the Masculine Gender. But when the Name of Dignity is a Noun Adjective, as *Teniente*, a Lieutenant, or a Deputy; *Asistente*, an Assistant; *Presidente*, a President, it serves both Sexes without any Variation; for in speaking of a President's Lady, she is not to be called *la Presidenta*, but *la Presidente*; and so in the rest of that sort.

They are guilty of the like Error who speaking of a wild, or mountain She-Goat, call her *Cábra monteza*, because the Adjective *Montés* shews both Genders, and therefore the Female is to be called *Montés*, as well as the Male. However the Adjectives that denote Kingdoms, or Nations, ending in *es*, are only applied to the Masculine Gender, and the Feminine has the addition of *a*, as in speaking of a *Frenchman*, or an *Englishman*, he is called *Francés*, or *Inglés*, but a Woman of those Nations is *Francésa*, or *Inglésa*.

CH A P. II.

Of Pronouns.

PRONOUNS are certain words put into the place, or substituted instead of Nouns, serving to

to shew, or express the person, or thing before named, without naming it over again.

There are several sorts of Pronouns, some of them are called Primitives, as *yó*, I, *tu*, you, *si*, himself, *nos*, or *nosótro*s, we ; *vos*, or *vosótro*s, ye.

Others are Derivatives, or Possessives, because derived from those above, and denoting possession, as *mío*, mine, *túyo*, thine, *súyo*, his, *nuéstro*, ours, *vuestro*, yours ; with their feminine gender, *mía*, *túya*, *súya*, *nuéstra*, *vuestra*. It is to be observ'd, that these pronouns, of the singular number when placed before substantives, always lose their last syllable, and for *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, must be said, *mi*, *tu*, *su*, as *mi Pádre*, my Father ; *tu Mádre*, your Mother ; *su Avuélo*, his Grandfather. But when a question is asked, then the answer must be *mío*, *túyo*, or *súyo*, as *cúyo es éste guante* ? whose glove is that ? The answer is *mío*, mine, or *túyo*, yours, or *súyo*, his. When they are absolute, or taken as neuter, then they have the article *lo* before, as *lo mío*, that which is mine ; *lo túyo*, that which is thine, &c. The same is practised in the feminine gender.

To form the plural number of these pronouns *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, or *mi*, *tu*, *su*, add the Letter *s*, as was before said in the nouns, and you have *míos*, *túyos*, *súyos*, *mis*, *tus*, and *sus*.

There are also demonstrative pronouns, as *éste*, *ésta*, *ésto*, This ; *ése*, *éssa*, *éso*, that ; and *el*, *élla*, *éllo*, he, she, that, *éste*, *ésta*, *ése*, *éssa*, and *el* are always placed before nouns, as *éste libro*, this book, *éssa carne*, that flesh ; but *ésto*, *éso* and *éllo*, are spoken absolutely, without being joined to any noun ; *ésto*, signifying this thing ; *éso*, that thing ; and *éllo*, the thing.

The particles making the cases in declining, when they come before these pronouns beginning with *e*, are not always contracted, and it may be said *de este*, or *deste*, *de esto*, or *desto*.

The

The relative pronouns are, *qual*, which, *quién*, who, *qué*, what.

For declining of pronouns, see the following examples.

The pronoun of the first person *Yo* is thus declin'd.

<i>Sing.</i>	<i>Plur.</i>
<i>Nom.</i> Yo, <i>I</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Nos, or <i>Nosotros</i> , <i>We</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De mí, <i>Of me</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De nos, or de <i>nosotros</i> , <i>Of us</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A mí, <i>To me</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A nos, or a <i>nosotros</i> , <i>To us</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Me, or a mí, <i>Me</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Nos, or <i>nosotros</i> , <i>Us</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De mí, <i>From me</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De nos, or de <i>nosotros</i> , <i>From us.</i>

The second person *Tu* is thus declined:

<i>Nom.</i> Tu, <i>You</i>	<i>Nom.</i> Vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>Ye</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De ti, <i>Of you</i>	<i>Gen.</i> De vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>Of ye</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A ti, <i>To you</i>	<i>Dat.</i> A vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>To ye</i>
<i>Acc.</i> Te, or a ti, <i>You</i>	<i>Acc.</i> Vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>Ye</i>
<i>Abl.</i> De ti, <i>From you</i>	<i>Abl.</i> De vos, or <i>vosotros</i> , <i>From ye</i>

The third person *Si* thus:

<i>Sing.</i>
<i>Gen.</i> De si, <i>Of himself,</i>
<i>Dat.</i> A si, <i>To himself,</i>
<i>Accus.</i> Se, or a si, <i>Himself,</i>
<i>Ablat.</i> De si, <i>From himself.</i>

And has no plural number, nor feminine gender, unless *mismo* be added to it for the masculine, and then *misma* must be for the feminine, and then it has *mismos* and *mismas* in the plural.

These pronouns in the singular number serve both the masculine and the feminine genders, as does *nos* and *vos* in the plural; but *nosotros* and *vosotros* are masculine, and the feminine is made by turning the last *o* into *a*, that is, instead of *nosotros* say *nosotras*, and instead of *vosotros* *vosotras*.

The

The *Spaniards* frequently in speech and writing use this pronoun *nos* with the first person plural of the imperative mood, taking away the *s* from the verb, as *vámonos*, for *vámos nos*, let us go ; *dexémonos*, for *dexémos nos*, let us leave ; and so they do of *vos*, losing the *v*, as *ídos*, let ye go, instead of *ídvos*, or losing *d* in the second person plural, as *amáos*, let ye love, instead of *amádos*, or *amádvos*.

It is proper to observe, that the genitive case of these pronouns, seems to be in a manner superfluous, as never in use ; for if we are to speak by way of possession, we must not say *el libro es de mi*, which would be in *English*, the book is of me, but instead thereof, we must use the word, *mío*, viz. *el libro es mío*, the book is mine. So *el cavállo es de ti*, is not *Spanish*, and would signify, the horse is of you ; but it must be *el cavállo es túyo*, the horse is your's ; and lastly, *el fáyo es de si*, is as false, being the Coat is of him, but it must be, *el fáyo es súyo*, or *de v. m^d* the coat is his. And if the question be asked, *cúya obra es ésta* ? whose work is this ? the answer must be, *mía*, mine, or *túya*, yours, or *súya*, his.

These pronouns serve after a verb, which is then rather in the ablative, than the genitive case, as *que se dirá de mi* ? what will be said of me ? *que será de ti* ? what will become of you ? *el habla de si*, he talks of himself.

The possessives *mío*, *túyo*, *súyo*, mine, thine, his, and *mi*, *tu*, *su*, my, your, his, as also, *nuéstro*, and *vuestro*, need not be declined here, all of them following the same rule, without any variation.

The three pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *el*, are used in composition with the word *mismo*, signifying itself, as *yo mismo*, I myself, *tu mismo*, you yourself, *el mismo*, he himself ; where it is to be noted that *el mismo*, also signifies the same, but then *el* is the article *the*. These three are declined as before, only that the *mismo* has a singular and a plural number, and
therefore

therefore we must say, *yo mismo*, *tu mismo*, and *el mismo*, in the singular, and *nosotros mismos*, *vosotros mismos*, and *ellos mismos*, in the plural; and so *mismo* and *mismos* for the masculine gender, and *misma* and *mismas* for the feminine.

The pronouns possessive are *Mío*, *Tuyo*, *Suyo*, *Nuestro*, *Vuestro*, and the feminine gender of them *Mía*, *Tuya*, *Suya*, *Nuestra*, *Vuestra*; but if placed before the substantive, then it must be *Mi*, *Tu*, *Su*, and in the plural *Mis*, *Tus*, *Sus*. It is proper also here to speak of the pronoun of interrogation, *Cuyo*, in the masculine, and *Cuya*, in the feminine gender, and *Cuyos* and *Cúyas*, in the plural number, which always denotes the genitive. To explain the proper use of these words, take these examples: Asking the question, *Cuyo es éste caballo?* that is *de quien es éste caballo?* Whose Horse is this? The answer is, *Mío*, mine, *Tuyo*, yours, *Suyo*, his; and so in the feminine gender, only changing the *o* into *a*, as *cuya*, *mía*, &c. and in the plural number adding *s*, as *cúyos* or *cúyas*, &c.

Note, That *Cuyo* is likewise relative, as *el Rey, en cuya Mano está el hacer bien*, &c. the King in whose Hand or Power is, to do good, &c. *éste réo, cuyos delitos son grandes*, &c. This guilty person whose crimes are great, &c.

The Demonstratives *Éste*, *Ésse*, *Aquél*, *El*.

E'STE, This, as *éste Hombre*, this Man, *éste Caballo*, that Horse; *aquél* is also *that*, but yet with this difference, that *éste* signifies *that* which is near to the person who is spoken to, whereas *aquél* denotes *that* which is neither near him who is spoken to, nor him who speaketh.

These

64 The RUDIMENTS of

These pronouns are thus declined :

Sing.	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.	
Nom.	éste	ésta	ésto	<i>This</i>
Gen.	déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta	désto, or de ésto	<i>Of this</i>
Dat.	a éste	a ésta	a ésto	<i>To this</i>
Acc.	éste, or a éste	esta, or a ésta	esto, or a ésto	<i>This</i>
Abl.	déste, or de éste	désta, or de ésta	désto, or de ésto.	<i>From this</i>

Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neut.	
Nom.	éstos	ésta		<i>These</i>
Gen.	déstos, or de éstos	désta, or de ésta		<i>Of these</i>
Dat.	a éstos	a ésta		<i>To these</i>
Acc.	éstos, or a éstos	ésta, or a ésta		<i>These</i>
Abl.	déstos, or de éstos	désta, or de ésta.		<i>From these</i>

Esse, éssa, ésto, is declined in the same manner, the plural number being *éssos, éssas*. The like of *Aquél, Aquélla, Aquéllos, Aquéllas*.

So is *el*, he, *élla*, she, *éllo*, the or that thing, *éllos*, they, masculine, *ellas*, they, feminine. There is no neuter plural. The cases need not to be repeated, being the same as those before. The word *ótro*, is often joined to *éste*, or *éssa*, as *Essótro*, or *Esséótro*, the other Man or Thing; *Essótra*, or *Essaótra*, the other Woman.

There are two other pronouns, which have only a plural number, as signifying two, which are *ámbos*, and *entrámbos*, both. To the first of them is often added *a dos*, that is, *!Ambos a dos*, both together, and *Entrámbos*, imports much the same. Note, that of *éste*, and *éste*, is made *aquéste, aquéste*, this or that very Man. And so in the feminine and neuter gender.

The

The relatives, *Quién, Que, Qual.*

QUIEN, is either interrogative, or relative, as *Quién lo dice?* Who says it? *No báí quién lo fufra,* no Man can endure it.

Qué, is also interrogative, and relative, as *Qué es ésto?* What is that? *El bómbré que yo dígo,* The Man I speak of.

Qual, fignifies Which, as *Qual déllós?* which of them? To this is fometimes added *el,* for the mafculine, *la* for the feminine, and *lo* for the neuter, as *el qual, la qual, lo qual.*

The declining of thefe confifting only in the addition of the articles, it is needlefs to run the fame over again; only it muft be obferved, that *Que* has no plural number, as fignifying What, which is incapable of it; and yet *Quién* and *Qual,* though they fignify *Who,* and *Which,* have a plural, which is *Quiénes,* and *Quáles,* as *Quiénes fon aquéllos?* Who are thofe? and *Quáles fon los que dices?* What fort of people are thofe you fpeak of, or what are they?

El, is frequently joined to *Qual,* which we cannot fo properly exprefs in *Engliſh,* as fignifying *Who;* but *lo qual,* is expreffed, the which, thefe two conjoined are declined as follows?

Sing.	Mafc.	Fem.	Neut.
Nom.	El qual	la qual	lo qual
Gen.	del qual	de la qual	de lo qual
Dat.	al qual	a la qual	a lo qual
Acc.	el qual, or al (qual	la qual, or a la (qual	lo qual, or a lo (qual
Abl.	del qual	de la qual	de lo qual

Plur.	Masc.	Fem.	No Neuter.
<i>Nom.</i>	los quáles	las quáles	
<i>Gen.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles,	
<i>Dat.</i>	a los quáles	a las quáles	
<i>Acc.</i>	los quáles, or (a los quáles	las quáles, or a las (quáles	
<i>Abl.</i>	de los quáles	de las quáles	

When the word *Quiéra*, is added to *Quién*, or *Qual*, it quite alters the meaning, so *Quienquiera* signifies any person, or man whatsoever ; and *Qualquiera*, is any one, whether man, or woman, or other thing. When *que* is added to *tal* thus, *que tal*, then stands for *quál* in Spanish.

Of the Reciprocals, or Relatives, me, te, se.

THESE three are only of the dative and accusative Cases, and have always a verb either before, or after them, as *Díme quién eres?* Tell me who you are? *Dóte el Parabién?* I give you Joy. *Fuése de aquí*, He went away from hence. They are also placed before verbs, as, *Pédro me dixo*, Peter told me. *Juán te dará*, John will give you. *El se alába*. He praises himself. Many other examples might be brought wherein these pronouns are variously used ; but those things are better learnt by practice, than set down as rules.

Mi, ti, si, before spoken of as genitive Cases, the first two of *yo*, and *tu*, and the third without a proper nominative, are often join'd to the word *con*, with, and the syllable *go*, added to it, thus *Conmigo*, with me ; *Contigo*, with you ; *Configo*, with himself. They have no variation for the genders, but serve both the masculine, and the feminine.

Note, That *proprio* stands often for *mismo*, as *yo propio*, or *yo mismo*, *tu propio*, &c.

The

The possessive *su*, and in plural *sus*, stands for his, her's, their, &c. as *el Rêy con su Hijo el Príncipe*, the King with his Son the Prince; *la Réyna con su hija la Princesa*, the Queen with her Daughter the Princess.

Los subditos deben obedecér, y pagar tributo à su Rêy, the Subjects ought to obey, and pay tribute to their King.

El General comió con sus oficiáles subalternos, the General dined with his subaltern Officers.

Su stands also for *el*, or *la*, as *el hombre tiene su-fer (el ser) de Dios*, Man has the being from God. *Su firma del capitán*, *su* for *la*; but to speak properly, read always *el ser*, the being; *la firma*, the sign, or one's name.

Add to these

The imperfect Pronouns, or properly these Nouns relatives: *Cierto*, certain; *uno*, one; *algúno*, *álguien*, somebody, or *algo* in neuter, something; *cadaúno*, each, every body; *nádie*, no body (these two last mentioned have no plural) *ótro*, other; *sólo*, alone; *tódo*, all; *tal*, such; *tanto*, so much; *quanto*, how much. And the two *punique* words *fuláno* and *zutáno*, such a one. *Note*, That these are called by *Salv. Náves*, pronouns indefinites.

There are three persons in the Pronouns, viz.

Sing.	Plur.
1. Yo, I	nos, or nosotros, we
2. Tu, Thou	vos, or vosotros, ye
3. El, or aquél, he	ellos, or aquéllos; they

C H A P. III.

Of V E R B S.

A Verb is a part of speech, that signifies to be, to do, or to suffer, as *ser hómbre*, to be a Man; *ámo*, I love; *soi amádo*, I am loved: Is conjugated through Moods and Tenses; by Moods the Verb is changed according to the circumstances, as *yo háblo*, I speak, is the indicative; *bábla tu*, speak thou, the imperative, &c. Tenses are the distinction and variety of times, as *venía*, I was coming; *víne*, I came, &c.

Verbs are divided into personals, (so called because they have persons) as *yo ámo*, I love; *tu ámas*, thou lovest, &c. and impersonals, (because without persons) as *conviene*, it behoveth, *consta* it is plain.

The personals are subdivided into

Active		Neuter
Passive		Reciprocal.

Active signifies to do, as *enseñár*, to teach; *leér*, to read; and may be made passive by the auxiliary Verb *ser*, and the participle passive of the Verb, as *ser enseñádo*, *soi enseñádo*, &c.

Passive signifies to suffer, as *soi amádo*. But note, That in the third person singular, and the third of the plural are conjugated not only with the the auxiliar *ser*, but even with the particle *se*, as *Diós es amádo*, or *Diós se áma*, God is beloved. *Buéno es que la virtud sea ballada*, or *se bálle en un Príncipe*, it is good that Virtue be found in a Prince. *Que los Buénos sean amádos*, or *se ámen*, that the virtuous

virtuous may be loved. By which you may see, that the participle Passive is varied in the conjugation of this Verb, saying, *Tú soí amado, nosotros somos amados.*

Neuter properly is that which signifies neither action nor passion, as *colorár*, to colour; *coloreár*, to recover a colour, or to give colour; *corrér*, to run, *assentár*, to assent. This Verb makes a perfect sense by itself, in which it differs from the active, as *duérmo*, I sleep, *nieva*, it snows.

The verb *Active* says the same thing in the active and passive voices, as *yo ámo à diós*, or *dios es amado de mí*, which can't be said by the Neuter in a proper manner.

The Neuter is either substantive, as *ser*, to be; or absolute (so called for its making a sense by itself) by action, as *blasphemár*, to blaspheme, *lluéve*, it rains; or by passion, as *coloreár*, *ennegrecér*.

The verb reciprocal is that which return the sense backward, and is conjugated thus, *apercibirse*, to be prepared or provided for, *me apercibo*, I prepare myself, *te apercibes*, thou preparest thyself; and always has the particle *se* in the infinitive.

Note, That in the *Spanish* language, one Verb may be made *active*, *passive*, *neuter*, and *reciprocal* by the different senses that it may be applied to it, as *acostár*, to put one in it's bed, is active, and is made passive by the Verb *auxiliár estár*, and the participle passive, as *estoi acostado*, I am put in my bed, or I lay down. When it signifies to follow one's party, or opinion, or to declare himself partial for a Prince, is *Neuter*, as *Pédro, dexado el servicio de Fráncia, por proméssas de adelantamiento acostó à la parte de España.* Peter having left the *French* service, by the promises he had on his being promoted, enlisted himself in the *Spanish* service. And when it signifies to come near to a place, as *acostarse aquí*, to come near to this place, then is reciprocal, as *si te acuéstas aquí*,

aquí, te mataré, if you come near to this place, I will kill you.

Some of the Verbs are regular, (so called for their being confined to rules) and others irregular (so called, because they have no rule); but as their irregularity is various some time in the present tense of the indicative, in the preterperfect, future, in the imperative, preter imperfect and future of the optative, and otherwise in their participles, I shall take care to mention it in the Conjugations.

Of Conjugations.

THERE are three Conjugations in the *Spanish* Tongue, viz.

- | | | | |
|-----------------|------|---|------------------------------|
| 1. in <i>ár</i> | } as | { | <i>Amár</i> , to love |
| 2. in <i>ér</i> | | | <i>Respondér</i> , to answer |
| 3. in <i>ír</i> | | | <i>Venír</i> , to come. |

So that the *Spanish* Verbs are to be looked for in the Dictionaries by their infinitives.

Of Moods.

THE Moods are six, as in *Latin*, viz. The *Indicative*, or that which shows, or declares; the *Imperative*, or that which commands; *Optative*, or that which wishes, or desires; *Subjunctive*, which supposes something; *Potential*, or that by which something is expected; and the *Infinitive*, which leaves all undetermined.

Of Tenses.

THE Tenses, which are the times of action, or passion, are three properly, being the present, the past, and the time to come: And with those

those made by circumlocution are ten in the indicative Mood, viz. the present, preterimperfect, three preterperfects, the plus perfect, and four futures: And in the optative Mood there are nine, viz. the present, three preterimperfects, preterperfect, two preter plus perfects, and two futures.

Of the Indicative Mood.

THE Present Tense of all Conjugations of regular verbs, is formed by changing *ar*, *er*, or *ir* of the infinitive into *o*, as from *amár* say *ámo*, from *leér*, *léo*, from *cumplir*, *cúmplo*; this tense extends itself to a future time, as *mañana es día de fiesta*, to-morrow is a holy day.

The Preterimperfect of the first Conjugation is formed by changing *ár* into *ába*, as *amába*, I did love, or properly I was loving; and of the second and third Conjugation, is formed by changing *ér* and *ír* into *ía*, as *perdía*, *pedía*.

Note, That this Tense has two ways of explaining the second person plural through all Conjugations, as *amábadeis* or *amábais*; *perdiádeis* or *perdiáis*; *pediádeis* or *pediáis*.

The first Preterperfect of the first Conjugation by changing *ár* into *é*, as *amár*, *amé*; but of the second and third Conjugations by changing *ér* and *ír* into *í*, as *perder*, *perdí*, *pedir*, *pedí*. This tense is called *Definite*, because it is a time perfectly past and expressed; as *el mes pasado hablé con él*, I spoke with him last month.

The second Perfect of all the Conjugations is formed of the auxiliar verb *haber*, and the participle passive of the verb treated of, as *he hablado*, I have spoken, *he perdido*, I have lost; *he pedido*, I have asked.

The third Perfect is formed in the same manner, as *hubo hablado*, &c. but not so frequently used in Spanish as the other two.

Note, That these two latter are called Preterperfects indefinites, for their time is not determined, as *le he hablado*, I have spoken to him, but we don't say when.

So that the difference between the first preterperfect and the others, is that the former should express time, and the latter not; besides, that the first extends itself farther than the others (which are referred to time but lately past) you may say, *le hablé dos años ha*, I spoke to him two years ago; but you can't say *le he hablado dos años há*, I have spoken to him two years ago; because *he hablado* does only extend to a time so lately past, that it appears to have something of the present. These are *Valéra's* Observations, which I advise the Reader to observe, in order to avoid the frequent Equivocations that often happens in speaking and writing.

The Preterplusperfect thus: *havía hablado* *havía perdido*, *havía pedido*, I had spoken, lost, &c.

The first Future is formed of the infinitive, adding *é* after *r*, as of *hablar*, adding *a* say *hablaré*; *perder*, *perderé*; *pedir*, *pediré*, having always the accent on the last letter.

The second Future with the auxiliary *hé*, *tengo*, or *débo*, and the infinitive Mood with *de* before it, as *be* or *tengo de dar*, I am to give, *débo de dar*, or *débo dar*, I am oblig'd, I must give.

The third thus: *Havré de hablar*, I shall be obliged to speak, &c.

The fourth (which properly is the second Preterplusperfect) thus: *Havía de hablar*, I had, or I was to speak, &c.

Of the Imperative.

THE Imperative is made of the third person of the present of the indicative Mood, and of the present of the optative, as *ama tu*, love thou;

ame

áme aquél, let him love; *pierde tu*, loose thou; *pierda el*, let him loose, &c.

So that the third person of the indicative is the second of the imperative, and the third of the imperative is the first of the optative. The second plural is formed from the infinitive by changing *r* into *d*, of *amár* say *amád*, let ye love; *perder*, *perdéd*; *pedir*, *pedíd*; and often the *d* is lost, saying *amaos* for *amád vos*, or *amád os*, and sometimes is transposed after *l*, as *amálos*, *amáles* for *amádlos*, or *amádles*; and so it is often said *decilde* for *decidle*.

Of the Optative, Potential, and Subjunctive Moods.

OPTATIVE, or that wishes, or desires, has always annexed an adverb, as *óxala*, *ò si*, *pluguiesse à Diós*, would to God, I pray God, or God grant; *aunque*, *no obstante que*, *sin embargo que*, altho', notwithstanding.

Potential properly has no signs in *Spanish*, but in *English* has these, *can*, *may*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*, which are equal to these *Spanish* expressions, *puede ser que*, *es menester que*, as some authors will have it.

Subjunctive has always some conjunction annexed, as *si*, *cómo*, *que*, *quando*: *if*, *as*, *that*, *when*, as *como yo áme*, as O may love; but the tenses are all alike in these three Moods.

The present of the Optative is formed by the present of the Indicative changing *o* into *e* in the first conjugation, and into *a* in the second and third conjugations, as, from *ámo* say *áme*; *piérdo*, *piérda*; *pído*, *pída*.

The first and second Preterimperfects are formed from the first person of the first preterperfect of the Indicative, as from *amé* in the first conjugation changing *e* into *ára* or *ásse* is made *amára*, *amásse*; in the second and third conjugations add to the preterperfect

74 The RUDIMENTS of

terperfect *era* or *esse*, as from *perdí* say *perdiéra*, *perdiése*, from *pedí* say *pidiéra*, *pidiése*.

The third Preterimperfect is formed from the infinitive, adding *ía*, as from *amár* say *amaría*, from *leér*, *leería*, from *pedír*, *pidería*.

Observe here, That these tenses have two ways to explain the second person plural, as *amarádeis* or *amáraís*, *amássedeis*, or *amásseis*, *amariádeis*, or *amariáís*, and so in the other two conjugations.

Observe likewise, That these three tenses vary one from another, speaking in a right method; tho' there is such a confusion in explaining them, that hardly there is any difference made by the Spaniards. Some Authors adapt them to the three Moods, viz. *amára* to the Optative, *amásse*, to the Subjunctive, and *amaría* to the Potential; as *oxala yo amára la virtud*, God grant that I might love virtue; *como yo amásse a Dios, el me amaria*, as I could love God, he would love me.

Other Authors, as *Tominque*, *Cessér* in Gram. Rud. and *Villalba*, are of opinion, that *amára* denotes the disposition of a thing, or the readiness for an action; *amásse* the beginning of it, and *amaria* the possibility to obtain it; or as *Terebio*, says the first imperfect is a tense of motion, *exquo* from whence, and related to the medium, as *de los veinte pesos le diéra diez para comprarse un vestido*, of the twenty pieces of eight I would give him ten, that he might buy himself a suit of cloaths; the second a tense medium, or *inquo*, as *como le ballasse baciendo loque le dixe*, as I should find him in doing what I told him. And the third a conditional tense, as *si lo baría, como el fuéa bueno*, I would do it, if he would be good.

One thing is certain amidst all these, that *aunque*, *como*, *oxala*, &c. follow the two first preterimperfects, and the third imperfect tense is used by way of interrogation, or suspension, saying:
baría

baria v. m^d. esto ? Would you do this ? *O que bien lo baria yo !* O that I could do it well ! or with *fi*.

The Preterperfect is formed from the auxiliar verb *bavér*, and the participle passive thus ; *báya amádo*, *baya perdido*, *báya pedído*, when I have loved, &c.

The first Plusperfect thus : *Húviêra amádo*, when I had loved.

The second, *buviêsse amádo*, when I had loved.

1. Future is made of the first Preterimperfect, by changing *ra* into *re*, as *amára*, *amâre* ; *perdiêra*, *perdiêre* ; *pediêra*, *pidiêre*, with the same accent on all the syllables.

2. Future of the first Plusperfect by changing *ra* into *re*, and participle passive, as from *búviêra amádo*, say in the future *búviêre amádo*. So that there are nine tenses in the Optative Mood, as well as in the Subjunctive and Potential.

Of the Infinitive Mood.

INFINITIVE signifieth to do, to suffer, or to be ; and hath neither number, nor person, nor nominative Case before as *amár*, to love ; *perder*, to loose ; *pedir*, to ask, to beg.

When two Verbs come together without any nominative Case between them, then the latter shall be in the infinitive Mood, as *desêo aprender*, I desire to learn : And often times the infinitive supplies the nominative case, as *amár à Diós, y hacer bien al Próximo*, *son los dos âctas Principâles de un Christi-âno*, to love God, and do good to the Neighbour, are the two principal Actions of a Christian.

When *le*, *la*, *lo*, *les*, *las*, *los*, are added to the infinitive, then *r* is often changed into *l*, as *amâlle* for *amârle*, *perdêlle* for *perderle*, *decêlle* for *decîrle*, to love him, to loose him, to tell him. And when *me*, *te*, *se*, *nos*, *os*, &c. follow the infinitive immediately, then they are pronounced as monosyllables, as *decîrle*, *decîrsele*, &c.

76 *The RUDIMENTS of*
A general Scheme of the Termination of Verbs of the
three Conjugations in their simple Tenses.

Singular.				Plural.			
Persons	yo,	tu,	el	nosotros,	vosotros	ellos,	
	I,	thou,	he	we	ye	they	
	do	doſt	doth	do	do	do.	
Indicative Mood.	pref. te.	1.	o as a	ámos	áis	an	
		2.	o es e	2. émos	éis	en	
		3.	o es e	3. ímos	is	en	
	pret. imp.	1.	did didſt did	did	did	did	
		2.	ába ábas ába	ábamos	abádeis	ában	
		3.	ía ías ía	íamos	ábais	ían	
	pret. pe.	1.	have haſt hath	have	have	have	
		2.	é áſte ó	ámos	iadeis	ían	
		3.	í iſte ó	ímos	íais	ían	
	future.	1.	ſhall or will have				
		2.	ré rás rá	rémos	réis	rán	
		3.					
Imper.	1.	do thou,	let him do,	let us,	let ye,	let them	
	2.	a tu,	e el	emos nosotros,	ad vosotros	en ellos	
	3.	e	a	ámos	éd	an	
Potential Mood.	pref. te.	1.	a tu,	e el	emos nosotros,	ad vosotros	en ellos
		2.	e	a	ámos	éd	an
		3.	e	a	ámos	íd	an
	imperf. tenses	1.	may maſt may	may	may	might	
		2.	or can				
		3.	e es e	émos	éis	en	
	future	1.	a as a	ámos	áis	an	
		2.	might mightſt might				
		3.	or could	might	might	might	
	future	1.	ára áras ára	áramos	áradeis-árais	áran	
		2.	áſſe áſſes áſſe	áſſemos	áſſedeis-áſſeis	áſſen	
		3.	ária árias ária	áramos	áriades-árais	árian	
Imper.	imperf. tenses	1.	era éras era	éramos	érades-érais	éran	
		2.	éſſe éſſes éſſe	éſſemos	éſſedeis-éſſeis	éſſen	
		3.	ría rías ría	ríamos	riadeis-riais	rían	
Imper.	future	1.	ſhall ſhall ſhall	ſhall	ſhall	ſhall	
		2.	or will have				
		3.	áre áres áre	áremos	áredeis-áreis	áren	
Imper.	future	1.	ére éres ére	éremos	éredeis-éreis	éren	
		2.					
		3.					

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Pref. Ten.	1. ár	} to have	Gerun.	ándo	havin.	ádo	} had.
and	2. ér			éndo		ído	
Pret. imp.	3. ír			iéndo		ído	

The Termination of Verbs of the three Conjugations in their compound Tenses.

		<i>Singular.</i>			<i>Plural.</i>		
Persons		<i>yo</i>	<i>tu</i>	<i>el</i>	<i>nos.</i>	<i>vos.</i>	<i>ellas</i>
		I, thou, he			we, ye, they,		
Indicative Mood.	2. pre-per.	I have, &c.					
	1.	hé,	hás,	ádo	hemos or havéis, han		
	2.	ha	2	2	2. ido		
	3.	3	3	3	3		
	3. perf.	I have, &c.					
	1.	húve,	ádo	huvimos, huvisteis			ádo
	2.	húviste,	2	huvieron			2. ido
	3.	húvo	3	3	3		3
	pluper.	I had, &c.					
	1.	havía,	ádo	haviámos, { haviádeis,			ádo
	2.	havía,	2	{ haviáis			2. ido
	3.	havía	3	3	3		3
	2. futu.	I am to					
	1.	he or tengo	ár	hemos, havéis, han de			ár
	2.	has, há de	ér	{			ér
	3.	3	3	3			3
	3. futu.	I must, or shall be obliged to					
	1.	havré,	ár	havrémos, havréis,			ár
	2.	havras,	ér	havrán de			ér
	3.	havrá de	ír	{			ír
	4. futu.	I had, or I was to					
	1.	havía,	ár	haviámos, { haviádeis,			ár
	2.	havía,	ér	{ haviáis,			ér
	3.	havía de	ír.	havian de			ír

Persons		yo tu el		nosotros, vosotros, ellos	
		I, thou, he		we, ye, they	
		<i>might or could have, &c.</i>			
pre. per.	{ 1. }	háya,	{ ádo	hayámos,	{ hayádeis { ádo
	{ 2. }	háyas,	{ 2.ído		{ hayáis { 2.ído
	{ 3. }	háya	{ 3	háyan	{ 3
		<i>I had, &c.</i>			
1 plusp.	{ 1. }	huviéra,	{ ádo	huviéramos,	{ adeís, { ádo
	{ 2. }	huvieras	{ 2.ído		{ ais { 2.ído
	{ 3. }	huviéra	{ 3	éran	{ 3
		<i>I had, &c.</i>			
2 plusp.	{ 1. }	huviése	{ ádo	huviéssimos,	{ edeis, { ádo
	{ 2. }	ésses	{ 2.ído		{ eis { 2.ído
	{ 3. }	ésse	{ 3	éssen	{ 3
		<i>shall or will</i>			
2 futur.	{ 1. }	huviére,	{ ádo	huviéremos,	{ edeis, { ádo
	{ 2. }	éres,	{ 2.ído		{ eis { 2.ído
	{ 3. }	ére	{ 3	éren.	{ 3

Infinitive.

Pret. perf.	1. } } ádo	to have, &c.	Gerunds	havi- } ádo	having.
and	2. } } 2.ído			endo } 2.ído	
Plusperf.	3. } } 3			orha- } 3	
Future	1. } } ar	to have hereafter		vien- } ar	
	2. } } ér			do } ér	
	3. } } ír			de } ír	
Supine	1. } } ar	to have			
	2. } } ér				
	3. } } ír				

Observations on the Verbs.

THE regular and irregular Verbs, generally speaking, agree in this, that the first Futures of the Indicative Mood, and that of the Optative are always the same through out all the Conjugations, with this difference, that the first has the accent on the last syllable, and the second in the *ante penultima*.

When

When the first Preterperfect of the indicative is irregular, the first and second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

<i>dár</i> , to give :	<i>tenér</i> , to have, or hold,	<i>decir</i> , to say.
Pret. Perf.	Pret. imperf. opt.	Future.
di, <i>I give</i>	diéra, or diése; <i>I might give.</i>	diere, <i>when I shall give.</i>
túve, <i>I had</i>	tu viéra, or tu viése, <i>that I might have.</i>	tu viere, <i>when I shall have.</i>
dixe, <i>I said</i>	dixéra, or dixése <i>that I might say.</i>	dixere, <i>when I shall say.</i>

The third Preterimperfect of the Optative is always the same, and ends in *ría*, as *daría*, *tendría*, *diría* for *deciría*.

Note, Likewise, that generally the third person singular of the present tense of the Indicative Mood, is the second person of the Imperative, and the third of the Imperative is the first of the Optative, as *aquel áma*, he loveth; *áma tu*, love thou; *áme aquel*, let him love; *que yo áme*, that I may love.

There are few exceptions in the Imperative, as from *ponér*, *tenér*, *bacér*, *decir*, &c. say *pon tu* instead of *pone tu*, *ten tu* for *tiene tu*, *báz* for *hate*, but this is in use, *dí tu*, or *dice tu*, &c.

Of the Participle.

A Participle is a part of a speech, it comes from the verb, and participates its force, that is, has the same signification, and governs the cause of the verb; it taketh of a Noun the gender, case, and declension; and of both, number and figure.

In Spanish there are four Participles, as in Latin, viz. of the

Latin	Spanish.
Pref. Ten. in { <i>ans</i> as <i>amans</i> <i>ens</i> <i>audiens</i> }	in { <i>ante</i> as { <i>amante</i> , loving, who loves <i>ents</i> <i>oyénte</i> , bearing, who does hear.
	N. B.

80 *The RUDIMENTS of*

N. B. That this Participle is likewise supplied in the *Spanish* language by the third person of the present tense of the indicative Mood, the relative *el* and *que*, as *elque áma*, he who does love ; it governs generally in *Spanish* a genitive, as *amante de Dios* ; and is of the gender of common of three, as *el amante*, *la amante*, *lo amante*.

Latin			Spanish		
Of the pret.	in	tus amatus	do	as	amado, loved,
or		sus as visus	in to		visto, seen,
Passive		xus connexus	xo, &c.		connexo, &c.
			join'd or added.		

Latin			Spanish		
Of the future	in	rus as futurus	úro	futuro	} which is to come.
		venturus	in éro, as	venturo	
			&c.	venidéro, &c.	

Note, That this Participle is supplied in *Spanish* by the auxiliar verb *havér*, or by *tenér*, with the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the verb, as *amaturus fueram*, *havía de amár*, I had to love ; *tengo*, or *he de amár*, I am to love, &c.

Of Fut. in { dus as *Amandus* : But this in *Spanish* is supplied by the auxiliar Verbs *havér* and *sér*, the particle *de*, and the participle of the preter of the Verb, as *Amandus est*, *bá de sér amado*, he is to be loved, &c.

Gerunds.

The Gerunds are terminated in *Spanish* in { ando as *amando*, loving,
endo as *oyendo*, bearing,

And govern the case of the Verb, as *amando a Dios*, loving God : The Gerund of genitive is formed of the particle *de*, and the infinitive of the Verb thus, *de amar*, of loving ; and that of accusative thus, *à amar*, to love.

Supines.

SUPINES.

THERE are two Supines in *Spanish*, by way of circumlocution, one active, as *à amár*, to love; the other passive, as *à ser amádo*, to be loved.

This, it is hoped, will be sufficient to bring the Reader into the knowledge of every thing required for the conjugation of verbs; as for the rest, we refer him to the third part of this Grammar, where under their proper heads he will find every thing necessary for the construction.

PERSONS.

THERE are also in Verbs three Persons in both numbers, *viz.*

Sing.	yo <i>I</i>	as	yo ámo, <i>I love</i>
	tu, <i>thou,</i>		tu ámas, <i>thou lovest</i>
	el, or aquél <i>he</i>		aquel áma, <i>he loveth.</i>
Plur.	nos, or nosótro, <i>we</i>	as	nosótro amámo, <i>we love</i>
	vos, or vosótro, <i>ye</i>		vosótro amáis, <i>ye love</i>
	ellos, or aquéllos, <i>they</i>		aquéllos aman, <i>they love.</i>

By the first person, we note, he who speaks; by the second, to whom we speak; and by the third, the person of whom we speak.

N. B. That the *Spaniards* very seldom make use of the second Person singular or plural, but when through a great familiarity among friends; when they speak to God, wife and husband to themselves, to children, or servants; instead thereof, when they speak to others, they make use of *Usted* in singular, or *Ustedes* in plural, or of *Vuestra Mercéd*, and *Vuestras Mercedes*, you, your Worship, your Merits, or Deservings; which are signs of the third person, of which they make use of in speaking: In writing they do always make use of

Vuestra Merced, thus *v. m^{d.}* in singular, or *v. m^{ds.}* in plural.

Observe here, that when an adjective comes after *Vuestra Merced*, it does not agree in the gender with *v. m^{d.}*, but with the person to whom we speak, or spoke of; when to a Man, thus *Vuestra Merced sea bien venido*, you are welcome: when to a Woman, thus, *Vuestra Merced sea bien venida*, you are welcome, and so in the plural. It can't be amiss, if at present I take notice of

The manner used by the Spaniards in saluting or complimenting one another.

THEY make use of *Usted*, or *Vuestra Merced* in general for persons, or among persons below those of the Nobility and Gentry, as *como está v. m^{d.}?* or *como le va a v. m^{d.}?* or *como se hálla v. m^{d.}?* or as newly introduced by strangers, *como se porta v. m^{d.}?* how do you do, &c. Answer, *Mui bien pára servirle*, (or *pára servir a v. m^{d.}*) or *Buén* (that is *ensalúd*) *para que me mán*de, &c. *Caballero buenos días* (that is, *éste y otros mas*) *ténga v. m^{d.}*, Good morrow, Sir; *Buenas nóches ténga v. m^{d.}*, Good Night to you, Sir; it is used in Spanish *buen día tenga v. m^{d.}*, but not *Buena nóche* in singular.

Béso las Mános de v. m^{d.}, I kiss your Hands; answer, *Y yo las* (sup. *Mános*) *de v. m^{d.}*

For *v. m^{d.} me ága* (or *ágame*) *la Mercéd*, or *favór de ésto*, they say generally *v. m^{d.} me la* (viz. *Mercéd*) *ága de ésto*, do me the Favour of this, or grant me the favour, &c.

We use to say *Buen día*, or *buenos días dé Dios a v. m^{d.}*, God give you a good Day, for good morrow, Sir, &c. as for the other ranks of persons, we say, to the King, *Vuestra Magestád*, Your Majesty; to the Pope, *Santidád*, *Beautitúd*, *Sanctíssimo Pádre*, *Beatíssimo Pádre*, *Holínels*, Most Holy Father (Titles which should be given only to God); to a Prince

V. Alteza, your Highness; to a Cardinal, *V. Eminencia*, your Eminency; to the Grandees, Dukes, Generals, and Ambassadors *V. Excelencia*, your Excellency; to a Bishop, *Vuestra Señoría ilustrísima*, your illustrious Lordship; to Earls, Marquesses, *Vuestra Señoría*. Note, That some use *Vués*tra, and *Vués*sa promiscuously; but I am of opinion that *Vués*sa is a word out of use, &c.

I observed, that some of the Nobility in Spain, when they speak to any Gentleman inferior in rank, never did make use of *Bé*so las Manos de v. m^d, but *Servidor* de v. m^d; and so they say v. m^d sea bien venido, or bien venido sea el Señor Fulano; buenos días dé Dios al Sr. Fulano, &c. And when an inferior spoke to them he would be better off, if he said *Bé*so las Manos de V. Señoría, than saying *Servidór* de V. Señoría; but at present this difference is almost left off, &c.

The preceding Spanish Words are abbreviated thus in writing: *V. Mg*d; *V. Sant*d, or *Beat*d, SS. or *BB. Pádre*; *V. Alt*; *V. Em*; *V. Exc*; *V. S. il*; *V. S.*; *V. M^d*.

Of the Auxiliar Verbs.

AUXILIAR Verbs take their etymology of the Latin *Auxilium*, *Auxílio*, help, so called, because they are wanted, and help to the conjugation of other Verbs. There are auxiliar or helping Verbs in all the living languages, and in the Spanish there are more than in any other, as *podér*, *tenér*, *solér*, *ir*, &c. without which we can't rightly explain the meaning of some tenses; but there are three Principal, viz. *havér* (instead of whom we do likewise use the Verb *tenér*) to have, *estár* and *ser*, to be; the two first serve for the active, neuter, and reciprocal Verbs; *havér* serves also for the passive Verbs in their compound

84 *The RUDIMENTS of*
 tenses, as in the Preterperfect, Pluperfect, &c. and
 the Verb *ser* serves for the passive Verbs. And as
 the other Verbs can't be conjugated without these,
 we think it proper to begin by

The Conjugation of the Auxiliary Verb Haver, To have.

The Indicative Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Yo hé,	<i>I have</i>	} {	Nosotros hémos, } <i>We have</i>
Tu has,	<i>Thou hast</i>		or havémos, } <i>Ye have</i>
El or aquél há	<i>He hath</i>		Vosotros havéis, } <i>They have</i>
			Ellos or aquéllos } <i>They have</i>
			han,

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Havía,	<i>I had</i>	} {	Havíamos } <i>We had</i>
Havías	<i>Thou badst</i>		Haviades, or haviais } <i>Ye had</i>
Havía,	<i>He had</i>		Havian } <i>They had</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>		<i>Plur.</i>	
Húve	<i>I have had</i>	} {	Huvimos, } <i>We have had</i>
Huviste	<i>Thou hast had</i>		Huvistes, } <i>Ye have had</i>
Húvo	<i>He hath had</i>		Huviéron, } <i>They have had</i>

Second Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo hé	}	Havido,	{	<i>I have had</i>
		Tu has				<i>Thou hast had</i>
		El há				<i>He hath had</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Nosotros hémos				<i>We have had</i>
		Vosotros havéis				<i>Ye have had</i>
		Ellos han				<i>They have had</i>

The third Preterperfect thus :

Yo húve havid

I

Is in no use in Spanish.

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Havido,	{	I had had
		Havías				Thou hadst had
Plur.	{	Havía				He had had
		Havíamos				We had had
		Havíadeis				Ye had had
		Havían				They had had

First Future.

Sing.	{	Havré,	}	I shall or will have
		Havrás,		You shall or will have
Plur.	{	Havrá,		He shall or will have
		Havrémós		We shall or will have
		Havréis		Ye shall or will have
		Havrán		They shall or will have.

The other Futures are

Second,	Yo hé de haver	I must have.
Third,	Havré de haver	I shall be obliged to have
Fourth,	Havía de haver	I was to have

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Háyas tu	}	Have thou
		Háya aquél, or el		Have he, or let him have
Plur.	{	Hayámos nosótro,		Have we, or let us have
		Havéd vosótro,		Have ye, or let ye have
		Háyan aquéllos or ellos		Have they, or let them have.

The Spaniards use, instead of this Imperative Mood, the Word *Ten*, of *Tengo*, I have or hold; which *Tengo* is often used for this Verb *He*.

This Imperative Mood *Ten*, of *Tengo*, so commonly used for *áyas*, *ayá*, is thus declined :

Sing.	{	Ten tu,	}	Have, or hold thou
		Tenga el		Let him have or hold
Plur.	{	Tengámos nosótro		Let us have or hold
		Tenéd vosótro		Do ye have or hold
		Tengan ellos,		Let them have or hold.

See this Verb among the Irregulars.

86 *The RUDIMENTS of*

Note, The Optative Mood is us'd with these signs, as I have said, *Oxalá*, or *O si*, or *Plugiéffe a Dios*, Would to God, I pray God, or God grant. The Potential like the *Latin*, with these signs, *may*, *can*, *might*, *could*, *should*, or *ought*; both declined like the Subjunctive following.

Subjunctive Mood. Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya,	}	<i>If, or when I may have, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Háyas		
<i>como</i>	{	Háya		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos	}	<i>If, or when We may have, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Hayáis		
<i>como</i>	{	Háyan		

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéra, huviéffe, havría	}	<i>If, or when I might, could, or should have.</i>
<i>como</i>		Huviéras, huviéffes, havrías		
<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, huviéffe, havría		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, huviéffemos, havriámos	}	
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Huviéradeis, huviéffedeis, havriadeis		
<i>como</i>	{	Huviéran, huviéffen, havrían.		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya,	{	Havído	}	<i>If, or when I had, or when I have had.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Háyas				
<i>como</i>		Háya				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos	{	Havído	}	<i>If, or when We had, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Hayáis				
<i>como</i>	{	Háyan				

Two Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huviéra, or huviéffe	{	Havído	}	<i>If, or when I had had, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>		Huviéras, or huviéffes				
<i>como</i>		Huviéra, or huviéffe				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéramos, or huviéffemos	{	Havído	}	<i>If, or when We had had, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Haviéradeis, or huviéffedeis				
<i>como</i>	{	Huviéran, or huviéffen				

First

First Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére	}	<i>If, or when I shall have hereafter, &c.</i>
Si, or		Huviéres		
como		Huviére		
Plur.	{	Huviéremos		
Si, or		Huviéredeis		
como		Huviéren		

Second Future.

Huviére	}	Havido	}	<i>If, or when I shall have had, &c.</i>
Huviéres				
Huviére				
Huviéremos				
Huviéreis				
Huviéren				

or otherwise *havré havido.*

Infinitive Mood.

Havér	<i>To have.</i>
Haver havido	<i>To have had.</i>
Haver de haver	<i>To have hereafter.</i>
Gerund. Haviendo,	<i>Having.</i>

Participles.

Pres. El que ha	<i>The person who has</i>
Pas. Havido	<i>Had</i>
Supine à havér	<i>To have, in having, &c.</i>

Note, That the Spanish Academy hath changed *havér* *into* *habér* ; but as this innovation is against the practice both of ancient and modern Authors, I thought proper to conjugate and retain *havér*.

The other Auxiliary Verbs *Estár, and Ser, To be.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo estói	Yo sói	}	<i>I am</i>
		Tu estás	Tu eres		<i>Thou art</i>
		El está	El es		<i>He is</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros estamos	Nosotros somos	}	<i>We are</i>
		Vosotros estáis	Vosotros sois		<i>Ye are</i>
		Ellos están	Ellos son		<i>They are</i>

G 4

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo <i>estába</i>	Yo <i>éra</i>	{	<i>I was</i>
		Tu <i>estábas</i>	Tu <i>éras</i>		<i>Thou wast</i>
		El <i>estába</i>	El <i>éra</i>		<i>He was</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros <i>estábamos</i>	Nosotros <i>éramos</i>	{	<i>We were</i>
		Vosotros <i>estábais or</i> <i>estábadeis</i>	Vosotros <i>erais, or</i> <i>éradeis</i>		<i>Ye were</i>
		Ellos <i>estában</i>	Ellos <i>éran</i>		<i>They were</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>Estúve</i>	<i>Fuí</i>	{	<i>I have been</i>
		<i>Estuviste</i>	<i>Fuiste</i>		<i>Thou hast been</i>
		<i>Estuvo</i>	<i>Fué</i>		<i>He hath been</i>
Plur.	{	<i>Estuvimos</i>	<i>Fuimos</i>	{	<i>We have been</i>
		<i>Estuvisteis</i>	<i>Fuisteis</i>		<i>Ye have been</i>
		<i>Estuvieron</i>	<i>Fuéron</i>		<i>They have been</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> <i>húve</i> <i>estado</i>	He, <i>or</i> <i>húve</i> <i>sido</i>	{	<i>I have been, &c.</i>
		Has, <i>or</i> <i>huviste</i> <i>estado</i>	Has, <i>or</i> <i>huviste</i> <i>sido</i>		
		Ha, <i>or</i> <i>húvo</i> <i>estado</i>	Ha, <i>or</i> <i>húvo</i> <i>sido</i>		
Plur.	{	Havemos, <i>or</i> <i>huvimos estado</i>	Havemos, <i>or</i> <i>huvimos sido</i>	{	<i>I have been, &c.</i>
		Havéis, <i>or</i> <i>huvisteis estado</i>	Havéis, <i>or</i> <i>huvisteis sido</i>		
		Han, <i>or</i> <i>huvieron estado</i>	Han, <i>or</i> <i>huvieron sido</i>		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	<i>Havía estado</i>	<i>Havía sido</i>	{	<i>I had been, &c.</i>
		<i>Havías estado</i>	<i>Havías sido</i>		
		<i>Havía estado</i>	<i>Havía sido</i>		
Plur.	{	<i>Havíamos estado</i>	<i>Havíamos sido</i>	{	<i>I had been, &c.</i>
		<i>Havíadeis, or havíais</i> <i>estado</i>	<i>Havíais, or havíadeis</i> <i>sido</i>		
		<i>Havían estado</i>	<i>Havían sido</i>		

First

First Future.

Sing.	{	Estaré	Seré	}	<i>I shall, or will be, &c.</i>
		Estarás	Serás		
		Estará	Será		
Plur.	{	Estarémos	Serémos	}	
		Estaréis	Seréis		
		Estarán	Serán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de estar	He de ser	}	<i>I must be, &c.</i>
		Has de estar	Has de ser		
		Ha de estar	Ha de ser		
Plur.	{	Hémos de estar	Hémos de ser	}	
		Havéis de estar	Havéis de ser		
		Han de estar	Han de ser		

Third Future.

Havré de estar, or fér *I shall be obliged to be*

Fourth Future.

Havía de estar, or fér *I had to be, or I was to be.*

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Está tu	Se tu	}	<i>Be thou</i>
		Esté el	Séa el		<i>Be he</i>
Plur.	{	Estémos nosótro	Seámos nosótro	}	<i>Let us be</i>
		Estád vosótro	Sed vosótro		<i>Be ye</i>
		Estén ellos	Séan ellos		<i>Let them be.</i>

Subjunctive

The **RUDIMENTS** *of*

Subjunctive Mood:

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Esté	Séa	} <i>If, or when I am, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Estés	Séas	
<i>como</i>	{	Esté	Séa	
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Estémos	Seámos	
<i>Si, or</i>	{	Estéis	Seáis	
<i>como</i>	{	Estén	Séan	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing. Si, or como	{	Estuviéra estuviése, or	Fuéra, fuése, sería	}	If, or when I was, &c.
		estaría			
		Estuviéras estuviésses, or	Fuéras, fuésses, serías		
Plur. Si, or como	{	estarias		}	
		Estuviéra estuviése, or	Fuéra, fuése, sería		
		estaría			
		Estuviéramos estuviésses-	Fuéramos, fuéssesmos,		
		mos, or estaríamos	seríamos		
	{	Estuviéradéis,	Fuéradéis, fuéssedeis,	}	
		estuviéssedeis,	seríadeis		
		or estaríadeis			
	{	Estuviéran estuviéssen,	Fuéran, fuéssen, se-	}	
		or estarían	rían		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Haya estado	Haya sido	} <i>If, or when I have been, &c</i>
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Hayas estado	Hayas sido	
<i>como</i>	{ Haya estado	Haya sido	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos estado	Hayamos sido	
<i>Si, or</i>	{ Hayáis estado	Hayáis sido	
<i>como</i>	{ Hayan estado	Hayán sido	

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

<i>Sing.</i> { Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe <i>Si, or</i> { Huviéras, <i>or</i> huviéſſes <i>como</i> { Huviéra, <i>or</i> huviéſſe <i>Plur.</i> { Huviéramos, <i>or</i> huviéſſemos <i>Si, or</i> { Huviéradeis, <i>or</i> huviéſſedeis <i>como</i> { Huvierán, <i>or</i> huviéſſen	} <i>éſtádo</i>	{ <i>sído</i>	<i>If, or when I had been, &c.</i>
--	-----------------	---------------	---

First

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Estuviére	Fuére	} <i>If I shall, or should be, or If, or when I had been, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Estuviéres	Fuéres	
	{ Estuviére	Fuére	
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Estuviéremos	Fuéremos	
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Estuviéredes	Fuéredes	
	{ Estuviéren	Fuéren	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére	} <i>Estádo</i>	} <i>Sído</i>	} <i>When I shall, or should have been, &c.</i>
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Huviéres			
	{ Huviére			
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos			
<i>Si, or como</i>	{ Huviéredes			
	{ Huviéren			
<i>or quando havré estádo, or sído.</i>				

Infinitive Mood.

<i>Pres.</i>	Estár,	Sér	} <i>To be.</i>
<i>Pret. perf.</i>	Havér estádo,	Havér fido,	
<i>Future</i>	Havér de estár,	Havér de ser,	
<i>Gerund.</i>	Estando, siendo		
			<i>To have been.</i>
			<i>To be hereafter.</i>
			<i>Being.</i>

Participles.

<i>Pres.</i>	Elque esta, or es,	<i>The Person who is.</i>
<i>Paf.</i>	Estádo, Sído,	<i>Been.</i>
<i>Sup.</i>	à estár, à ser	<i>To be in being.</i>

The Optative is the same as the Subjunctive.

BOTH these Verbs *Estár* and *Sér* signify *To be*, the *English* having no word to distinguish between them, and yet they cannot be indifferently used, there being a considerable difference between them, which is, that *Ser* signifies the proper and inseparable Essence of a Thing, denoting the Quality, or Quantity, as *Ser buéno*, to be good; *Ser málo*, to be wicked; *Ser gránde*, to be big; *Ser pequéño*, to be little, &c. But *Estár* denotes Place, or some adjunct

adjunct Quality, as *Estár en cása*, to be at home ; *Estár buéno*, to be well ; *Estár málo*, or *enférmo*, to be sick. For in enquiring after a Man's Health, the Spaniards make use of the word *Estár*, as *como estáis* ? How do you ? The Answer is, *Estói buéno*, or *málo*. I am well or ill. Though sometimes the Answer is without the Verb, saying only, *buéno*, or *málo*, well or sick ; or placing the Verb after the Adjective, as *buéno estói*, I am well. Where it is to be observed that *buéno* and *málo*, do not signify good and bad, as they do upon other occasions, but well or ill. In short, *estár*, is us'd to express any thing that concerns the affections, or passions of the Soul, as *estói triste*, I am melancholy, *estói alegre*, I am merry. So that as has been said *ser* must be used to denote the inseparable Essence, or Being, whereas *estár* implies Accidents, as *El vestido es buéno*, *peró está mal bécho*, the Cloaths are good, but they are ill made ; where we see the essential Being of the Thing itself under the word *ser*, or *es*, and the accidental fault of its being ill made under the word *estár*. *Ser* likewise is used to express the condition, or temper of a Man in its nature, as *éste hombre es colérico de condicion*, this Man is of a colerick disposition ; and *estar* express the fit or action, as *éste hombre está colérico*, this Man is actually angry, or is in a colerick fit.

Example of the first Conjugation of Verbs regular in ar, as Revelár, to reveal, or discover.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo revélo	<i>I reveal.</i>
		Tu revélas	<i>Thou, or you reveal.</i>
		El revéla	<i>He reveals.</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros revelámos	<i>We reveal.</i>
		Vos reveláis	<i>Ye reveal.</i>
		Ellos revelan	<i>They reveal.</i>

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo revelába		<i>I did reveal, or I was revealing.</i>
		Tu revelábas		<i>You did reveal.</i>
		El revelába		<i>He did reveal.</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros revelábamos		<i>We did reveal.</i>
		Vosotros revelábadeis, or revelábais		<i>Ye did reveal.</i>
		Ellos revelában		<i>They did reveal.</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Revelé		<i>I revealed.</i>
		Reveláste		<i>You revealed.</i>
		Reveló		<i>He revealed.</i>
Plur.	{	Revelámos		<i>We revealed.</i>
		Revelásteis		<i>Ye revealed.</i>
		Reveláron		<i>They revealed.</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	} Reveládo, {	<i>I have revealed</i>
		Has, or huviste		<i>Thou hast revealed</i>
		Ha, or húvo		<i>He hath revealed</i>
Plur.	{	Havémos, or huvimos		<i>We have revealed</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis		<i>Ye have revealed</i>
		Han, or huvieron		<i>They have revealed.</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Reveládo,	{	<i>I had revealed</i>
		Havías				<i>Thou hadst revealed</i>
		Havía				<i>He had revealed</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos			{	<i>We had revealed</i>
		Havíadeis				<i>Ye had revealed</i>
		Havían				<i>They had revealed.</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Revelaré,		<i>I shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelarás,		<i>You shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelará,		<i>He shall or will reveal</i>
Plur.	{	Revelaremos,		<i>We shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelaréis,		<i>Ye shall or will reveal</i>
		Revelarán,		<i>They shall or will reveal.</i>

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de revelár,		
		Has de revelár,		
		Ha de revelár,		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de re-		<i>I am to or must reveal, &c.</i>
		velár,		
		Havéis de revelár,		
		Han de revelár,		

Third Future.

Sing.	{	Havré		
		Havrás		
		Havrá		
Plur.	{	Havremos		<i>I shall be obliged to reveal, &c.</i>
		Havréis		
		Havrán		
		de Revelár		
		de Revelár		

Fourth Future.

Sing.	{	Havía		
		Havías		
		Havía		
Plur.	{	Havíamos		<i>I had, or I was to reveal, &c.</i>
		Haviádeis		
		Havían		
		de Revelár		
		de Revelár		

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Revéla tu,		<i>Do you reveal, or reveal thou</i>
		Revéle el,		<i>Let him reveal.</i>

Plur.

Plur.	{	Revelémos nosótro	Let us reveal.
		Revelád vosótro	Do ye reveal, or let ye reveal.
		Revélen éll	Let them reveal.

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with their Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

If, When, would God, God Grant.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo revéle	} When, or God grant, &c. I reveal, &c.
		Tu revéles	
		El revéle	
Plur.	{	Nosótro	
		Vosótro	
		Ellos revélen,	

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Revelára, reveláffe, revelaría	} When, or would to God I did reveal, &c.
		Reveláras, reveláffes, revelarías	
		Revelára, reveláffe, revelaría	
Plur.	{	Reveláramos, reveláffemos, revelaríamos	
		Reveláradeis, reveláffedeis, revelaríadeis	
		Reveláran, reveláffen, revelarían.	

Three Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Haya,	} Reveládo, {	} When, or would to God, &c. I have reveal, &c.
		Hayas,		
		Haya,		
Plur.	{	Hayámos		
		Hayáis		
		Hayan		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Reveládo,	{	When or would
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				to God, &c.
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}		{	I had reveal-
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				ed, &c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Reveláre,	}		{	When or would to God, &c.
		Reveláres,				I ſhall or will reveal, &c.
Plur.	{	Reveláre,	}		{	
		Reveláremos				
		Reveláredeis				
		Reveláren,				

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére	}	Reveládo,	{	When or would to
		Huviéres				God, &c. I ſhall
Plur.	{	Huviére	}		{	or will have re-
		Huviéremos				vealed, &c.
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				
or otherwiſe havré reveládo.						

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Revelár,

To reveal.

Preterperfect.

Havér reveládo

To have revealed.

Future.

Havér, or eſperár de revelár

To reveal hereafter.

Gerund.

Gerund.

Revelando,

Revealing.

Supine of the Active Signification,

A revelár,

To be about to reveal.

Supine of the Passive Signification,

A ser reveládo,

To be revealed.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice,

Revelante, or el que revéla,

Revealing.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Reveládo,

Revealed.

All regular Verbs that have their Infinitive in *ar*, are conjugated in all Points like this. The Irregular shall be treated of, after the following List of regular Verbs in *ar*, above spoken of.

Regular Verbs in ar.

L Amár, *to call.*
 Ayunár, *to fast.*
 Comprár, *to buy.*
 Recompensár, *to requite.*
 Apartár, *to set aside.*
 Separár, *to separate.*
 Apelár, *to appeal.*
 Acomodár, *to adjust.*
 Peleár, *to fight.*
 Cantár, *to sing.*
 Llorár, *to weep.*

Aprovechár, *to profit.*
 Cenár, *to sup.*
 Hallár, *to find.*
 Topár, *to find.*
 Ganár, *to gain.*
 Contestár, *to contest.*
 Despojar, *to strip.*
 Arrastrár, *to drag.*
 Fiár, *to trust.*
 Pagár, *to pay.*
 Saqueár, *to plunder.*

H

Amenazár,

Amenazár, *to threaten.*Injuriár, *to revile.*Afrentár, *to affront.*Aventurár, *to venture.*Matár, *to kill.*Curár, *to cure, or heal.*Sanár, *to heal, or recover health.*Amedrantár, *to put into fear.*Espantár, *to frighten.*Manchár, *to spot, or stain.*Alzár, *to take up.*Levantár, *to raise.*Sudár, *to sweat.*Remediár, *to remedy.*Cortár, *to cut.*Atár, *to tie.*Azotár, *to whip.*Estimár, *to esteem.*Borrár, *to blot out.*Lavár, *to wash.*Nadár, *to swim.*Hurtár, *to steal.*Robár, *to rob, to steal.*Besár, *to kiss.*Cabár, *to dig.*Cazár, *to hunt.*Hechár vino, o agua, *to pour out wine, or water.*Hechár de beber, *to fill out drink.*Hechár de cása, *to turn out of doors.*Hechár una ayúda, *to give a chyster.*Despavilár la véla, *to snuff the candle.*Despavilár una cosa, *to make a thing vanish.*Despavilár los ojos, *to awake from sleep.*Alumbrár, *to light.*Tomár, *to take.*Quitár, *to remove, or to take*Alabár, *to praise. (away.)*Alquilár, *to hire.*Perdonár, *to pardon.*Caminár, *to travel.*Reculár, *to draw back.*Adelantár, *to forward.*Rehusár, *to refuse.*Mandár, *to command.*Disimulár, *to dissemble.*Engañár, *to deceive*Defengañár, *to undeceive.*Bailár, *to dance.*Danzár, *to dance.*Domár, *to tame.*Lisongeár, *to flatter.*Martyrizár, *to torment.*Encantár, *to enchant.*Desnudár, *to strip.*Reposár, *to repose.*Cansár, *to tire.*Animár, *to encourage.*Jurár, *to swear.*Rezar, *to pray.*Esternudár, *to sneeze.*Callár, *to be silent.*Passeár, *to walk.*Alejár, *to set at a distance.*Condenár, *to condemn.*Dexár, *to leave*Olvidár, *to forget.*Porfiár, *to contend.*Gastár, *to spend.*Acusár, *to accuse.*Aparejár, *to make ready.*Despreciár, *to despise.*Menospreciár, *to undervalue.*Maltratár, *to misuse.*Empeñar, *to engage.*Acabár, *to finish.*Amparár, *to protect.*Desamparár, *to forsake.*Mirár, *to look.*Declarár, *to declare.*Procurár, *to procure.*Entrár, *to come in.*Criár, *to breed.*Embiár, *to send.*Apeár, *to alight.*Retirár, *to retire.*Abordár, *to come to shore.*Arrebatár, *to snatch.*Arrancár, *to tear up.*Desarraigar, *to root up.*Amansár, *to tame.*Presentár, *to present.*

Representár,

Representár, *to represent.*
 Desafiár, *to challenge.*
 Ayudár, *to help.*
 Disfamár, *to defame.*
 Honrár, *to honour.*
 Tapár, *to cover.*
 Sitiár, *to besiege.*
 Enojár, *to anger.*
 Usár, *to use.*
 Casár, *to marry.*
 Amár, *to love.*

Conformár, *to conform.*
 Visítár, *to visit.*
 Confrontár, *to confront.*
 Comparár, *to compare.*
 Adorár, *to adore.*
 Tartamudeár, *to stammer.*
 Galanteár, *to court.*
 Escaramuzár, *to skirmish.*
 Disparár, *to discharge.*
 Ensanchár, *to widen.*
 Bambaleár, *to totter.*

It would be endless to pretend to mention all the Verbs of this sort, and therefore these may suffice ; but we may now proceed to the irregular Verbs of this Conjugation, which are many, and must be particularly taken notice of.

Here follow the irregular Verbs, which being under no certain Rule, must all be particularly conjugated.

The first Conjugation of Verbs irregular in ar.

Dar, *To give.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo dói	<i>I give</i>
		Tu dás	<i>You give</i>
		El da	<i>He gives</i>
Plur.	{	Nosótroš damos	<i>We give</i>
		Vosótroš dáis	<i>Ye give</i>
		Ellos dan	<i>They give.</i>

100 The RUDIMENTS of

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dába		<i>I did give, or I was giving</i>
		Dábas		<i>You did give</i>
		Dába		<i>He did give</i>
Plur.	{	Dábamos		<i>We did give</i>
		Dábadeis, or dábais		<i>Ye did give</i>
		Dában		<i>They did give</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Di		<i>I gave</i>
		Diste		<i>You gave</i>
		Dió		<i>He gave</i>
Plur.	{	Dímos		<i>We gave</i>
		Disteis		<i>Ye gave</i>
		Diéron		<i>They gave</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Yo he, or hube dado		<i>I have given</i>
		Tu has, or huviste dado		<i>You have given</i>
		El ha, or hubo dado		<i>He has given</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, or huvimos dado		<i>We have given</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis dado		<i>Ye have given</i>
		Han, or huvieron dado		<i>They have given.</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Dádo,	{	<i>I had given, &c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Daré,	}	<i>I shall, or will give, &c.</i>
		Darás,		
		Dará,		
Plur.	{	Darémos,		
		Daréis,		
		Darán.		

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de dár	}	<i>I am to, or must give, &c.</i>
		Has de dár		
		Ha de dár		
Plur.	{	Havémos de dár		
		Havéis de dár		
		Han de dár		

Third Future.

Sing.	{	Havré	}	De dár, {	<i>I shall be obliged to give, &c.</i>
		Havrás			
		Havrá			
Plur.	{	Havrémos			
		Havréis			
		Havrán			

Fourth Future, *aliàs* a Tense of Circumlocution.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	De dár, {	<i>I had to give, or I was to give, &c.</i>
		Havías			
		Havía			
Plur.	{	Havíamos			
		Haviádeis			
		Havian			

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Da tu,	{	<i>Give thou</i>
		De el,		<i>Let him give</i>
Plur.	{	Démos nosótro,	{	<i>Let us give</i>
		Dád vosótro,		<i>Give ye</i>
		Den ellos,		<i>Let them give.</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, God grant, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo de, Tu des, El de, Demos,	}	<i>When or God grant I do give, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	Déis, Dén,		

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Diéra, diéssé, daría Diéras, diésses, darías Diéra, diéssé, daría Diéramos, diéssémos, daríamos	}	<i>When, or God grant I did give, or when I might, could, or should give.</i>
Plur.	{	Diéradeis, or diérais, daríadeis, or daríais, diéssedeis, or diésséis Diéran, diéssen, darían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya, Hayas, Háya, Hayámos	}	Dádo,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &c. I had given, or when I have given, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	Hayáis Hayan				

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéssé Huviéramos, or huviéssémos	}	Dádo,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had given, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen				

First

First Future.

Sing.	{	Diére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall give, &c.</i>
		Diéres		
		Diére		
Plur.	{	Diéremos		
		Diéredeis		
		Diéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Dádo, { <i>When, or God grant I shall or will give, &c.</i>
		Huviéres		
		Huviére		
Plur.	{	Huviéremos		
		Huviéredes		
		Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dar To give

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dádo To have given

Future.

Havér de dár To give hereafter

Gerund.

Dádo Giving

Participle Passive.

Dádo Given

104 *The RUDIMENTS of*

Participle of the Present Tense, Active Voice,

Dante, *or* el que da Giving

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, *or* espera de dar To give hereafter

First Supine.

à Dár To be about to give

Second Supine.

A ser Dado To be given

The next Irregular Verb of this Conjugation is,

Almorzár, *To breakfast.*

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing.	{	Almuérzo	<i>I breakfast</i>
		Almuérzas	<i>You breakfast</i>
		Almuérza	<i>He breakfasts</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzamos	<i>We breakfast</i>
		Almorzáis	<i>Ye breakfast</i>
		Almuérzan	<i>They breakfast</i>

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Almorzába	<i>I did breakfast, or I was breakfasting</i>
		Almorzábas	<i>You did breakfast</i>
		Almorzába	<i>He did breakfast</i>

Plur.

Plur.	{	Almorzábamos	<i>We did breakfast</i>
		Almorzábais, or	<i>Ye did breakfast</i>
		Almorzábadeis	
		Almorzában	<i>They did breakfast</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Almorzé	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzaste	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzó	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzámos	<i>We have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzásteis	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
		Almorzáron	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube almorzado	<i>I have breakfasted</i>
		Has, or huvieste almorzado	<i>You have breakfasted</i>
		Ha, or hubo almorzado	<i>He has breakfasted</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, havémos, or huvimos almorzado	<i>We have breakfasted</i>
		Havéis, or huvisteis almorzado	<i>Ye have breakfasted</i>
		Han, or huvieron almorzado	<i>They have breakfasted</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía almorzado	<i>I had breakfasted</i>
		Havías almorzado	<i>You had breakfasted</i>
		Havía almorzado	<i>He had breakfasted</i>
Plur.	{	Haviámos almorzado	<i>We had breakfasted</i>
		Haviadéis almorzado	<i>Ye had breakfasted</i>
		Havían almorzado	<i>They had breakfasted</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Almorzaré	} <i>I will, or shall breakfast,</i> <i>&c.</i>
		Almorzarás	
		Almorzará	
Plur.	{	Almorzarémos	
		Almorzaréis	
		Almorzarán	

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, <i>or</i> <i>téngo</i> de almorzár	}	<i>I am to, or must breakfast, &c.</i>
		Has de almorzár		
		Ha de almorzár		
Plur.	{	Hémos, <i>or</i> <i>havémos</i> de almorzár	}	
		Havéis de almorzár		
		Han de almorzár		

Havré de almorzár
Havía de almorzár

I shall be obliged to breakfast
I was to breakfast.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Almuérza	<i>Do you breakfast</i>
		Almuérze	<i>Let him breakfast</i>
Plur.	{	Almorzémos	<i>Let us breakfast</i>
		Almorzád	<i>Do ye breakfast</i>
		Almuérzen	<i>Let them breakfast</i>

The Optative and Subjunctive Moods, with the Signs Si, Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

If, When, would God, God grant.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo almuérze	}	<i>If, When, would to God I breakfast, &c.</i>
		Tu almuérzes		
		El almuérze		
Plur.	{	Almorzémos		
		Almorzéis		
		Almuérzen		

Three

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría	}	<i>If, when, would to God I did breakfast, &c.</i>
		Almorzáras, almorzásses, almorzarías		
		Almorzára, almorzásse, almorzaría		
Plur.	{	Almorzáramos, almorzássemos, almorzariámos		
		Almorzáradeis, almorzássedeis, almorzariadeis		
		Almorzáran, almorzássen, almorzarían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Almorzádo,	{	<i>If, when, would to God I have breakfasted, &c.</i>
		Háyas				
		Háya				
Plur.		Hayámos				
		Hayáis				
		Háyan				

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéssé	}	Almorzádo,	{	<i>If, when, would to God I had break- fasted, &c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviésses				
Huviéra, or huviéssé						
Huviéramos, or huviéssemos						
Plur.		{				
	Huviéran, or huviéssen					

First Future.

Sing.	{	Almorzáre	}	<i>If, when, would to God I shall breakfast, &c.</i>
		Almorzáres		
		Almorzáre		
Plur.	{	Almorzáremos		
		Almorzáredeis		
		Almorzáren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Almorzádo,	{	<i>If, when, God grant I shall or will have break- fasted, &c.</i>
		Huviéres				
Huviére						
Huviéremos						
Plur.		{				
	Huviéren					

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Almorzar

To breakfast

Preterperfect.

Havér almorzado

To have breakfasted.

Future.

Havér, or esperar de almorzar,

To be to breakfast hereafter

Gerund.

Almorzando

breakfasting

First Supine.

à Almorzar

To be about breakfasting

Second Supine.

à ser almorzado

Having breakfasted

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que almuérza

Breakfasting

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Almorzado

Breakfasted, &c.

The following Irregular Verbs of the first Conjugation, terminating in *ar*, are all conjugated after the same manner as *Almorzar*, changing the Penultima *o* into *ue* in the three Persons Singular, and the third of the Plural in all the Present Tenses.

Infinitive.	Present.	Preterperfect.
Contár, to count	Cuento	Conté
Desollár, to flea	Desuéllo	Desollé
Resollár, to breathe	Resuéllo	Resollé
Acordár, to remember	Acuerdo	Acordé
Mostrár, to show	Muestro	Mostré
Afollár, to destroy	Afluélo	Afollé
Volár, to fly	Uélo	Volé
Apostár, to wager	Apuésto	Aposté
Hollár, to trample on	Huéllo	Hollé
Soltár, to let loose	Suélto	Solté
Forzár, to force	Fuérzo	Forcé
Provár, to try, or prove	Pruévo	Prové
Sonár, to found	Suéno	Soné
Atronár, to thunder	Atruéno	Atroné
Degollár, to behead	Deguéllo	Degollé
Consolár, to comfort	Consuélo	Consolé
Encontrár, to meet	Encuéntró	Encontré.

But *jugár* to play, changes *u* into *ue*.

All the Verbs ending in *gar* have the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative in *gue*; as likewise the third of the singular, the first and last of the plural of the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. pe. Imperative, Pres. Optat.

Colgar, to hang	Cuélgo	Colgué	Cuélgue aquél	que yo Cuélgue
Rogár, to intreat	Ruégo	Rogué	Ruégue el	que Ruegue
Pagár, to pay	Págo	Pagué	Págue el	que yo Págue
Holgár, to be idle	Huélgo	Holgué	Huélgue el	que yo Huélgue
Regár, to water	Riégo	Régué	Riégue el	que yo Riégue &c.

110 The RUDIMENTS of

The Verbs in *cár* change *car* in *que* in the first person of the preterperfect of the indicative; the third singular, the first and last of the plural in the imperative, and in all the persons of the present tense of the optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Pret. p. Imperative, Pres. Optative,

Tocár, <i>to touch,</i> <i>to feel.</i>	tóco	toqué	tóqué el	que yo toqué
Trocár, <i>to change</i>	truéco	troqu	truéque el	que yo truéque, &c.

The following Verbs change the penultima *e* into *ie* in all the persons singular, and the third of the plural of the present tense of the indicative, imperative, and optative, as

Infinit. Pres. Indic. Imperative, Present Optative.

Apretár, <i>to squeeze</i>	apriéto	apriéta tu	que yo apriéte
Emmendar, <i>to mind</i>	emmiéndo	emmiénda tu	que yo emmiénde
Empezár, <i>to begin</i>	empiézo	empiéza tu	que yo empiéce
Cerrár <i>to shut</i>	Ciérro	Cierra tu	que yo ciérre
Enterrár, <i>to bury</i>	entiérro	entierra tu	que yo entiérre
Desterrár, <i>to banish</i>	destiérro	destierra tu	que yo destiérre
Confessar, <i>to confess</i>	confiéssó	confiéssa tu	que yo confiésse

And several other more, whose irregularity is only in the following Tenses, as

Tentár, *to feel.*

Present Indicative.

Sing. {	Tiénto, Tiéntas Tiénta	I feel, &c.	Plur. {	Tentámos Tentáis Tiéntan
---------	------------------------------	-------------	---------	--------------------------------

Imperative.

Imperative.

Sing.	{	Tienta tu,	Feel thou		Plur.	{	Tentemos nosotros
		Tiente el					Tentad vosotros Tienten aquellos

Present Optative.

Sing.	{	que Yotiente, <i>that I may</i>	(feel		Plur.	{	Tentemos
		Tientes					Tentéis
		Tiente					Tienten

otherwise they are conjugated as Revelár.

The Verb *Andár*, to go, or to go about, has the preterperfect of the indicative irregular; and generally when such tense is irregular, the first and the second Preterimperfects, and the first Future of the Optative are irregular, as

Sing.	Andúve	<i>I have gone</i>	Si, Anduviéra	Anduviésse	<i>If I could go</i>	qu. anduviére,	<i>When I shall go</i>
	Anduviste		Anduviéras,	Anduviésseis		Anduviéres	
Plur.	Andúvo		Anduviéra,	Anduviésse		Anduviére	
	Anduvimos		Anduviéramos,	Anduviéssemos		anduviéremos	
	Anduvisteis,		Anduviéradeis,	Anduviéssadeis		anduviéredeis	
	Anduviéron		Anduviéran,	Anduviéssen		anduviéren	

in other Tenses is conjugated as Revelár.

Of the Verbs Passive

Of the First Conjugation:

VERBS Passive are formed in *Spanish* from the Active, by the auxiliary Verb, and the Participle Passive of the Preterperfect Tense, following always the Moods and Tenses of the Verb *Sér*, as

Sér amado,

to be beloved.

Present

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	fóí	}	amádo	{	<i>I am beloved</i>
		éres				<i>Thou art beloved</i>
		es				<i>He is beloved</i>
Plur.	{	somos	}	amádos	{	<i>We are beloved</i>
		fóis				<i>Ye are beloved</i>
		son				<i>They are beloved</i>

Imperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	éra	}	amádo	{	<i>I was beloved</i>
		éras				<i>Thou wast beloved</i>
		era				<i>He was beloved</i>
Plur.	{	éramos	}	amádos	{	<i>We were beloved</i>
		éradeis				<i>Ye were beloved</i>
		éran				<i>They were beloved</i>

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	fuí, or he sido	}	amádo	{	<i>I have been beloved</i>
		fuíste, or has sido				<i>Thou hast been beloved</i>
		fué, or ha sido				<i>He hath been beloved</i>
Plur.	{	fuímos, or hémos sido	}	amádos	{	<i>We have been beloved</i>
		fuišteis, or havéis sido				<i>Ye have been beloved</i>
		fuéron, or han sido				<i>They have been beloved</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía sido	}	amádo	{	<i>I had been beloved</i>
		Havías sido				<i>Thou hadst been beloved</i>
		Havía sido				<i>He had been beloved</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos sido	}	amádos	{	<i>We had been beloved</i>
		Haviádeis sido				<i>Ye had been beloved</i>
		Havían sido				<i>They had been beloved</i>

Future.

Seré amado, &c.

I shall be beloved

And so throughout other Moods and Tenses.

Of the Reciprocal Verbs.

THE reciprocal Verbs are all terminated in *se* in the infinitive Mood, as *Acofárse* to lie down, or to grow near, or to come near; *Levantárse*, to rise up; *Librársese*, to discharge one's self, to make one's self free, &c. and are conjugated thus:

Adelantárse, to go before, to rise up to a Dignity or to Preferment.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Me adelánto	}	<i>I go before, &c.</i>
		Te adelantas		
		Se adelánta		
		Nos adelantamos		
Plur.	{	Vos, or os adelantáis	}	
		Se adelántan		

Imperfect.

Sing.	{	Me adelantaba	}	<i>I did go before, &c.</i>
		Te adelantabas		
		Se adelantaba		
		Nos adelantábamos		
Plur.	{	Vos, or os adelantabades	}	
		Se adelantaban		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Me adelanté	}	<i>I went before.</i>
		Te adelantáste		
		Se adelantó		
		Nos adelantamos		
Plur.	{	Vos, or os adelantásteis	}	
		Se adelantaron		

114 The RUDIMENTS of

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Me he	}	Adelantado	{	<i>I have gone be- fore.</i>
		Te has				
		Se ha				
Plur.	{	Nos hemos	}			
		Vos, <i>or</i> os havéis				
		Se han				

And so in all the Tenses and Moods, but in the Imperative thus :

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Adelántate tu	}	<i>Go thou before, &c.</i>
		Adelántese el		
		Adelantemofnos nosotros		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Adelantados vosotros		
		Adelántense aquellos.		

The Verb *Pesarse*, to be sorry, is conjugated thus :

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Pésame, or à mí mepéa,	}	I am sorry
		Pésate, or à ti te péa,		Thou art sorry
		Pésale, or à el le péa,		He is sorry
Plur.	{	Pésanos, or à nosotros nos péa,	}	We are sorry
		Pésaos, or à vosotros os péa,		Ye are sorry
		Pésales, or à ellos les péa,		They are sorry.

And so throughout all other Tenses ; but in the Imperative Mood thus :

Sing.	{	Pésate,	}	Be thou sorry
		Pésele,		Let him be sorry
Plur.	{	Pésenos,	}	Let us be sorry
		Péseos,		Be ye sorry
		Péseles,		Let them be sorry

Of

Of Verbs Impersonals belonging to the first Conjugation.

THE Spanish Impersonals, like the Latin, want the first and second Persons, and are declined only in the third Person, throughout all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Impersonals some are Active, and some Passive. The Active are conjugated thus :

Nevár

To snow.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Niéva,

It snows.

Imperfect.

Nevaba,

It did snow.

First Preterperfect.

Nevó,

It snowed.

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Há, or hubo nevado,

It hath snowed.

Plusperfect.

Havía nevado,

It had snowed.

I 2

Future

Future.

Nevará,	<i>It will snow.</i>
Que niève,	<i>Let it snow.</i>
Será bueno que niève,	<i>It will be good if that it snow.</i>
Si nevára, nevásse, or nevaría,	<i>If it would snow.</i>
Quando háya nevado,	<i>When it hath snowed.</i>
Si huviéra, or huviéssse nevado,	<i>If it had snowed.</i>
Quando neváre,	<i>When it shall snow.</i>
Nevando,	<i>Snowing.</i>
Los Campos están nevados,	<i>The Fields are cover'd with snow.</i>
Niève, a Noun,	<i>The snow.</i>

In this manner are conjugated the following Verbs :

Atronár, or tronár, *to thunder*
Granizár, or apedreár, *to hail*
Helár, *to freeze*
Relampageár, *to lighten*
Ahumár, *to smoak*
Constár, *to be plain, or clear*
Importár, *to import, to be convenient*

The passive Impersonals are conjugated with the Particle *se* before or after the Verb, as

Se cuenta, *It is said, it is told, it is related, it is reported.*
Se contába, *It was said.*
Se contó
Se ha, or hubo contado } *It hath been said.*
Se havia contado, *It had been said.*
Se contará, *It will be said.*

And so throughout all other Tenses and Moods.

N. B. That all the Verbs regular, or irregular, personals, or impersonals, except the regular passive, may be otherwise conjugated by the auxiliary Verb *Estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb, through all the Tenses and Moods, as

Present.

Present. Indicative.

Sing.	{	ámo, or <i>estoi</i> amando,	<i>I love, or I am loving, &c.</i>
		ámas, or <i>estás</i> amando	
		áma, or <i>está</i> amando	
Plur.	{	amamos, or <i>estamos</i> amando	
		amáis, or <i>estáis</i> amando	
		áman, or <i>están</i> amando	

Imperfect.

Amába, or *estaba* amando,

I was loving

Perfect.

Amé, or *estuve* amando,
 Llámo, or *estói* llamando
 Háblo, or *estói* hablando,

I did love, &c.
I call, or am calling
I speak, or am speaking, &c.

The same is to be observed in all the Conjugations.

It must be observed here, that there are some Nouns called Verbals, for their being derived from the Verbs; in *Latin* those are terminated generally in *bilis*, in *tor*, and *ix*, and in *Spanish* in *ble*, *dor*, and *iz*: as

<i>Latin.</i>		<i>Spanish.</i>	
<i>bilis</i>	} as {	<i>ble</i>	} as {
<i>tor</i>		<i>dor</i>	
<i>ix</i>		<i>iz</i>	
	{ Amabilis		{ Amáble
	{ Amator		{ Amadór
	{ Amatrix		{ Amatriz, or amadóra.

But *note*, That there are some *Spanish* Verbs which are defectives in this particular, as well as some *Latin* Verbs.

Of Verbs Regular of the second Conjugation, in er.

Respondér, *To answer.*

Indicative Mood,

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respondo,	<i>I answer</i>
		Respondes,	<i>You answer</i>
		Responde,	<i>He answers</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondémos,	<i>We answer</i>
		Respondéis	<i>Ye answer</i>
		Responden,	<i>They answer</i>

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respondía,	<i>I did answer, or I was answering.</i>
		Respondías,	<i>You did answer</i>
		Respondía,	<i>He did answer</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondíamos,	<i>We did answer</i>
		Respondíadeis,	<i>Ye did answer</i>
		Respondían,	<i>They did answer</i>

First Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respondí,	<i>I answered</i>
		Respondiste,	<i>You answered</i>
		Respondió,	<i>He answered</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondímos,	<i>We answered</i>
		Respondííleis,	<i>Ye answered</i>
		Respondíéron,	<i>They answered</i>

Second

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	} Respondido,	{	<i>I have answered</i>
		Has, or huvisté			<i>You have answered</i>
		Ha, or huvo			<i>He has answered</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, havémos, or			<i>We have answered</i>
		huvimos			
		Havéis, or huvisteis			<i>Ye have answered</i>
		Han, or huvieron			<i>They have answered</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Respondido,	{	<i>I had answered, &c.</i>
		Havías			
		Havía			
Plur.	{	Havíamos			
		Haviádeis			
		Havían			

First Future.

Sing.	{	Responderé,	}	<i>I shall, or will answer, &c.</i>
		Responderás,		
		Responderá,		
Plur.	{	Responderémos,		
		Responderéis,		
		Responderán,		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Téngo de responder,	}	<i>I am, to or must answer, &c.</i>
		Has de responder		
		Ha de responder,		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de responder		
		Havéis de responder,		
		Han de responder,		

Third Future.

Sing.	Havré de responder,	<i>I shall be oblig'd to answer.</i>
-------	---------------------	--------------------------------------

Fourth Future.

Sing. Havía de responder,

I was to answer.

Imperative Mood.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respónde tu,	<i>Do you answer, or answer thou</i>
		Respónde el,	<i>Let him answer</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondámos n ^{os}	<i>Let us answer.</i>
		Respondéd v ^{os}	<i>Do ye answer, or let you answer</i>
		Respondan ellos	<i>Let them answer</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Moods, with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, God grant, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respónde,	}	<i>When, or God grant I do answer, &c.</i>
		Respóndas,		
		Respónde,		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondámos,		
		Respondáis		
		Respondan,		

Three Preterimperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Respondiéra, respondiése, or respondería,	}	<i>When, or God grant I did answer, &c.</i>
		Respondiéras, respondiesses, or responderías,		
		Respondiéra, respondiése, or respondería		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Respondiéramos, respondiessedes, or responderíamos		
		Respondierais, or respondiessemos, or responderíades		
		Respondieran, respondiessen, or responderían.		

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya	} Respondido,	{ When, or would to God, &c. I have answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Respon- dido,	{ When, or would to God I had answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Respondiere, Respondieres, Respondiere,	} When, or God grant I ſhall, or will answer, &c.
Plur.	{ Respondiéremos, Respondiéredeis, Respondiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	} Respondido,	{ When, or God grant I ſhall or will have answered, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent Tenſe.

Reſpondér,

To answer.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér respondido; *To have answered.*

Future Tense.

Havér de responder, *To be to answer.*

Gerund.

Respondiendo, *Answering.*

Participle Active.

Respondiente, or el que responde, *Answering.*

Participle Passive.

Respondido, *Answered, &c.*

All other regular Verbs of the second Conjugation in *er*, are conjugated after the same manner ; of which take the following List :

Verbs conjugated as Responder,

Correspondér, *to correspond.*

Comér, *to eat.*

Bebér, *to drink.*

Reprehendér, *to reprove.*

Barrér, *to sweep.*

Vendér, *to sell.*

Concedér, *to grant.*

Acometér, *to attack.*

Corrér, *to run.*

Metér, *to put in.*

Prometér, *to promise.*

Ofendér, *to offend.*

Escondér, *to hide.*

Aprendér, *to learn.*

Temér, *to fear.*

Emprendér, *to undertake.*

Debér, *to owe.*

Cometér, *to commit.*

Of Verbs Irregular of the second Conjugation in er, as,

Trahér, *to bring.*
 Sabér, *to know.*
 Tenér, *to have.*
 Podér, *to be able.*
 Querér, *to will or love.*

Ponér, *to put.*
 Hacer, *to do.*
 Cabér, *to be contained.*
 Ver, *to see.*

Trahér, *To fetch or bring.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo tráhigo	<i>I fetch or bring</i>
		Tu tráhes	<i>You fetch or bring</i>
		El tráhe	<i>He fetches or brings</i>
Plur.	{	Nosotros trahémos	<i>We fetch or bring</i>
		Vosotros trahéis	<i>Ye fetch or bring</i>
		Ellos tráhen	<i>They fetch or bring.</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Trahía	<i>I did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahías	<i>You did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahía	<i>He did fetch or bring</i>
Plur.	{	Trahíamos	<i>We did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahíais	<i>Ye did fetch or bring</i>
		Trahían	<i>They did fetch or bring.</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Tráxe, or trúxe	<i>I have fetched or brought</i>
		Traxiste, or truxiste	<i>You have fetched or brought</i>
		Tráxo, or trúxo	<i>He hath fetched or brought</i>
Plur.	{	Traximos, or truximos	<i>We have fetched or brought</i>
		Traxisteis, or truxisteis	<i>Ye have fetched or brought</i>
		Traxéron, or truxéron	<i>They have fetched or brought</i>

Second

124 The RUDIMENTS of

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	Hé, or huvé	}	Trahido,	{	<i>I have fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
		Has				
Plur.	{	Ha	}			
		Hémos, or havémos				
		Havéis				
		Han				

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Trahído,	{	<i>I had fetcht or brought, &c.</i>
		Havías				
Plur.	{	Havía	}			
		Haviámos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havian				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Traheré	}		{	<i>I shall or will fetch or bring, &c.</i>
		Traherás				
Plur.	{	Traherá	}			
		Traherémos				
		Traheréis				
		Traherán				

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or téngo de trahér	}		{	<i>I am to or must fetch or bring, &c.</i>
		Has de trahér				
Plur.	{	Ha de trahér	}			
		Hémos, or havémos de trahér				
		Havéis de trahér				
		Han de trahér				

The third and fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Tráhe tu,	}		{	<i>Bring or fetch thou</i>
		Tráhiga el,				<i>Let him bring or fetch</i>
						<i>Plur.</i>

Plur.	{	Trahigámos nosotros,	Let us bring or fetch
		Trahed vosotros,	Do ye bring or fetch
		Tráhigan ellos	Let them bring or fetch

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, God grant, would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Tráhiga	}	<i>When or would to God I do bring or fetch, &c.</i>
		Tráhigas		
		Tráhiga		
Plur.	{	Trahigámos		
		Trahigáis		
		Tráhigan		

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería	}	<i>When, or would to God I did bring or fetch, &c.</i>
		Truxéras, truxéſſes, traherías		
		Truxéra, truxéſſe, trahería		
Plur.	{	Truxéramos, truxéſſemos, traheríamos		
		Truxéradeis, truxéſſedeis, traheríadeis		
		Truxéran, truxéſſen, traherían		

The first and second may be conjugated by Traxéra, and Traxéſſe.

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Trahído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I have brought or fetched, &c.</i>
		Háyas				
		Háya				
Plur.	{	Hayámos				
		Hayáis				
		Hayan				

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Trahído,	{ When, or would to God had brought or fetcht, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéredeis, or huviéſſedeis Huviéran, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Traxére, or truxére Traxéres, or truxéres Traxére, or truxére	} When, or God grant I ſhall fetch or bring, &c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Traxéremos, or truxéremos Traxéredeis, or truxéredeis Traxéren, or truxéren.	

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	} Trahído,	{ When, or God grant I may, or ſhall have brought or fetcht, c.
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood,

Present.

Trahér, To bring, or fetch.

Preterperfect.

Havér trahído, To have brought, or fetch'd.

Future.

Havér, or esperar de trahér To bring, or fetch hereafter.

Gerund.

Trahiendo, *Bringing, or fetching.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Traído *Brought, or fetch'd, &c.*

The same manner of Conjugation is to be observed in all Verbs compounded of *Trabér*, as *Retrabér*, to draw back, &c.

The Irregular Verb *Sabér*, To know.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo sé,	I know
		Tu sabes,	You know
		El sabe,	He knows
Plur.	{	Sabemos,	We know
		Sabéis	Ye know
		Saben,	They know

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Sabía,	I did know
		Sabías,	You did know
		Sabía,	He did know
Plur.	{	Sabíamos,	We did know
		Sabíades	Ye did know
		Sabían,	They did know

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Súpe,	I knew
		Supiste,	You knew
Plur.	{	Súpo,	He knew
		Supimos,	We knew
		Supisteis	Ye knew
		Supieron,	They knew

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube sabido	I have known
		Has sabido,	You have known
		Ha sabido,	He has known
		Hémos sabido,	We have known
Plur.	{	Havéis sabido,	Ye have known
		Han sabido,	They have known

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Sabido,	{	<i>I had known</i>
		Havías				<i>You had known</i>
Plur.	{	Havía			}	<i>He had known</i>
		Havíamos				<i>We had known</i>
		Havíadeis				<i>Ye had known</i>
		Havían				<i>They had known</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Sabré,	}	I shall, or will know
		Sabrás,		You shall, or will know
		Sabrá,		He shall, or will know
		Sabremos,		We shall, or will know
Plur.	{	Sabréis,	}	Ye shall, or will know
		Sabrán,		They shall, or will know

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or Tengo de saber,	I am to know
		Has de saber,	You are to know
		Ha de saber,	He is to know

Plur.	{	Hémos de fabér	<i>We are to know</i>
		Havéis de fabér	<i>Ye are to know</i>
		Han de fabér	<i>They are to know</i>

Third Future.

Havré de fabér	<i>I shall be oblig'd to know</i>
----------------	-----------------------------------

Fourth Future.

Havía de fabér	<i>I was to know</i>
----------------	----------------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Sábe tu	<i>Know you</i>
		Sépa el	<i>Let him know</i>
Plur.	{	Sepámos nosóttos	<i>Let us know</i>
		Sabéd vosóttros	<i>Know ye</i>
		Sépan éllos	<i>Let them know</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Sépa	}	<i>God grant that I may know.</i>
		Sépas		
Plur.	{	Sépa		
		Sepámos		
		Sepáis		
		Sépan		

K

Preter

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Supiéra, supiéſſe, fabría	}	<i>When, or God grant I did know, &c.</i>
		Supiéras, supiéſſes, fabrias		
Plur.	{	Supiéra, supiéſſe, fabría	}	
		Supiéramos, supiéſſemos, fabriamos		
		Supiéradeis, supiéſſedeis, fabriadeis		
		Supiéran, supiéſſen, fabrían		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Haya ſabído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have known, &c.</i>	
		Hayas ſabído			
		Haya ſabído			
<i>Plur.</i>		{			Hayámos ſabído
					Hayáis ſabído
					Hayan ſabído

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Sabido,	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to
Plur.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}			God I had
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				known, &c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Supiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall know, &c.</i>
		Supiéres		
		Supiére		
Plur.	{	Supiéremos	}	
		Supiéredeis		
		Supiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Sabído	{	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall have known, &c.</i>	
		Huviéres,					
Huviére							
Plur.		Huviéremos					
		Huviéredeis					
		Huviéren					

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Sabér

To know

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér sabído

To have known

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperar de sabér

To know hereafter

Gerund.

Sabiéndo

Knowing

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que sabe

Knowing

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice,

Sabído

Known

The Irregular Verb Tener, To have, or hold.

Indicative Mood.

Present.

Sing. { Téngo
 { Tiénes
 { Tiéne

*I have, or hold
You have, or hold
He has, or holds*

K 2

Plur.

Plur.	{	Tenemos		We have, or bold
		Tenéis		Ye have, or bold
		Tiēnen		They have, or bold

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Tenia	}	I did have, or bold, &c.
		Tenias		
		Tenia		
Plur.	{	Teníamos		
		Teniádeis		
		Tenían		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Túve		I had, or held
		Tuviste		You had, or held
		Tuvo		He had, or held
Plur.	{	Tuvimos		We had, or held
		Tuvisteis		Ye had, or held
		Tuviéron		They had, or held

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube tenido		I have had
		Has tenido		You have had
		Ha tenido		He has had
Plur.	{	Hémos tenido		We have had
		Havéis tenido		Ye have had
		Han tenido		They have had

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Tenido	{	I had had
		Havías				You had had
		Havía				He had had
Plur.	{	Havíamos				We had had
		Haviádeis				Ye had had
		Havían				They had had

First Future.

Sing.	{	Tendré terné, or tenré		I shall, or will have
		Tendrás ternás, or terrás		You shall, or will have
		Tendrá terná, or tenrá		He shall, or will have
				Plur.

Plur.	{	Tendremos ternemos, or tenrémos	<i>We shall, or will have</i>
		Tendréis ternéis, or tenréis	<i>Ye shall, or will have</i>
		Tendrán ternán, or tenrán	<i>They shall, or will have</i>

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He de tener	<i>I am to have, or hold</i>
		Has de tener	<i>You are to have, or hold</i>
		Ha de tener	<i>He is to have, or hold</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de tener	<i>We are to have, or hold</i>
		Havéis de tener	<i>Ye are to have, or hold</i>
		Han de tener	<i>They are to have, or hold</i>

Third Future.

Havré de tener	<i>I shall be oblig'd to have or hold</i>
----------------	---

Fourth Future.

Havía de tener	<i>I was to have</i>
----------------	----------------------

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ten tu	<i>Do thou have, or hold thou</i>
		Tenga el	<i>Let him have, or hold</i>
		Tengámos nosótro	<i>Let us have, or hold</i>
Plur.	{	Tened vosótro	<i>Do ye have, or hold, or let ye hold</i>
		Tengan ellos	<i>Let them have, or hold</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.

When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Tenga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do have, or hold, &c.</i>
		Tengas		
		Tenga		
Plur.	{	Tengámos		
		Tengáis		
		Tengan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendria	}	
		Tuviéras, tuviéſſes, ternías, or tendrías		
		Tuviéra, tuviéſſe, ternía, or tendria		
Plur.	{	Tuviéramos, tuviéſſemos, terníamos, or tendríamos	}	When, or would to God I did have or hold, &c.
		Tuviéradeis, tuviéſſedeis, terníadeis, or tendríadeis		
		Tuviéran, tuviéſſen, ternían, or tendrían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Haya tenído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have bad, or held, &c.</i>
		Hayas tenído		
		Haya tenído		
Plur.	{	Hayámos tenído		
		Hayáis tenído		
		Hayan tenído		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Tenído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had had, or held &c.</i>		
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes						
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe						
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}					
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis						
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen						

First Future.

Sing.	{	Tuviére	}	When, or God grant I ſhall have or hold, &c.
		Tuviéres		
		Tuviére		
Plur.	{	Tuviéremos		
		Tuviéredeis		
		Tuviéren		

Second

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Huvière, or havré	}	Tenido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall have had or held, &c.</i>
		Huvières				
		Huvière				
		Huviéremos				
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Huviéredeis				
		Huvién				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Tenér *To have or to hold.*

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér tenido	To have had or beld
--------------	---------------------

Future Tense.

Havér de tenér	<i>To be to have or hold</i>
----------------	------------------------------

Gerund.

Teniendo	Holding
1.000	1.000
2.000	2.000
3.000	3.000
4.000	4.000
5.000	5.000
6.000	6.000
7.000	7.000
8.000	8.000
9.000	9.000
10.000	10.000
11.000	11.000
12.000	12.000
13.000	13.000
14.000	14.000
15.000	15.000
16.000	16.000
17.000	17.000
18.000	18.000
19.000	19.000
20.000	20.000
21.000	21.000
22.000	22.000
23.000	23.000
24.000	24.000
25.000	25.000
26.000	26.000
27.000	27.000
28.000	28.000
29.000	29.000
30.000	30.000
31.000	31.000
32.000	32.000
33.000	33.000
34.000	34.000
35.000	35.000
36.000	36.000
37.000	37.000
38.000	38.000
39.000	39.000
40.000	40.000
41.000	41.000
42.000	42.000
43.000	43.000
44.000	44.000
45.000	45.000
46.000	46.000
47.000	47.000
48.000	48.000
49.000	49.000
50.000	50.000
51.000	51.000
52.000	52.000
53.000	53.000
54.000	54.000
55.000	55.000
56.000	56.000
57.000	57.000
58.000	58.000
59.000	59.000
60.000	60.000
61.000	61.000
62.000	62.000
63.000	63.000
64.000	64.000
65.000	65.000
66.000	66.000
67.000	67.000
68.000	68.000
69.000	69.000
70.000	70.000
71.000	71.000
72.000	72.000
73.000	73.000
74.000	74.000
75.000	75.000
76.000	76.000
77.000	77.000
78.000	78.000
79.000	79.000
80.000	80.000
81.000	81.000
82.000	82.000
83.000	83.000
84.000	84.000
85.000	85.000
86.000	86.000
87.000	87.000
88.000	88.000
89.000	89.000
90.000	90.000
91.000	91.000
92.000	92.000
93.000	93.000
94.000	94.000
95.000	95.000
96.000	96.000
97.000	97.000
98.000	98.000
99.000	99.000
100.000	100.000

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que tiene	Holding
---------------------	----------------

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Tenido	Held
1.000	1.000
2.000	2.000
3.000	3.000
4.000	4.000
5.000	5.000
6.000	6.000
7.000	7.000
8.000	8.000
9.000	9.000
10.000	10.000
11.000	11.000
12.000	12.000
13.000	13.000
14.000	14.000
15.000	15.000
16.000	16.000
17.000	17.000
18.000	18.000
19.000	19.000
20.000	20.000
21.000	21.000
22.000	22.000
23.000	23.000
24.000	24.000
25.000	25.000
26.000	26.000
27.000	27.000
28.000	28.000
29.000	29.000
30.000	30.000
31.000	31.000
32.000	32.000
33.000	33.000
34.000	34.000
35.000	35.000
36.000	36.000
37.000	37.000
38.000	38.000
39.000	39.000
40.000	40.000
41.000	41.000
42.000	42.000
43.000	43.000
44.000	44.000
45.000	45.000
46.000	46.000
47.000	47.000
48.000	48.000
49.000	49.000
50.000	50.000
51.000	51.000
52.000	52.000
53.000	53.000
54.000	54.000
55.000	55.000
56.000	56.000
57.000	57.000
58.000	58.000
59.000	59.000
60.000	60.000
61.000	61.000
62.000	62.000
63.000	63.000
64.000	64.000
65.000	65.000
66.000	66.000
67.000	67.000
68.000	68.000
69.000	69.000
70.000	70.000
71.000	71.000
72.000	72.000
73.000	73.000
74.000	74.000
75.000	75.000
76.000	76.000
77.000	77.000
78.000	78.000
79.000	79.000
80.000	80.000
81.000	81.000
82.000	82.000
83.000	83.000
84.000	84.000
85.000	85.000
86.000	86.000
87.000	87.000
88.000	88.000
89.000	89.000
90.000	90.000
91.000	91.000
92.000	92.000
93.000	93.000
94.000	94.000
95.000	95.000
96.000	96.000
97.000	97.000
98.000	98.000
99.000	99.000
100.000	100.000

Like this Verb simple are its Compounds in all points declined, thro' all Moods and Tenses, as

Manténér, *to maintain*; Yo manténgo, *I maintain*, mantúve, *I maintained*.

Detener, *to detain or stay*; **Deténgo,** *I detain*; **detúve,** *I detained.*

136 The RUDIMENTS of

Retenér, to retain or with-hold; Reténgo, I retain; retúve, I retained
 Softenér, to sustain or uphold; Softéngo, I sustain; foslúve, I sustained

The Irregular Verb Poder, To be able.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Puédo	I can, or am able
		Puédes	You can, or are able
		Puéde	He can, or is able
Plur.	{	Podémos	We can, or are able
		Podéis	Ye can, or are able
		Puéden	They can, or are able

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Podía	I could, or was able
		Podías	You could, or was able
		Podía	He could, or was able
Plur.	{	Podíamos	We could, or were able
		Podíades	Ye could, or were able
		Podían	They could, or were able

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Púde	} I could, or have been able, &c.
		Pudiste	
		Púdo	
Plur.	{	Pudimos	}
		Pudisteis	
		Pudieron	

Second

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	Hé, or hube	}	Podido,	{	I could, or have been able
		Has				You could, or have been able
		Ha				He could, or has been able
Plur.	{	Hémos, or				We could, or have been able
		havémos				
		Havéis				
		Han				Ye could, or have been able
						They could, or have been able

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Podido,	{	I had been able, &c.
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Havíadeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Podré	}	I shall, or will be able, &c.
		Podrás		
		Podrá		
Plur.	{	Podrémos		
		Podréis		
		Podrán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de poder	}	I must, or will be able, &c.
		Has de poder		
		Ha de poder		
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos de poder		
		Havéis de poder		
		Han de poder		

Third Future.

Havré de poder *I shall be obliged to be able*

Fourth Future.

Havía de poder *I was to be able*
Though

138 *The RUDIMENTS of*

Though it seems improper for this Word to have a second, third, and fourth Futures of the Indicative Mood, or any Imperative Mood, and most Grammarians will allow it neither, yet they are frequently and properly used. As to the second Future, it is very usual, and when one says, he cannot do such a thing, to answer, *Has de poder*, You shall be able ; by way of compelling slothful persons, or such as may improve by often trying to do that which they cannot do at present. The same is to be said of the Imperative, which is in the nature of the second future, being compulsive ; as, if one say, *No podemos hacér esto*, We cannot do this ; and another answers, *Pués podámos*, Then let us be able ; that is, let us use our Endeavours, that we may perform that which we think we cannot do. Therefore we will proceed to the

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Puede tu	Do you be able
	{	Pueda el	Let him be able
Plur.	{	Podámos nosotros	Let us be able
	{	Podéd vosotros	Do ye be able
	{	Puedan ellos	Let them be able

Subjunctive and Optative Mood, with the Signs,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
 { *When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Pueda	} <i>When, or God grant I can, or be able, &c.</i>
	{	Puedas	
	{	Pueda	
Plur.	{	Podámos	
	{	Podáis	
	{	Puedan	

Preter-

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Pudiéra, pudiéſſe, podría	}	<i>When, or would to God I could or might be able, &c.</i>
		Pudiéras, pudiéſſes, podrías		
		Pudiéra, pudiéſſe, podría		
Plur.	{	Pudiéramos, pudiéſſemos, podríamos		
		Pudiéradeis, pudiéſſedeis, podríadeis		
		Pudiéran, pudiéſſen, podrían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Podido,	{	<i>When, or would to God, &c. I have been able, &c.</i>	
		Háyas					
		Háya					
Plur.		Hayámos					
		Hayáis					
		Hyan					

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Podido,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had been able, &c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Pudiere	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or may be able, &c.</i>
		Pudieres		
		Pudiere		
Plur.	{	Pudiéremos		
		Pudiéredeis		
		Pudién		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviere, or havré	}	Podido,	{	When, or God grant		
		Huviéres				I may, or shall		
		Huviere				have been able,		
Plur.		Huviéremos				{	&c.	
		Huviéredeis						
		Huviéren						
						Infinitive		

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Podér

To be able

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér podido

To have been able

Gerund.

Pudiendo,

Being able, &c.

The Irregular Verb Querér, To will, or love.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Yo quiero	<i>I will, or love</i>
		Tu quíeres	<i>You will, or love</i>
		El quiere	<i>He wills, or loves</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Nosotros queremos	<i>We will, or love</i>
		Vosotros queréis	<i>Ye will, or love</i>
		Ellos quieren	<i>They will, or love</i>

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Quería,	<i>I did will, or love</i>
		Querías	<i>You did will, or love</i>
		Quería	<i>He did will, or love</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Queríamos	<i>We did will, or love</i>
		Queríades	<i>Ye did will, or love</i>
		Querían	<i>They did will, or love.</i>

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Quise	{	I willed, or loved
		Quisiste		You willed, or loved
		Quiso		He willed, or loved
Plur.	{	Quisimos	{	We willed, or loved
		Quisisteis		Ye willed, or loved
		Quisieron		They willed, or loved

Second and Third Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube	{	Querido,	{	I have willed, or loved, &c.
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	Hemos, or havemos				
		Havéis				
		Han				

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	{	Querido,	{	I had willed, or loved, &c.
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Haviámos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Querré	{	I will, or shall will, or love, &c.
		Querrás		
		Querrá		
Plur.	{	Querrémos		
		Querréis		
		Querrán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de querer	{	I am to, or must will, or love, &c.
		Has de querer		
		Ha de querer		
Plur.	{	Hemos, or havemos de querer		
		Havéis de querer		
		Han de querer		

Third

Third Future.

Havré de querér

I shall be obliged to love

Pourth Future.

Havía de querér

I had, or I was to love

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Quiére tu	<i>Do you will, or love</i>
		Quiéra el	<i>Let him will, or love</i>
Plur.	{	Querámos nosotros	<i>Let us will, or love</i>
		Queréd vosotros	<i>Do ye will, or love</i>
		Quiéran ellos	<i>Let them will, or love</i>

Optative and Subjunctive Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
When, Though, would to God,

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Quiéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I will or love, &c.</i>
		Quiéras		
		Quiéra		
Plur.	{	Querámos		
		Queráis		
		Quiéran		

Three Preterimperfect Tenses.

Sing.	{	Quisiéra, quisiésse, querría	}	<i>When, or God grant I would or did love, &c.</i>
		Quisiéras, quisiésses, querrías		
		Quisiéra, quisiésse, querría		
Plur.	{	Quisiéramos, quisiéssemos, querríamos		
		Quisiéradeis, quisiéssedeis, querríadeis		
		Quisiéran, quisiéssen, querrían		

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{ Háya Háyas Háya	} Querido,	{ When, or God grant I have will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{ Huviéra, or huviéss Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéss	} Querido	{ When, or would to God I had will'd, or lov'd, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéramos, or huviéssimos Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen		

First Future.

Sing.	{ Quisiére Quisiéres Quisiére	} When, or God grant I shall will, or love, &c.
Plur.	{ Quisiéremos Quisiéredeis Quisiéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres Huviére	} Querido,	{ When, or God grant I shall be willing, or love, &c.
Plur.	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Querér

To will', or love

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Havér querido

To have will'd, or lov'd

Gerund.

Queriendo

Loving

Participle.

Querido

Will'd, or lov'd, &c.

This Verb may be declined through all Moods and Tenses with the word *Mas* added to it, which with it sometimes signifies *rather*, and sometimes *more*, as *Mas quiero callár que hablár mal*, I had rather be silent than speak ill; or *Mas quiero a Pédro que a Juán*, I love *Peter* more, or better than *John*.

The Irregular Verb Ponér, *To put, or place.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo pongo	}	<i>I put, or place, &c.</i>	
		Tu pones			
		El pone			
Plur.		Ponemos			
		Poneis			
		Ponen			

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Ponía	<i>I did put</i>
		Ponías	<i>You did put</i>
		Ponía	<i>He did put</i>

Plur.

Plur.	{	Poníamos	<i>We did put</i>
		Poníadeis	<i>Ye did put</i>
		Ponían	<i>They did put</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Púse	}	<i>I have put, &c.</i>
		Pusiste		
		Púso		
Plur.	{	Pusimos		
		Pusisteis		
		Pusieron		

Second Preterperfect.

Sing. He, or hube	Puesto,	<i>I have put, &c.</i>
-------------------	---------	----------------------------

Preterpluperfect.

Sing. Havía	Puesto,	<i>I had put, &c.</i>
-------------	---------	---------------------------

First Future.

Sing. Pondré, or porné	<i>I shall, or will put, &c.</i>
------------------------	--------------------------------------

Second Future.

Sing. He, or Tengo de poner	<i>I am to, or must put, &c.</i>
-----------------------------	--------------------------------------

Third Future.

Havré de poner	<i>I shall be oblig'd to put</i>
Havía de poner	<i>I had, or I was to put</i>

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Pon tu	<i>Do you put, or put thou</i>
		Ponga el	<i>Let him put</i>
Plur.	{	Pongámosnos	<i>Let us put</i>
		Poned vosotros	<i>Do ye put, or let ye put</i>
		Pongan ellos	<i>Let them put</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,
 { *When, Though, Would to God.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Pónge	}	<i>When, or God grant I do put, &c.</i>	
		Póngas			
		Pónge			
Plur.		Pongámos			
		Pongáis			
		Pongan			

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Pusiéra, pusiésse, or pornia, pon- dria	}	<i>When, or would to God I did put, &c.</i>
		Pusiéras, pusiésse, or pornias, pondrias		
		Pusiéra, pusiésse, or pornia, pon- dria		
Plur.	{	Pusiéramos, pusiéssomos, or por- niamos, pondriamos	}	
		Pusiéradeis, pusiéssedeis, or por- niadeis, pondriadeis		
		Pusiéran, pusiéssen, or pornian, pondrian		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	}	Puesto,	{	<i>When, or God grant I have put, &c.</i>
		Háyas				
		Háya				
Plur.	{	Hayámos	}		{	
		Hayáis				
		Hayan				

First

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Puéſto,	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to God
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				I had put,
		Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos				&c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
Plur.	{	Huviéran, or huviéſſen	}			

First Future.

Sing.	{	Puſiére	}	When, or God grant I ſhall put,
		Puſiéres		
		Puſiére		
		Puſiéremos		
Plur.	{	Puſiéredeis	}	&c.
		Puſiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Puéſto,	{	When, or God grant
		Huviéres				I ſhall have put,
		Huviére				&c.
Plur.	{	Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Preſent Tenſe.

Poner,

To put

Preterperfect Tenſe.

Havér puéſto;

To have put

Gerund.

Poniéndo,

Putting

Participle Passive.

Puesto

Put, &c.

After this manner are declined in all respects, *Componér*, to compose, *yo compóngo*, I compose, *compúse*, I have composed; *Disponér*, to dispose, *dispóngo*, I dispose, *dispúse*, I have disposed; *Antepónér*, to set before, *antepóngo*, I set before, *antepúse*, I have set before; *Propónér*, to propose, *propóngo*, I propose, *propúse*, I proposed; and, if there be any other Verbs derived by Composition from *Ponér*.

The Irregular Verb *Hacer*, To do, or make.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Yo hágo	{	<i>I do or make</i>
		Tu háces		<i>You do or make</i>
		El háce		<i>He does or makes</i>
Plur.	{	Hacémos	{	<i>We do or make</i>
		Hacéis		<i>Ye do or make</i>
		Hácen		<i>They do or make</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Hacia	}	<i>I did or made, &c.</i>
		Hacias		
		Hacia		
Plur.	{	Hacíamos		
		Hacíadeis, or hacíais		
		Hacían		

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Hice	{	<i>I have made, &c.</i>
		Hiciste		
		Hizo		

Plur.

Plur.	{	Hicimos Hicisteis Hicieron	}	<i>We have made, &c.</i>
-------	---	----------------------------------	---	------------------------------

Second Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	He, or hube Has Ha	}	Hécho, { <i>I have done, or made, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos, or havémos Havéis Han	}	

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía Havías Havía	}	Hécho,	{	<i>I had done or made, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos Haviádeis Havían				

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Haré Harás Hará	}	<i>I shall, or will do, or make, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Harémos Haréis Harán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de hacer Has de hacer Ha de hacer	}	<i>I am to, or must do, or make, &c.</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de hacer Havéys de hacer Han de hacer		

Third Future.

Havré de hacer,

I shall be oblig'd to do

Fourth Future.

Havía de hacer

I had, or I was to do

Imperative Mood,

Sing.	{	Ház, or hace tu	Do or make thou, or do thou
		Haga el	Let him do or make
Plur.	{	Hagamos nosotros	Let us do or make
		Haced vosotros	Do ye or make ye, let ye do
		Hagan ellos	Let them do or make

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Haga	} <i>When, or God grant I</i>
		Hagas	
Plur.	{	Haga	
		Hagamos	
		Hagáis	
		Hagan	

do or make, &c.

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Hiciera, hiciéste, haría	} <i>When, or would to God</i>
		Hiciéras, hiciésteis, harías	
		Hiciera, hiciéste, haría	
Plur.	{	Hiciéramos, hiciésemos, haríamos	
		Hiciérais, hiciésteis, haríais	
		Hiciéran, hiciéssen, harían	

I did do or make, &c.

Preter-

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya hécho	}	<i>When, or God grant I have made, or done, &c.</i>
		Háyas hécho		
		Háya hécho		
Plur.	{	Hayámos hecho		
		Hayáis hécho		
		Hayán hécho		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Hécho,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had done or made, &c.</i>		
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes						
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe						
Plur.		{					Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}
							Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis	
							Huviéran, or huviéſſen	

First Future.

Sing.	{	Hiciére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall or will do or make, &c.</i>	
		Hiciéres			
		Hiciére			
Plur.		Hiciéremos			
		Hiciéredeis			
		Hiciéren			

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or hayré	}	Hécho,	{	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall have done or made, &c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huviére				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}			
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tenſe.

Hacér,

To do or make.

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér hécho

To have done or made

Future Tense.

Havér, or esperar de haçér

To make or do hereafter

Gerund.

Haciendo

Doing or making

Participle Active of the Preter Tense.

Hécho

Made or done, &c.

In the same manner are declined all the Verbs proceeding by composition from *Hacér*, as *Deshaçér*, to undo, *Rehaçér*, to make again, *Contrabaçér*, to counterfeit,

The Irregular Verb, Cabér, To be contained.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Yo quépo
 { Tu cábes
 { El cábe
Plur. { Cabémos
 { Cabéis
 { Cáben

I am contained
You are contained
He is contained
We are contained
Ye are contained
They are contained

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Cabía		<i>I was contained</i>
		Cabías		<i>You was contained</i>
		Cabía		<i>He was contained</i>
Plur.	{	Cabíamos		<i>We were contained</i>
		Cabíadeis		<i>Ye were contained</i>
		Cabían		<i>They were contained</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Cúpe		<i>I have been contained</i>
		Cupiste		<i>You have been contained</i>
		Cúpo		<i>He has been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Cupimos		<i>We have been contained</i>
		Cupisteis		<i>Ye have been contained</i>
		Cupieron		<i>They have been contained</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube cabído		<i>I have been contained</i>
		Has cabído		<i>You have been contained</i>
		Ha cabído		<i>He has been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos cabído		<i>We have been contained</i>
		Havéis cabído		<i>Ye have been contained</i>
		Han cabído		<i>They have been contained</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Cabído,	{	<i>I had been contained</i>
		Havías			<i>You had been contained</i>
		Havía			<i>He had been contained</i>
Plur.	{	Haviámos			<i>We had been contained</i>
		Haviádeis			<i>Ye had been contained</i>
		Havían			<i>They had been contained</i>

First Future.

Plur.	{	Cabré		<i>I shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrás		<i>You shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrá		<i>He shall or will be contained</i>
Sing.	{	Cabrémos		<i>We shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabréis		<i>Ye shall or will be contained</i>
		Cabrán		<i>They shall or will be contained</i>

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or <i>téngo</i> de cabér	}	<i>I am to, or must be contained, &c.</i>
		Has de cabér		
Plur.	{	Ha de cabér		
		Hémos de cabér		
		Havéis de cabér		
		Han de cabér		

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Cábe tu	}	<i>Be you contained</i>
		Quépa el		<i>Let him be contained</i>
Plur.	{	Quepámos nosótro		<i>Let us be contained</i>
		Cabéd vosótro		<i>Be ye contained</i>
		Quépan éll		<i>Let them be contained</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*
 { *When, God grant, Though.*

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Quépa	}	<i>When, or God grant I am contained, &c.</i>
		Quépas		
Plur.	{	Quépa		
		Quepámos		
		Quepáis		
		Quépan		

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría	}	<i>When, or would to God I was contained, &c.</i>
		Cupiéras, cupiéſſes, cabrias		
		Cupiéra, cupiéſſe, cabría		
Plur.	{	Cupiéramos, cupiéſſemos, cabríamos		
		Cupiéradeis, cupiéſſedeis, cabriádeis		
		Cupiéran, cupiéſſen, cabrían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya cabído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have been contained, &c.</i>
		Háyas cabído		
		Háya cabído		
Plur.	{	Háyamos cabído		
		Háyais cabído		
		Háyan cabído		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Cabído, {	<i>When, or would to God I had been contained, &c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes			
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe			
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis			
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen			

First Future.

Sing.	{	Cupiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or will be contained, &c.</i>
		Cupiéres		
		Cupiére		
Plur.	{	Cupiéremos		
		Cupiéredeis		
		Cupiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Cabído {	<i>When, or God grant I may or ſhall be contained hereafter, &c.</i>
		Huviéres,			
		Huviére			
Plur.	{	Huviéremos			
		Huviéredeis			
		Huviéren			

Infinitive

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Cabér

To be contained.

Preterperfect.

Havér cabído

To have been contained.

Gerund.

Cabiéndo

Being contained.

Participle.

Cabído

Contained.

The Irregular Verb, Vér, To see.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Yo véo
 { Tu ves
 { El ve
Plur. { Vémos
 { Véis
 { Ven

*I see
You see
He sees
We see
Ye see
They see*

Preterimperfect.

Sing. { Vía, or veía
 { Vías
 { Vía
Plur. { Víamos
 { Viadeis
 { Vían

*I did see
You did see
He did see
We did see
Ye did see
They did see*

First

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Vi, or vide	<i>I saw</i>
		Viste	<i>You saw</i>
		Vio	<i>He saw</i>
Plur.	{	Vimos	<i>We saw</i>
		Visteis	<i>Ye saw</i>
		Viéron	<i>They saw</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube visto	<i>I have seen</i>
		Has visto	<i>You have seen</i>
		Ha visto	<i>He has seen</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos visto	<i>We have seen</i>
		Havéis visto	<i>Ye have seen</i>
		Han visto	<i>They have seen</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	} Visto,	{	<i>I had seen</i>
		Havías			<i>You had seen</i>
		Havía			<i>He had seen</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos			<i>We had seen</i>
		Haviádeis			<i>Ye had seen</i>
		Havían			<i>They had seen</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Veré	<i>I shall or will see</i>
		Verás	<i>You shall or will see</i>
		Verá	<i>He shall or will see</i>
Plur.	{	Verémos	<i>We shall or will see</i>
		Veréis	<i>Ye shall or will see</i>
		Verán	<i>They shall or will see</i>

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de vér	<i>I am to or must see</i>
		Has de vér	<i>You are to or must see</i>
		Ha de vér	<i>He is to or must see</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de vér	<i>We are to or must see</i>
		Havéis de vér	<i>Ye are to or must see</i>
		Han de vér	<i>They are to or must see</i>

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Vée, or vé tu	Do thou see, or see thou
		Véa el	Let him see
Plur.	{	Veámos nosótro	Let us see
		Ved vosótro	Do ye see, or let ye see
		Véan éll	Let them see

The Subjunctive, the Optative, and the Infinitive Moods, altogether as in the other Verbs before, as the Present Tense of the two first Moods *Véa*, the Preterimperfect, *Viéra*, *vería*, *viéſſe*; the Preterperfect, *Haya viſto*, the Preterpluperfect, *Huviera*, or *buviéſſe viſto*; the Future, *Viére*. The Infinitive, *Vér*, Participle, *Viſto*.

The Irregular Verb *Caér*, To fall.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Cáig	I fall
		Cáes	Thou falleſt
		Các	He falls
Plur.	{	Caémos	We fall
		Caéis	Ye fall
		Cáen	They fall

Preterimperfect.

Caía, caías, &c.

First Preterperfect.

Cái, caíſte, &c.

Second

Second Preterperfect.

He caído, Has caído, &c.

And so of the other Tenses, like the regular Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Cae	Do you fall, or fall thou
		Cáiga	Let him fall
Plur.	{	Caigámos	Let us fall
		Caed	Do ye fall, or let ye fall
		Caigan	Let them fall

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Caér

To fall

Gerund.

Cayéndo

Falling

The Verb *Entendér*, to understand, in the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood makes *Entiéndo*; Preterperfect, *Entendí*.

Of the Verbs in *Cér*.

THE following Verbs ending in *cer*, are generally spelt without an *s*, though it were more proper to write them with it before the *c*, which would render them all regular, and more answerable to the *Latin*, from which many of them are derived; but since we generally find them otherwise, it is proper to note them down here.

Infinitive.

*Infinitive.**Indicative.**Present Tense. Preterperfect.*

Adolecér, to grow sick	Adolésco	Adolecí
Agradecér, to thank	Agradésco	Agradecí
Amortecér, to dye away	Amortésco	Amortecí
Desfallecér, to faint	Desfallésco	Desfallecí
Apetecér, to desire	Apetésco	Apetecí
Crecér, to grow	Crésco	Crecí
Encallecér, to wax hard as a Corn	Encallésco	Encallecí
Encarecér, to magnify	Encarésco	Encarecí
Establecér, to establish	Estableésco	Establecí
Fenecér, to finish	Fenésco	Fenecí
Pacér, to feed	Pásco	Pací
Perecér, to perish	Perésco	Perecí
Compadecér, to have Compassion	Compadésco	Compadecí
Conocér, to know	Conóscó	Conocí
Padecér, to suffer	Padésco	Padecí
Ofrecér, to offer	Ofrésco	Ofrecí
Guarnecér, to garnish	Guarnésco	Guarnecí
Parecér, to appear	Parésco	Parecí
Nacér, to be born	Násco	Nací
Enflaquecér, to grow lean	Enflaqueésco	Enflaquecí
Enriquecér, to enrich	Enriqueésco	Enriquecí
Empobrecér, to grow poor	Empobreésco	Empobrecí
Endurecér, to grow hard	Endurésco	Endurecí
Fallecér, to fail or dye	Fallésco	Fallecí
Engrandecér, to magnify	Engrandésco	Engrandecí
Entristecér, to grow melancholy	Entristésco	Entristecí
Ennoblecér, to ennoble	Ennoblésco	Ennoblecí
Floreceér, to flourish	Florésco	Floreceí
Fortalecér, to strengthen	Fortalésco	Fortaleceí
Favorecér, to favour	Favoreésco	Favoreceí
Obedecér, to obey	Obedésco	Obedecí
Desvanecér, to make vain	Desvanésco	Desvanecí
Ensoberbecér, to grow proud	Ensoberbésco	Ensoberbecí
Emmudecér, to grow dumb	Emmudésco	Emmudecí
Establecér, to establish	Estableésco	Establecí
Merecér, to merit.	Merésco	Merecí

Except from this general Rule, *Vencér*, to overcome, *Vénzo*, *Vencí*; which shows what was said above, that they might more properly all be writ with an *s* in the infinitive Mood, and present Tense of the indicative Mood, as *Pascér*, from the Latin *Páscere*; *conoscér*, from the Latin *cognoscere*, and

and so of others; but custom has prevailed to write them as above, and there is no contending against it; but *Vencér*, cannot admit of the *s*, being derived from the *Latin vincere*, and therefore keeps on without an *s* in all Moods and Tenses.

Of the Verbs in gér.

THE following Verbs which have their Infinitive in *gér*, make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, by changing *g* into *j*; the same in the third Singular, and the first and third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and through all persons, and both numbers of the Present Tense of the Optative, and the Subjunctive Moods: That is when in the *ultima*, or last syllable there is an *a* or *o*.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative. Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>	
Encogér, to shrink, Recogér, to gather, Acogér, to entertain, Escogér, to choose, Cogér, to catch,	Encójo, Recójo, Acójo, Escójo, Cójo,	Encogí. Recogí. Acogí. Escogí. Cogí.

In other Moods and Tenses, like the Regulars, except the Tenses before mentioned.

Of the Verbs in ér.

THE following Verbs in *ér* make the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood by adding *i* in the last syllable but one of the Infinitive, and

M the

the same in the second and third Persons Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and the Subjunctive Moods.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative, Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>	
Defendér, <i>to defend,</i>	Defiéndo,	Defendí.
Hendér, <i>to cleave asunder,</i>	Hiéndo,	Hendí.
Cernér, <i>to sift,</i>	Ciérno,	Cerní.
Entendér, <i>to understand,</i>	Entiéndo,	Entendí.
Héder, <i>to stink,</i>	Hiédo,	Hedí.

The next underneath form the Present Tense of the Indicative, by turning *o* in the last Syllable but one of the Infinitive into *ue*; and the same in the second and third Person Singular, and the third Plural of the Imperative Mood, and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>Infinitive,</i>	<i>Indicative, Present. Preterperfect.</i>	
Volvér, <i>to turn,</i>	Vuélvo,	Volví.
Solér, <i>to be wont,</i>	Suélo,	Solí.
Cozér, <i>to boil,</i>	Cuézo,	Cozí.
Dolér, <i>to grieve,</i>	Duélo,	Dolí.
Olér, <i>to smell,</i>	Huélo,	Olí.

The same in all Verbs deriv'd from any of them; as *Revolvér*, to stir about; *Condolér*, to suffer with, &c.

The next are vary'd as follows.

<i>Infinitive.</i>	<i>Indicative. Present Tense. Preterperfect.</i>	
Caér, <i>to fall.</i>	Caigo,	Caí.
Roér, <i>to gnaw,</i>	Roigo,	Roí.
Valér, <i>to be worth,</i>	Válgo,	Valí.

Of

Of Verbs Passive of the Second Conjugations

THEY are formed and conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation ; as *ver*, to see is made passive, thus :

Present. Indicative.		Imperfect.	Perfect.
Sing.	{	{	{
Plur.	{	{	{

I am seen, &c. *I was seen, &c.* *Fui, or he sido visto, &c.* *I have been seen.*

And so the rest of the Tenses.

Of Verbs Reciprocal.

These Verbs, and all terminated in *erse*, are likewise conjugated as those of the first Conjugation ; as

Perderse, *To lose one's self, to be lost.*

Present.		Indicative.	Perfect.
		Imperfect.	
Si.	{	{	{
Pl.	{	{	{

I lose myself, &c. *I was losing myself* *I lost myself, &c.*

and so of the other Tenses.

The Imperative thus :

Sing.	{	{	{
Plur.	{	{	{

Lose yourself.

Note, That the Persons are often doubled in the Conjugation of those Verbs; as, *Yo me pierdo, tu te pierdes, el se pierde, &c.* or thus, *Pierdome, Pierdeste, Perdiese, &c.* by putting the Pronoun after the Verb.

Of Verbs Impersonals.

The Impersonals of this Conjugation are,

Havér,

To be, as in what concerns a Place, &c.

Indicative.

Present Tense.

Hái, or no háy

There is, or there is not.

Imperfect.

Havía,

There was.

First Preterperfect.

Húvo,

There was, or there has been.

Second Perfect.

Ha havido,

There has been.

Plusperfect.

Havía havido.

There had been.

Future.

Havrá,

There will, or shall be.

Second

Second Future.

Há de haver, *There must be.*

and so of the other Futures.

Imperative.

Háya, *Let there be.*

Optative. Present.

Oxalá que háya, *God grant that there be.*

Imperfect.

Que huviéra, &c. *That there might be.*

Perfect.

Que háya havido, *That there hath been.*

Plusperfect.

Que huviéra havido, *That there had been.*

Future.

Que huviere, *That there shall be, &c.*

The *Spanish* is perfect *Latin* in the Expressions of the impersonal Verbs, which manner cannot be found in the *English*, *French*, and other Languages; the *English* being obliged to add *there*, or *it*, and the *French* *il*, &c. and this in all the Impersonals throughout all the Conjugations.

Examples.

Hai un hombre que me espéra abáxo para ir à la Comédia, *There is a Man that stays for me below to go to the Play-house.*

Havía cien foldádos enla Emboscáda, *There were one hundred Soldiers in the Ambush.*

No había mas que treinta y dos, *There were no more than thirty-two.*
Que háya ò no háya póco importa, *that there be, or not, is but of little Importance, &c.*

Ser, *To be, as in what concerns the Essence, or Qualities of a Thing, &c.*

Indicative.

Pres. Es, no es

Imperf. éra,

Perf. Fué,

*It is, it is not.**It was.**It hath been.*

and so in the other Tenses.

Examples.

Es nóche, or es de nóche,

Es verdad,

Era así,

Que sea ò no sea, que se me da, *That it be, or not be, what is it to me.**It is Night.**It is true.**It was so.*

In the same manner is conjugated the Verb *Ser Menestér*, to be necessary, or requisite, as

Es Menestér, que yo váya à vér la Ciudad the *Londres*, pues es un Mundo pequeño, enque florécen todas las Artes y Ciéncias que están divididas por las quátro partes de el Mundo, *It is necessary that I go to see the City of London, because it is a little World, in which all the Arts and Sciences that are divided in the four Parts of the World do flourish.*

Será Menestér, que Pedro y Juan se avengan, *It will be necessary or requisite, that Peter and John agree together.*

Si fuéra Menester, yo viniéra, *I would come if it should be requisite or necessary, &c.*

The Verb Impersonal Placer, To please.

Indicative Mood.

<i>Pres. Pláce,</i>	<i>It pleases.</i>
<i>Imperf. Placia,</i>	<i>It did please.</i>
<i>First Perf. Plúgo,</i>	<i>It pleased.</i>
<i>Second Perf. Ha Placido,</i>	<i>It has pleased.</i>

and so in the other Tenses.

Imperative.

Pléga,	Let it please, &c.
--------	--------------------

Llover, To Rain.

Lluéve,	<i>It rains.</i>
Llovía,	<i>It did rain, &c.</i>

Heder, To Stink.

Hiéde,	<i>It stinks.</i>
Hedía,	<i>It did stink, &c.</i>

Olér, To smell.

This Verbs changes *o* into *bue*, in the Present Tenses, as

Huéle,	<i>It smells.</i>
Huéla,	<i>Let it smell.</i>
Que huéla,	<i>That it may smell, &c.</i>

Acontecér, acaecér, To happen.

Acontéce,	<i>It happens, &c.</i>
-----------	----------------------------

Pertenecér, To belong.

Pertenéce,	<i>It belongs, &c.</i>
	Enough

Enough of the Impersonal Actives, let us now put an Example of the Impersonal Passive.

Leérse, To be read.

Se Lee,	<i>It is reading.</i>
Se Leía,	<i>It was reading.</i>
Se Leyó,	<i>It has been read, &c.</i>

And so are conjugated *establecérse*, to be established or ordered by Parliament, &c.

Se establece,	<i>It is established.</i>
Se establecía,	<i>It was establishing.</i>
Se estableció	<i>It has been established, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative</i> , Establecáse,	<i>Let it be established, &c.</i>

Sabérse, To be known.

Se sabe, or sábese,	<i>It is known.</i>
Se sabía, or sabíase,	<i>It was known.</i>
Se supo, or supose,	<i>It has been known, &c.</i>
<i>Imperative</i> , Sépase,	<i>Let it be known, &c.</i>

N. B. That all the Verbs regular or irregular of the Second Conjugation, may be conjugated in the same manner as those of the first Conjugation by the auxiliar Verb *estár*, and the Gerund of the Verb: as,

Present Tense. Indicative.

Sing.	{ Léo, or estoi Leyendo Lees, or estás Leyendo Lee, or está Leyendo	} <i>I read, or I am reading, &c.</i>
Plur.	{ Leemos, or estamos Leyendo Leéis, or estáis Leyendo Léen, or están Leyendo	

and so in the rest of the Moods and Tenses.

Of Verbs Regular of the third Conjugation
in ir, as

Subir, *To go up or ascend.*

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Súbo	}	<i>I go up or ascend, &c.</i>	
		Súbes			
		Súbe			
Plur.		Subimos			
		Subís			
		Suben			

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Subía	}	<i>I was going up, &c.</i>	
		Subías			
		Subía			
Plur.		Subíamos			
		Subíadeis, or subíais			
		Subían			

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Subí	}	<i>I went up or ascended, &c.</i>
		Subíste		
		Subió		
Plur.	{	Subímos	}	
		Subísteis		
		Subieron		

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or h́uve	}	Sub́ido,	{	<i>I have gone up or ascended, &c.</i>
		Has				
		Ha				
Plur.	{	H́emos	}			
		Hav́eis				
		Han				

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Subído,	{	<i>I had gone up or ascend- ed, &c.</i>
		Havía				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos	}			
		Haviádeis				
		Havian				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Subiré	}		{	<i>I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.</i>			
		Subirás							
		Subirá							
Plur.	{	Subiremos	}						
		Subiréis							
		Subirán							

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or téngo de subir	}	<i>I am to or must go up or ascend, &c.</i>
		Has de subir		
		Ha de subir		
Plur.	{	Hémos de subir	}	
		Havéis de subir		
		Han de subir		

The Third and Fourth Future as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Súbe tu	}	<i>Go you up or ascend</i>
		Súba el		<i>Let him go up or ascend</i>
Plur.	{	Subámos nosotros	}	<i>Let us go up or ascend</i>
		Subid vosotros		<i>Do ye go up or ascend</i>
		Súban ellos		<i>Let them go up or ascend</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, God grant, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Súba	} <i>When or God grant I do go up or ascend, &c.</i>
		Súbas	
		Súba	
Plur.	{	Subámos	
		Subáis	
		Súban	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Subiera, subiése, or subiría	} <i>When, or would to God I did go up or ascend, &c.</i>
		Subieras, subieses, or subirías	
		Subiera, subiése, or subiría	
Plur.	{	Subiéramos, subiésemos, or subiríamos	
		Subierades, subiéssedes, or subiriades	
		Subieran, subiesen, or subirían	

Præterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya	} Subido, { <i>When, or God grant I have gone up or ascended, &c.</i>
		Háyas	
		Háya	
Plur.	{	Hayámos	
		Hayáis	
		Háyan	

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviése	} Subido, { <i>When, or would to God I had gone up or ascended, &c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviésses	
		Huviéra, or huviése	
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviésemos	
		Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis	
		Huviéran, or huviéssen	

First Future.

Sing.	{	Subiére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will go up or ascend, &c.</i>
		Subiéres		
		Subiére		
Plur.	{	Subiéremos	}	
		Subiéredeis		
		Subiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Subído,	{	When, or God grant
		Huviéres				I shall have gone
		Huviére				up or ascended,
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}		{	&c.
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Subír, *To go up or ascend.*

Preterperfect.

Havér subído, *To have gone up or ascended.*

Future Tense.

Havér or esperar de subír, *To be to go up or ascend hereafter.*

Gerund.

Subiéndó, *Going up or ascending.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que súbe, *Going up or ascending.*

Participle Passive.

Subído, *Gone up or ascended.*

In

In the same manner all other Regular Verbs of the third Conjugation in *ir*, are conjugated; as *Sufrir*, to suffer, *Hinchir*, or *Henchir*, to fill, &c.

These four Verbs, *Abrir*, to open, *Cubrir*, to cover, *Descubrir*, to uncover, and *Encubrir*, to conceal, are Regular, except only in the second Preterperfect Tense; which, instead of *Abrido*, as other Verbs of this Sort, is *Abierto*, *Cubierto*, *Descubierto*, and *Encubierto*. Next follow

*The Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation,
in ir, as*

Venir, To come.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Vengo	I come
		Vienes	You come
		Viene	He comes
Plur.	{	Venimos	We come
		Venis	Ye come
		Vienen	They come

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Venia	} I did come, &c.
		Venias	
		Venia	
Plur.	{	Veniamos	
		Veníadeis, or veníais	
		Venían	

174 The RUDIMENTS of

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	Vine	I came
	Veniste	You came
Plur.	Vino	He came
	Venimos	We came
	Venisteis	Ye came
	Venieron	They came

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	He, or hube	Venido,	I have come, &c.
	Has		
	Ha		
Plur.	Hemos		
	Havéis		
	Han		

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	Havia	Venido,	I had come, &c.
	Havias		
	Havia		
Plur.	Havíamos		
	Haviádeis		
	Havían		

First Future.

Sing.	Vendré, or verné	I shall, or will come, &c.
	Vendrás, or vernás	
	Vendrá, or verná	
Plur.	Vendremos, or vernémos	
	Vendréis, or verneis	
	Vendrán, or vernán	

Second Future.

Sing.	He, or tengo de venir	I am to, or must come, &c.
	Has de venir	
	Ha de venir	
Plur.	Hemos de venir	
	Havéis de venir	
	Han de venir	

The Third and Fourth as in the other Verbs.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ven tu	<i>Do you come, or come thou</i>
		Venga el	<i>Let him come</i>
		Vengamos nosotros	<i>Let us come</i>
Plur.	{	Venid vosotros	<i>Do ye come, or let ye come</i>
		Vengan ellos	<i>Let them come</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

{ *Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.*
When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Venga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do come, &c.</i>
		Vengas		
		Venga		
Plur.	{	Vengamos		
		Vengáis		
		Vengan		

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Viniéra, viniéſſe, vernía, or vendría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did come, &c.</i>
		Viniéras, viniéſſes, vernías, or vendrías		
		Viniéra, viniéſſe, vernía, or vendría		
Plur.	{	Viniéramos, viniéſſemos, verníamos, or vendríamos		
		Viniéradeis, viniéſſedeis, verníadeis, or vendríadeis		
		Viniéran, viniéſſen, vernían, or vendrían		

Preter-

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Háya Háyas Háya	} Venido,	{ <i>When, or God grant I have come, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Hayámos Hayáis Háyan		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviéra, or huviéſſe Huviéras, or huviéſſes Huviéra, or huviéſſe	} Venido,	{ <i>When, or would to God I had come, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis Huvierán, or huviéſſen		

First Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Viniére Viniéres Viniére	}	{ <i>When, or God grant I ſhall, or will come, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Viniéremos Viniéredeis Viniéren		

Second Future.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Huviére, or havré Huviéres, Huviére	} Venido	{ <i>When, or God grant I ſhall or have come, &c.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Huviéremos Huviéredeis Huviéren		

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Venir,

To come.

Future.

Future,

Havér de venir,

To be to come.

Gerund.

Viniendo,

Coming.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que viene,

He that comes.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Venido,

Come.

The Compounds of this Verb *Venir*, are declined in every respect in all Moods and Tenses throughout as their original; as *Revenir*, to return, *Revengo*, *Revine*, &c. *Convenir*, to agree, *Convengo*, *Convine*, &c. *Devenir*, to become, *Devengo*, *Devine*, &c. *Sobrevénir*, to come upon suddenly, *Sobrevengo*, *Sobrevine*, &c.

The Irregular Verb, Decir, To say.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing. { Digo
Dices
Dice
Plur. { Decimos
Decís
Dicen

I say
You say
He says
We say
Ye say
They say

N

Preter-

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Decía		<i>I did say</i>
		Decías		<i>You did say</i>
		Decía		<i>He did say</i>
Plur.	{	Decíamos		<i>We did say</i>
		Decíadeis, or decíais		<i>Ye did say</i>
		Decían		<i>They did say</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Dixe		<i>I said</i>
		Dixiste		<i>You said</i>
		Dixo		<i>He said</i>
Plur.	{	Diximos		<i>We said</i>
		Dixisteis		<i>Ye said</i>
		Dixéron		<i>They said</i>

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or huvé dicho		<i>I have said</i>
		Has dicho		<i>You have said</i>
		Ha dicho		<i>He has said</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos dicho		<i>We have said</i>
		Havéis dicho		<i>Ye have said</i>
		Han dicho		<i>They have said</i>

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	Dicho,	{	<i>I had said</i>
		Havías			<i>You had said</i>
		Havía			<i>He had said</i>
Plur.	{	Havíamos		{	<i>We had said</i>
		Haviadeis			<i>Ye had said</i>
		Havian			<i>They had said</i>

First Future.

Sing.	{	Diré		<i>I shall or will say</i>
		Dirás		<i>You shall or will say</i>
		Dirá		<i>He shall or will say</i>
Plur.	{	Dirémos		<i>We shall or will say</i>
		Diréis		<i>Ye shall or will say</i>
		Dirán		<i>They shall or will say</i>

Second

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de decir	<i>I am to or must say</i>
		Has de decir	<i>You are to or must say</i>
		Ha de decir	<i>He is to or must say</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos de decir	<i>We are to or must say</i>
		Havéis de decir	<i>Ye are to or must say</i>
		Han de decir	<i>They are to or must say</i>

the rest as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Di tu, or dice tu	<i>Do thou say</i>
		Diga el	<i>Let him say</i>
Plur.	{	Digámos nosotros	<i>Let us say</i>
		Déid vosotros	<i>Do ye say</i>
	{	Digan ellos	<i>Let them say</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Diga	}	<i>When, or God grant I do say, &c.</i>
		Digas		
		Diga		
Plur.	{	Digámos		
		Digáis		
	{	Digan		

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dixera, dixesse, diría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did say, &c.</i>
		Dixeras, dixesses, dirías		
		Dixera, dixesse, diría		
Plur.	{	Dixéramos, dixésemos, diríamos		
		Dixéradeis, dixéssedeis, diríadeis		
	{	Dixéran, dixéssen, dirían		

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Háya dicho	}	<i>When, or God grant I have said, &c.</i>
		Háyas dicho		
		Háya dicho		
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Hayámos dicho		
		Hayáis dicho		
		Hayán dicho		

First and Second Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Dicho,	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to God
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				I had ſaid,
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}		{	&c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Dixére	}	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall or will ſay, &c.</i>
		Dixéras		
		Dixére		
Plur.	{	Dixéremos	}	
		Dixéredeis		
		Dixéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Dicho,	{	<i>When, or God grant I ſhall have ſaid, &c.</i>
		Huviéres				
Huviére						
Plur.	{	Huviéremos				
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dec'r,

To ſay.

Preter-

Preterperfect Tense.

Havér dicho,

To have said.

Future Tense.

Avér de decir,

To be to say hereafter.

Gerund.

Diciendo,

Saying.

Participle Active of the Present Tense.

El que dice,

One saying.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dicho,

Said.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or esperá de decir,

He that is to say hereafter.

The Compounds of this Verb *Decir*, in all Points, through all Moods and Tenses, are declined like the Simple, as,

Bendecir, *to bless,*
Maldecir, *to curse,*
Desdecir, *to unsay,*

Bendigo,
Maldigo,
Desdigo,

Bendixe.
Maldixe.
Desdixe.

The Irregular Verb, Ir, To go.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Vói		I go
		Vas		You go
		Va		He goes
Plur.	{	Vámos		We go
		Váis		Ye go
		Van		They go

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	'Iba		I did go
		'Ibas		You did go
		'Iba		He did go
Plur.	{	'Ibamos		We did go
		'Ibais		Ye did go
		'Iban		They did go

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Fuí		I went
		Fuíste		You went
		Fué		He went
Plur.	{	Fuímos		We went
		Fuísteis		Ye went
		Fuéron		They went

Second and third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or huye	}	{	'Ido,	{	<i>I have gone, &c.</i>
		Has					
		Ha					
Plur.	{	Hémos	}				
		Havéis					
		Han					

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	'Ido,	{	<i>I had gone, &c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
		Havíamos				
Plur.	{	Haviádeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Iré	}	<i>I shall or will go, &c.</i>
		Irás		
		Irá		
		Irémos		
Plur.	{	Iréis		
		Irán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de ir	}	<i>I must or am to go, &c.</i>
		Has de ir		
		Ha de ir		
		Hémos de ir		
Plur.	{	Havéis de ir		
		Han de ir		

the Rest of the Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Ve tu	<i>Do you go</i>
		Váya el	<i>Let him go</i>
		Vámos nosotros	<i>Let us go</i>
Plur.	{	Id vosotros	<i>Do ye go</i>
		Váyan ellos	<i>Let them go</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood,

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá,*
When, Though, Would to God,

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Váya Váyas Váya Váyamos	}	When, or God grant I do, &c.
Plur.	{	Váyais Váyan	}	

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Fuéra, fuéste, iría Fuéras, fuésses, irías Fuéra, fuéste, iría Fuéramos, fuéssemos, iríamos	}	When, or would to God I did go, &c.
Plur.	{	Fuéradeis, fuéssedeis, iríadeis Fuéran, fuéssen, irían	}	

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya Háyas Háya Hayámos	}	ido,	{	When, or God grant I have gone, &c.
Plur.	{	Hayáis Háyan	}		}	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéste Huviéras, or huviésses Huviéra, or huviéste Huviéramos, or huviéssemos	}	ido,	{	When, or would to God I had gone, &c.
Plur.	{	Huviéradeis, or huviéssedeis Huviéran, or huviéssen	}			

First

First Future.

Sing.	}	Fuere	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will go, &c.</i>
		Fueres		
		Fuere		
Plur.		Fuéremos		
		Fuéreideis		
		Fuéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviere, or havré	}	ido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have gone, &c.</i>
		Huviéres				
		Huviere				
Plur.	{	Huviéremos	}			
		Huviéredeis				
		Huviéren				

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Ir, *To go.*

Preterperfect.

Haver ido, *To have gone.*

Future Tense.

Havér de ir, *To be to go hereafter.*

Gerund.

Yéndo, *Going.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que va, *He that is going.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

ido, *Gone.*

The

The Irregular Verb, Oír, To hear.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	'Oigo	<i>I hear</i>
		'Oyes	<i>You hear</i>
		Oye	<i>He hears</i>
		Oimos	<i>We hear</i>
Plur.	{	Ois	<i>Ye hear</i>
		'Oyen	<i>They hear</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Oía	<i>I did hear</i>
		Oías	<i>You did hear</i>
		Oía	<i>He did hear</i>
		Oíamos	<i>We did hear</i>
Plur.	{	Oíais	<i>Ye did hear</i>
		Oían	<i>They did hear</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Oí	<i>I heard</i>
		Oíste	<i>You heard</i>
		Oyó	<i>He heard</i>
		Oímos	<i>We heard</i>
Plur.	{	Oísteis	<i>Ye heard</i>
		Oyéron	<i>They heard</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or huvé	}	Oído,	{	<i>I have heard,</i>
		Has				<i>&c.</i>
		Ha				
		Hémos				
Plur.	{	Havéis	}		{	
		Han				

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Oído,	{	<i>I had heard, &c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Haviádeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Oiré	}	<i>I shall, or will hear, &c.</i>
		Oirás		
		Oirá		
Plur.	{	Oirámos		
		Oiréis		
		Oirán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de oír	}	<i>I must, or am to hear, &c.</i>
		Has de oír		
		Ha de oír		
Plur.	{	Hémos de oír		
		Havéis de oír		
		Han de oír		

the Third and Fourth as in other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	'Oye tu	<i>Do you hear</i>
		'Oiga aquél	<i>Let him hear</i>
Plur.	{	Oigámos nosotros	<i>Let us hear</i>
		Oíd vosotros	<i>Do ye hear</i>
		'Oigan aquéllos	<i>Let them hear</i>

Subjunctive

Subjunctive and Optative Moods with the Signs.

{ *Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.*
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	'Oiga 'Oigas 'Oiga	}	When, or God grant I do hear, &c.
Plur.	{	Oigámos Oigáis 'Oigan	}	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Oyéra, oyéffe, or oiría Oyéras, oyéffes, or oirías Oyéra, oyéffe, or oiría	}	When, or would to God I did hear, &c.
Plur.	{	Oyéramos, oyéffemos, or oiríamos Oyéradeis, oyéffedeis, or oríadeis Oyéran, oyéffen, or oirían	}	

Preterperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Háya Háyas Háya	}	Oído, { When, or God grant I have heard, &c.
Plur.	{	Hayámos Hayáis Háyan	}	

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéffe Huviéras, or huviéffes Huviéra, or huviéffe	}	Oído, { When, or would to God I had heard, &c.
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéffemos Huviéradeis, or huviéffedeis Huviarán, or huviéffen	}	

First Future.

Sing.	{	Oyére	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall, or will bear, &c.</i>
		Oyéres		
		Oyére		
Plur.	{	Oyéremos		
		Oyéredeis		
		Oyéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Oído,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have heard, &c.</i>				
		Huviéres,								
Huviére										
Huviéremos										
Plur.		Huviéredeis								
		Huviéren								

Infinitive Mood.

Present.

Oír, *To hear.*

Preterperfect.

Havér oído, *To have heard.*

Future.

Havér de oír, *To be to hear hereafter.*

Gerund.

Oyendo, *Hearing.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Oyente, or el que óye, *He that is hearing.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Oído, *Heard.*

The

The Irregular Verb, Herir, To hurt or wound.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

<i>Sing.</i>	{	Hiéro	<i>I wound</i>
		Hiéres	<i>You wound</i>
		Hiére	<i>He wounds</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{	Herímos	<i>We wound</i>
		Herís	<i>Ye wound</i>
		Hiéren	<i>They wound</i>

All the other Tenses of the Indicative Mood are as in Verbs Regular ; as

Preterimperfect.

Hería, Herías, &c.

I did wound, &c.

First Preterperfect.

Herí, Heriste, &c.

I wounded, &c.

Second Preterperfect.

He, has, &c. herído,

I have wounded, &c.

Preterpluperfect.

Navía, havías, &c. herído,

I had wounded, &c.

First Future.

Heriré, Herirás, &c.

I will or shall wound, &c.

Second Future.

He or tengo, &c. de herir,

I, &c. am to or must wound, &c.

Imperative

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Hiére tu	<i>Do you strike or wound</i>
	{	Hiéra el	<i>Let him strike or wound</i>
Plur.	{	Hirámos nosotros	<i>Let us strike or wound</i>
	{	Herid vosotros	<i>Do ye strike or wound</i>
	{	Hiéran ellos	<i>Let them strike or wound</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Oxalá, Aunque.
When, God grant, Though.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Hiéra	} <i>When, or God grant I do wound, &c.</i>
	{	Hiéras	
	{	Hiéra	
Plur.	{	Hirámos	
	{	Hiráis	
	{	Hiéran	

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Hiriéra, hiriéſſe, or heriría	} <i>When, or would to God I did wound, &c.</i>
	{	Hiriéras, hiriéſſes, or herirías	
	{	Hiriéra, hiriéſſe, or heriría	
Plur.	{	Hiriéramos, hiriéſſemos, or heriríamos	
	{	Hiriéradeis, hiriéſſedeis, or heriríadeis	
	{	Hiriéran, hiriéſſen, or herirían	

Future.

Sing.	{	Hiriére	} <i>When, or would to God I ſhall or will wound, &c.</i>
	{	Hiriéres	
	{	Hiriére	
Plur.	{	Hiriéremos	
	{	Hiriéredeis	
	{	Hiriéren	

The other Tenses as in Regular Verbs. The Infinitive Mood the ſame. The Gerund *Hiriéndo*, Wounding.

The

*The Irregular Verbs, Dormir, to sleep, and
Morir, to dye.*

Dormir, To sleep.

Indicative Mood,

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Duérmo	<i>I sleep</i>
		Duérmes	<i>You sleep</i>
		Duérne	<i>He sleeps</i>
Plur.	{	Dormimos	<i>We sleep</i>
		Dormís	<i>Ye sleep</i>
		Duérmén	<i>They sleep</i>

Preterimperfect.

Sing.	{	Dormía	<i>I did sleep</i>
		Dormías	<i>You did sleep</i>
		Dormia	<i>He did sleep</i>
Plur.	{	Dormíamos	<i>We did sleep</i>
		Dormíadeis	<i>Ye did sleep</i>
		Dormían	<i>They did sleep</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Dormí	<i>I slept</i>
		Dormíste	<i>You slept</i>
		Durmió	<i>He slept</i>
Plur.	{	Dormimos	<i>We slept</i>
		Dormísteis	<i>Ye slept</i>
		Durmieron	<i>They slept</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube dormido	<i>I have slept</i>
		Has dormido	<i>You have slept</i>
		Ha dormido	<i>He has slept</i>
Plur.	{	Hémos dormido	<i>We have slept</i>
		Havéis dormido	<i>Ye have slept</i>
		Han dormido	<i>They have slept</i>

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Dormido,	{	<i>I had slept, &c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.	{	Havíamos				
		Havíadeis				
		Havían				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Dormiré	}	<i>I shall or will sleep, &c.</i>
		Dormirás		
		Dormirá		
Plur.	{	Dormiremos		
		Dormiréis		
		Dormirán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He, or tengo de dormir	}	<i>I am to or must sleep, &c.</i>
		Has de dormir		
		Ha de dormir		
Plur.	{	Hémos de dormir		
		Havéis de dormir		
		Han de dormir		

The other Futures as in the other Verbs.

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Duérme tu	<i>Do you sleep</i>
		Duérma	<i>Let him sleep</i>
		Durmámos	<i>Let us sleep</i>
Plur.	{	Dormid	<i>Do ye sleep</i>
		Duértan	<i>Let them sleep</i>

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.
When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Duéрма	}	<i>When, or God grant I do sleep, &c.</i>
		Duérmás		
		Duéрма		
Plur.	{	Durmámos		
		Durmáis		
		Duéрман		

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Durmiéra, durmiéſſe, or dormiría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did sleep, &c.</i>	
		Durmiéras, durmiéſſes, or dormirías			
Durmiéra, durmiéſſe, or dormiría					
Plur.		Durmiéramos, durmiéſſemos, or dormiríamos			
		Durmiéradeis, durmiéſſedeis, or dormiríadeis			
		Durmiéran, durmiéſſen, or dormirían			

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya dormído	}	<i>When, or God grant I have slept, &c.</i>
		Háyas dormído		
		Máya dormído		
Plur.	{	Hayámos dormído		
		Hayáis dormído		
		Háyan dormído		

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Dormído,	{	<i>When, or would to God I had ſlept, &c.</i>
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}			
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Durmière	}	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will sleep, &c.</i>
		Durmières		
		Durmière		
Plur.	{	Durmiéremos		
		Durmiéredeis		
		Durmiéren		
		Durmiéren		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	Huviére, or havré	}	Dormido,	{	<i>When, or God grant I shall or will have slept, &c.</i>	
		Huviéres					
Huviére							
Plur.		Huviéremos					
		Huviéredeis					
		Huvién					

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Dormir, *To sleep.*

Preterperfect.

Havér dormido, *To have slept.*

Future Tense.

Havér de dormir, *To be to sleep.*

Gerund.

Durmiendo, *Sleeping.*

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

Dormiente, or el que Duérme, *He that is sleeping.*

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Dormido, *Slept.*

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que ha, or espéra de dormir, *About to sleep hereafter.*

Morir,

To dye.

Indicative Mood.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Muero	<i>I dye</i>
		Mueres	<i>You dye</i>
		Muere	<i>He dyes</i>
Plur.	{	Morimos	<i>We dye</i>
		Moris	<i>Ye dye</i>
		Mueren	<i>They dye</i>

Preterimperfect Tense.

Sing.	{	Moria	<i>I did dye</i>
		Morias	<i>You did dye</i>
		Moria	<i>He did dye</i>
Plur.	{	Moriamos	<i>We did dye</i>
		Moriais	<i>Ye did dye</i>
		Morian	<i>They did dye</i>

First Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Mori	<i>I dy'd</i>
		Moriste	<i>You dy'd</i>
		Murió	<i>He dy'd</i>
Plur.	{	Morimos	<i>We dy'd</i>
		Moristeis	<i>Ye dy'd</i>
		Muriéron	<i>They dy'd</i>

Second and Third Preterperfects.

Sing.	{	He, or hube muerto	<i>I have dy'd</i>
		Has muerto	<i>You have dy'd</i>
		Ha muerto	<i>He has dy'd</i>
Plur.	{	Hemos muerto	<i>We have dy'd</i>
		Havéis muerto	<i>Ye have dy'd</i>
		Han muerto	<i>They have dy'd</i>

Preter-

Preterpluperfect.

Sing.	{	Havía	}	Muerto,	{	<i>I had dy'd, &c.</i>
		Havías				
		Havía				
Plur.		Havíamos				
		Haviadeis				
		Havian				

First Future.

Sing.	{	Moriré	}	<i>I shall, or will dye,</i> <i>&c.</i>
		Morirás		
		Morirá		
Plur.		Morirémos		
		Moriréis		
		Morirán		

Second Future.

Sing.	{	He or tengo de morir	}	<i>I am to, or must dye, &c.</i>
		Has de morir		
		Ha de morir		
Plur.		Hémos de morir		
		Havéis de morir		
		Han de morir		

Imperative Mood.

Sing.	{	Muére	{	<i>Do you dye</i> <i>Let him dye</i> <i>Let us dye</i> <i>Do ye dye</i> <i>Let them dye</i>
		Muéra		
		Murámos		
Plur.		Morid		
		Muéran		

Subjunctive and Optative Mood.

Cómo, Aunque, Oxalá.

When, Though, Would to God.

Present Tense.

Sing.	{	Muéra	}	<i>When, or God grant I do dye, &c.</i>
		Muéras		
		Muéra		
Plur.	{	Murámos	}	
		Muráis		
		Muéran		

Three Preterimperfects.

Sing.	{	Muriéra, muriéſſe, or mori- ría	}	<i>When, or would to God I did dye, &c.</i>
		Muriéras, muriéſſes, or mori- rias		
		Muriéra, muriéſſe, or mori- ría		
Plur.	{	Muriéramos, muriéſſemos, or moriríamos	}	
		Muriéradeis, muriéſſedeis, or moriríadeis		
		Muriéran, muriéſſen, or mori- rían		

Preterperfect.

Sing.	{	Háya muérto	}	<i>When, or God grant I have dy'd, &c.</i>
		Háyas muérto		
		Háya muérto		
Plur.	{	Hayámos muérto	}	
		Hayáis muérto		
		Háyan muérto		

Two Preterpluperfects.

Sing.	{	Huviéra, or huviéſſe	}	Muérto,	{	When, or
		Huviéras, or huviéſſes				would to
		Huviéra, or huviéſſe				God I had
Plur.	{	Huviéramos, or huviéſſemos	}		{	dy'd, &c.
		Huviéradeis, or huviéſſedeis				
		Huviéran, or huviéſſen				

First

First Future.

Sing.	Muriere	} When, or God grant I shall, or will dye, &c.
	Muriéres	
Plur.	Muriere	
	Muriéremos	
	Muriéredeis	
	Muriéren	

Second Future.

Sing.	Huviere, or havré	} Muerto, { When, or God grant I shall, or will have dy'd, &c.
	Huviéres	
Plur.	Huviere	
	Huíéremos	
	Huíéredeis	
	Huíéren	

Infinitive Mood.

Present Tense.

Morir, To dye.

Preterperfect.

Havér muerto, To have dy'd.

Future Tense.

Havér de morir, To be to dye.

Gerund.

Muriendo, Dying.

Participle of the Present Tense and Active Voice.

El que muere, He that is dying.

Participle of the Preter Tense and Passive Voice.

Muerto, Dyed.

Participle of the Future Tense.

El que há, or espéra de morir, About to dye hereafter.

200 The RUDIMENTS of

The following Irregular Verbs of the third Conjugation, change *e* of the Penultima or last Syllable but one of the infinitive Mood into *i*, in the first, second, and third Persons singular, and the third Person plural of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood ; the second and third Persons singular, and the first and third plural of the Imperative Mood ; and throughout the Present Tense of the Optative and Subjunctive Moods ; thus,

Servir, to serve, *Sirvo*, I serve, *Sírves*, *Sírve*, *Servimos*, *Servís*, *Sírven*. Imperative, *Sírve*, *Sirvá*, *Sirvámos*, *Servíd*, *Sírvan*. Optative and Subjunctive, *Sírva*, *Sírvas*, &c. All other Tenses in each Mood as the regular Verbs. The others that are conjugated after this manner ; are,

<i>Reír</i> , To laugh,	<i>Río</i> , I laugh,	<i>Ríes</i> , <i>Rie</i> , &c.
<i>Concebir</i> , To conceive,	<i>Concibo</i> , I conceive,	<i>Concíbes</i> , <i>Concibe</i> , &c.
<i>Gemir</i> , To sigh,	<i>Gímo</i> , I sigh,	<i>Gímes</i> , <i>Gíme</i> , &c.

The next that follow add *i* before *e* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above ; as

<i>Advertir</i> , To take notice,	<i>Advierto</i> , I take notice,	<i>Adviertes</i> , &c.
<i>Arrepentir</i> , To repent,	<i>Arrepiento</i> , I repent,	<i>Arrepientes</i> , &c.
<i>Consentir</i> , To consent,	<i>Consiento</i> , I consent,	<i>Consientes</i> , &c.
<i>Mentir</i> , To lie,	<i>Miento</i> , I lie,	<i>Mientes</i> , &c.

The Verbs *Elegir*, To chuse, and *Regir*, To rule, change *eg* into *ij* in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above ; thus *Elegir*, *Elíjo* ; *Regir*, *Ríjo*.

Fingir, To feign, and *Ungir*, To anoint, in the same manner make *Finjo*, and *Unjo*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mention'd.

Seguir, To follow, makes *Sigo*, *Sígues*, *Sigue*, and so in the other Moods, Tenses, and Persons, as above.

These that follow in the same Moods, Tenses, and Persons above mentioned, are conjugated as here noted.

Conducir,

Conducir, To conduct, *Conduzgo*, *Conduces*, *Conduce*, *Conducimos*, *Conducís*, *Conducen*. Preterperfect, *Conduxe*, *Conduxiste*, &c. Optative and Subjunctive, Present, *Conduzga*. Preterimperfect, *Conduxera*, or *Conduxesse*. Future, *Conduxere*. In the same manner, *Introducír*, *Inducír*, *Traducír*, and *Producír*.

Salír, To go out. Present, Indicative. *Sálgo*, *Sáles*, *Sále*, *Salimos*, *Salís*, *Sálen*. Imperative Mood, *Sal*, or *Sále*, *Sálga*, *Salgámos*, *Salid*, *Sálgan*. Optative and Subjunctive Present, *Sálga*, *Sálgas*, &c. The rest Regular,

Of Verbs Passive, Ser oído, To be heard.

Indicative.

	Present.		Imperfect.	
Sing.	{ Sói oído Eres oído Es oído Sómos oídos Sóis oídos Son oídos	} <i>I am heard.</i>	{ 'Era oído 'Eras oído 'Era oído 'Eramos oídos 'Erais oídos 'Eran oídos	} <i>I was heard.</i>
Plur.				

Perfect.

Sing.	{ Fuí, or hé sido oído Fuíste, or has sido oído Fué, or ha sido oído Fuimos, or hémos sido oídos Fuísteis, or haveís sido oídos Fuéron, or han sido oídos, &c.	} <i>I have been heard, &c.</i>
Plur.		

The Reciprocal thus :

Reirse, To Laugh.

Present

Present Tense.

Preterimperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me río Te ríes Se ríe	<i>I laugh.</i>	{ Me reía Te reías Se reían	<i>I was laughing.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos reímos Os reís Se ríen		{ Nos reíamos Os reíadeis Se reían, &c.	

Introducírse, To be introduced.

Present.

Imperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me introduzgo Te introduces Se introduce	<i>I am introduced.</i>	{ Me introducía Te introducías Se introducía	<i>I was introduced.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos introducimos Os introducís Se introducen		{ Nos introducíamos Os intreducíais Se introducían	

Preterperfect.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Me introduxe, or heme introducido Te introduxiste, or haste introducido Se introduxo, or hase introducido	<i>I have been introduced, or I introduced myself.</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Nos introduximos, or hemos introducido Os introduxisteis, or os havéis introducido Se introduxéron, or se han introducido	

Imperative.

<i>Sing.</i>	{ Introducete tu Introduzgase el	<i>Be introduced thou Let him be introduced</i>
<i>Plur.</i>	{ Introduzgamonos nosotros Introduced os vosotros Introduzganse aquéllos	<i>Let us be introduced Be ye introduced Let them be introduced</i>

And so in the rest of the Reciprocal, which are terminated in *se* in the Infinitive, except the Impersonal Passive.

Impersonal

Impersonal Actives.

Convenír, To be convenient, fit, or proper.

Indicative.

<i>Pres.</i> Conviene	<i>It is convenient</i>
<i>Imperf.</i> Convenía	<i>It was convenient</i>
<i>First Perf.</i> Convino	} <i>It has been convenient</i>
<i>Second Perf.</i> Ha convenido	
<i>Plusperf.</i> Havía convenido	<i>It had been convenient</i>
<i>First Future,</i> Convendrá	<i>It will be convenient</i>
<i>Second Future,</i> Há de convenir	<i>It must be convenient</i>
<i>Imperative,</i> Convenga	<i>Let it be convenient, &c.</i>

Cumplír, To behave.

<i>Present.</i> Cumple	<i>It behoves.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Cumplía	<i>It did behave.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Cumplió	<i>It behoveth.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Ha cumplido	<i>It has behaved.</i>
<i>Plusperfect.</i> Havía cumplido	<i>It had behaved.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Cumplirá,	<i>It will behave.</i>

and so through the third Person of the other Moods. It is to be observed, that this Verb *Cumplír*, is given here as Impersonal, only in this Signification of *Behoving*, or *being meet* ; for *Cumplír*, when

204 *The RUDIMENTS of*
 when it signifies *to compleat, or fulfill*, is a regular
 Verb, and has all its Persons accordingly.

Of the Impersonal Passives.

Decírse, To be said.

Indicative.

<i>Present.</i> Se dice, or dícese	<i>It is said.</i>
<i>Imperfect.</i> Se decía	<i>It was said.</i>
<i>First Perfect.</i> Se dijo	<i>It was, or has been said.</i>
<i>Second Perfect.</i> Se há dicho	<i>It has been said.</i>
<i>Pluperfect.</i> Se había dicho	<i>It had been said.</i>
<i>Future.</i> Se dirá	<i>It shall, or will be said, &c.</i>

After the same Manner are conjugated,

Escribirse, To be written.

<i>Present.</i> Se escribe,	<i>It is written.</i>
-----------------------------	-----------------------

Referírse, To be related or referred.

<i>Present.</i> Se Refiere,	<i>It is related, or referred, &c.</i>
-----------------------------	--

The Verbs of this Conjugation are likewise declined by the Verb *Estar* and the Gerund, as

<i>'Oigo, or está oyendo,</i>	<i>I hear, or I am hearing.</i>
<i>Escribo, or está escribiendo,</i>	<i>I write, or I am writing.</i>
<i>Pido, or está pidiendo, &c.</i>	<i>I beg, or I am begging.</i>

There

There are likewise some few Defective Verbs in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are perfect *Latin*, viz.

Salve, hail, God save you, which is a saluting Verb, much used in their Prayers to the *Virgin Mary*, and in Poetry, and has no other Tense in *Spanish* than the Imperative.

Ave, All hail, God save you, &c. is likewise used in *Spanish*, and found in several Books in a saluting manner, but never used otherwise than at Prayers, &c.

Vále, farewell, adieu, God be with you, is much used by the *Spaniards*, especially in writing, instead of *Your most Obedient Humble Servant*; and has but two Persons in the Imperative Mood, viz. *Vále*, and *Valéte*.

This may suffice as to Verbs, the Necessity of giving an Account of the Irregulars, and Impersonals having taken up much time.

CHAP. IV.

Of Participles.

ALTHO' there has been said enough of the Participles, as to what concerns the Grammar, in the third Chapter before the Conjugation of Verbs; yet I think it proper to observe,

That this Name *Participle*, comes from the *Latin Participium*, and is so called for its partaking of the Verb and Noun, as it has been said before.

Some are Simple, and others Compound, as

Andante,
Comandante,

Docto.
Indocto.

All the *Spanish* Verbs have not the Participles Present, and of the Future ; and they are supplied by *elque*, and the third Person Singular of the Present Tense of the Indicative Mood, &c. as it is observed before.

Note, That the Participles of the Present Tense are often made Nouns in *Spanish*, as *Oyente*, *Escribiente*, *Antecedente*, &c.

CH A P. V.

Of Adverbs.

HAVING treated at large of the four declinable Parts of Speech, we now come to the four that are undeclinable ; the first of which is the Adverb, (and so called because it is joined to Verbs, to declare the manner, or the Circumstances of the Action, or Passion ; as *el Dánza*, or *Báila bien*, he dances well ; *el pudeció cruelmente*, he suffer'd cruelly : it often explains likewise the Nouns, as *un hómbré muy sábio*, a very learned Man ; *Totalmente impudente*, intirely impudent, &c.

Of Adverbs there are several Sorts, some being Primitives, as *Si*, Yes ; *No*, No, &c. Others are Derivatives, as particularly those which proceed from the Feminine Gender of Adjectives, as from *álta*, high, *altaménte*, highly ; from *graciosa*, pretty, *graciosaménte*, prettily ; or from those in *ente*, z, *al*, *il*, &c. as *prudenteménte*, prudently ; *Felizménte*, happily ; *Moralménte*, morally ; *Facilménte*, easily, &c.

There are Adverbs of Quality, of Quantity, of Time, &c. as may be seen here following,

Adverbs

Adverbs of Quality.

Fielménte, <i>faithfully</i>	Santaménte, <i>holily</i>
Buenaménte, <i>or bien, well</i>	Fieraménte, <i>fiercely, &c.</i>
Malaménte, <i>or mal, ill</i>	

And so the like may be form'd of all Adjectives.

Adverbs of Quantity.

Múcho, <i>much</i>	Pordemás, <i>to no purpose</i>
Póco, <i>little</i>	Demasiádo, <i>too much</i>
Mas, <i>more</i>	

Adverbs of Time.

Hói, <i>to day</i>	Núnca, <i>or jamás, never</i>
Ahiér, <i>yesterday</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Mañana, <i>to morrow</i>	Siempre, <i>always</i>
Antehier, <i>the day before</i>	Entónces, <i>then</i>
yesterday	Miéntas, <i>whilst</i>
Múcho ha, <i>long since</i>	Súbito, <i>or repenteménte,</i>
Póco ha, <i>lately</i>	suddenly
Ahóra, <i>now</i>	Tárde, <i>late</i>
'Antes, <i>before</i>	Tempráno, <i>early</i>
Ahún, <i>yet, even</i>	à la tarde, <i>in the evening</i>
Amenúdo, <i>often</i>	A deshora, <i>unseasonably,</i>
Luégo, <i>forthwith</i>	&c.

Adverbs of Place.

Aquí, <i>here</i>	Delánte, <i>before</i>
Allí, <i>there</i>	Atrás, <i>behind</i>
Adónde, <i>where</i>	Apárte, <i>apart, or aside</i>
De dónde, <i>from whence</i>	Arriba, <i>above</i>
Acá, <i>hither</i>	Abáxo, <i>below</i>
Acullá, <i>yonder</i>	Cérca, <i>near</i>
Ahí, <i>in that place</i>	Cábe, <i>close by</i>

De

208 *The RUDIMENTS of*

De aquí, <i>from hence</i>	Junto, <i>adjoining</i>
De allí, <i>from thence.</i>	Léxos, <i>far off</i>
Déntro, <i>within</i>	Encíma, <i>upon</i>
Fuéra, <i>without</i>	Debáxo, <i>underneath</i>

Adverbs of Affirmation.

Si, <i>yes</i>	Verdaderaménte, <i>truly</i>
Ciéрто, <i>truly</i>	También, <i>as well, also</i>
Ciertaménte, <i>certainly</i>	Antes, <i>rather</i>
En verdád, <i>in truth</i>	

Of Denying.

No, <i>no, or not</i>	Ni, <i>neither</i>
Náda, <i>nothing</i>	Tampóco, <i>neither</i>

Of Number.

Una vez, <i>once</i>	Mûchas véces, <i>often</i>
Dos véces, <i>twice</i>	Pócas véces, <i>seldom</i>
Tres véces, <i>three times</i>	Amenúdo, <i>often</i>

Of Shewing.

He aquí,	Behold here
----------	-------------

Of Encouraging.

Ea, ea pués	Go to then
-------------	------------

Of Increasing.

Mas,	More
------	------

Adverbs of Diminishing.

Ménos, <i>less</i>	Páſso, <i>soft and fair</i>
Póco, <i>little</i>	

Of

Of Wishing.

Oxalá, *would to God* O si, O if it would be

Of Asking:

Porqué, <i>why</i>	De dónde, <i>from whence</i>
Que, <i>what</i>	Quándo, <i>when</i>
Dónde, <i>where</i>	Cómo, <i>how</i>
Adónde, <i>whither</i>	

Of Doubting.

Quiza, *perhaps* Porventura, *peradventure*

Of Order.

Primeraménte, <i>firstly</i>	Aquénde, <i>on this side</i>
Después, <i>after</i>	Finalménte, <i>in fine</i>
Allénde, <i>beyond</i>	'A lo último } <i>lastly, &c.</i>
Alfin, <i>at the end</i>	'A la Póstre }
Alcábo, <i>at the end</i>	

Of Likeness.

Cómo, <i>as</i>	Así, <i>so</i>
Casi, <i>almost</i>	Tan, tanto, <i>so much, &c.</i>

Of Chance.

A caso, *accidentally.* Por dicha, *perchance*

Of Comparison.

Mas, <i>more</i>	Mejór, <i>better</i>
Ménos, <i>less</i>	Peór, <i>worse</i>

Of gathering together.

Junto, or Juntaménte	Together
A montónes	In heaps

Of Severing.

Apárte	Asunder
--------	---------

The Adverb *Hárto*, Enough, varies as to the Gender before Substantives ; for the *Spaniards* say, *Hárto Pan*, Bread enough, where it is Masculine ; and *Hárta Agua*, Water enough, where it is Feminine : But before Adjectives it always retains the Masculine Termination ; as *Hárto buéno*, and *Hárto buéna*, though *buéno* and *buéna* are Masculine and Feminine. There are some other Adverbs of the same Sort ; but it would be too tedious to mention all Things.

Note, That the Adjectives are often taken as Adverbs, and then they retain the Masculine Termination ; as *Hágase esto priméro*, let this be done first ; *póngase esto derécho*, put this right, or to rights.

C H A P. VI.

Of CONJUNCTIONS.

CONjunctions are a Part of Speech that joins Words and puts Sentences together. Some Conjunctions are Copulative, as uniting Words, and connecting the Sense ; others are Disjunctive, dividing the Sense, and only joining the Expressions ;

sions; others are conditional, shewing the Causes of Things; others Rational or Conclusive, which some call Collective or Illative; and others Adversatives, by which is demonstrated that which we say cannot hurt or obstruct. Besides these, the *Latin* hath others which they call Ordinatives, as also Expletives; but these last only serve for Ornament, for they no way add to, or take from the Discourse.

Conjunctions Copulative are *y* and *e*, signifying *and*; viz. *y* before all Words, excepting those that begin with *i* Vowel, instead of which is put *e*, as we have said in the Observation on the Vowels; *Cómo*, as; *También*, also.

Conjunctions Disjunctive are, *Ni*, neither; *O*, or; *ó*, or, either; *yá*, either, as *yá ésto*, *yá aquéllo*, either this or that.

Causative, as *Porqué*, why, wherefore.

Conditional, *Si*, if; *dádo que*, granting that.

Exceptive, as *Sinó*, if not; *mas*, but; *otraménte*, otherwise.

There are others of other Sorts, as *Aloménos*, at least; *Aunque*, although; *toda vía*, notwithstanding, nevertheless.

CH A P. VII.

Of PREPOSITIONS.

Prepositions are a Part of Speech most commonly set before other parts, either in Apposition; as *ante la justicia*, before a Justice; or else in Composition; as *disponér*, to dispose, *injústo*, unjust.

Those us'd in Composition are *a*, *ad*, *al*, *Ara- bick*, *am*, *co*, *com*, *con*, *de*, *des*, *di*, *dis*, *en*, *ex*, *in*, *ob*, *pre*, *pro*, *re*, *se*, *so*, *su*, &c.

212 *The RUDIMENTS of*

In *a*, as *Acanalár*, to cut in Gutters or Channels ; *abatanár*, to full or mill Cloth.

ad, as *Advenedíxo*, a stranger ; *advertír*, to advertise.

al, *Alcázar*, a Royal Castle or Palace ; *Alquitára*, a Limbeck.

am, *Ampáro*, Protection ; *amparádo*, protected.

co, *coberedéro*, coheir ; *co-ordinár*, to co-ordain, or ordain together.

com, *comparár*, to compare ; *comprometér*, to compromise.

con, *convenír*, to agree ; *condescendér*, to condescend.

de, *degenerár*, to degenerate ; *deponér*, to depose.

des, *desbacér*, to undo ; *desfigurádo*, disfigured.

di, *diferír*, to defer ; *difundír*, to diffuse, to spread abroad.

dis, *disculpár*, to excuse ; *disponér*, to dispose.

en, *entorpecér*, to grow dull or stupid ; *envergonzár*, to make ashamed.

ex, *exponér*, to expound, interpret ; *expandér*, to spread.

in, *Indignación*, Indignation ; *inferír*, to infer.

ob, *obtenér*, to obtain ; *obtenído*, obtained.

pre, *preponér*, to set before ; *prevenír*, to prevent.

pro, *proponér*, to propose ; *proseguír*, to prosecute.

re, *reedificár*, to rebuild ; *reponér*, to put again.

se, *separár*, to separate ; *separádo*, separated.

so, *socorrér*, to succour ; *solicitár*, to sollicite.

Su, *suponér*, to suppose ; *suportár*, to support, &c.

These Prepositions following serve to the Genitive Case.

Antes, as *Antes del día*, before Day-break.

Delánte, before, as *Delánte del Juez*, before the Judge.

De,

De, of; as *la Muger de Pédro*, Peter's Wife, that is, the Wife of Peter.

Dentro, within; as *Dentro de mi casa*, within my House.

Detrás, behind; as *detrás del Cócke*, behind the Coach.

Despues, after; as *despues de esto*, after this.

Báxo, } under; as *llevába un Coléto báxo de su capa*,
Debáxo } he had on a Buff-Coat, under his
 Cloak. *Debáxo de mi Manto*, *al Réy máto*, under my Cloak I'll kill the King.

Abáxo, down, below, is an Adverb.

Encima, upon; as *encima del Agua*, upon the Water.

Derredór, round about, as *al derredór de Castillo*, round about the Castle.

Cérca, near; as *Pedro está cerca de Juan*, Peter is near to John.

Acérca, Though formerly used as a Proposition instead of *Cérca*, it is now used only as an Adverb, and signifies *concerning*, *near*, and governs a Genitive; as *acérca de esto que dice?* what say you concerning this? *los días acérca del Nacimiento de Christo son muy frios*, the Days about or near Christmas are very cold.

Fuéra, out; as *Váya fuéra de mi Casa*, go out of my House.

Fuéra, *afuera*, without, are Adverbs.

Entórno } about; as *entorno de mi*, about me, round
Contórno } about me.

Enfrénte, over-against; as *Enfrente de san Páblo*, over-against St Pauls, &c.

The following serve for the Dative Case.

á } to, } as, *à Dios sólo se ha de dar la Adoración*,
pára } for } to God alone we must pay Worship: *dí*
 P 3 *esto*

esto à Pédro, I gave this to Peter ; *ésto es pára mi*, this is for me.

And though there are some Authors, who place here the Prepositions *bácia*, towards, and *basta*, even to ; I am of Opinion that they belong to the Accusative, because they are equivalent to the *Latin erga, versus, versum ; usque, ad, &c.* and I see no Reason to the contrary.

Prepositions governing the Accusative.

à, as *ámo à Dios*, I love God ; *voy à Róma*, I go to Rome. *Míre à tal parte*, look on such side, toward such a place, and stands *por bácia*, towards ; *à modo de Conversación*, by way of Conversation, instead of *por*, by.

Ante, before ; as *hói el doce de Júnio pareció ante mi*, this Day the twelfth of June appeared or came before me.

Entre, among, between ; as *hablando entre nosotros, le diré la diferencia, que báí entre las Córtes de Londres y Madrid*, speaking between us, (among us) I will tell you the Difference that there is between the Courts of London and Madrid.

Según, according ; as *según loque se me dixo, créo, que todo es un embuste*, according to what is told me, I believe, that every thing is a fly Lie, Deceit, Falsehood, or Imposition.

Sobre, upon, as *todo lo que tengo, lo puédo llevar sobre este Caballo*, every thing I have, I can carry it upon this Horse.

Hásta, until, even to ; as *Passearé hasta las ocho de la Nóche*, I will walk until nine a Clock in the Night ; *basta Mañana*, till to morrow, *iré hasta Roma*, I will go as far as Rome, even to Rome.

Hácia, towards ; *voyme bácia el Ríô*, I go towards the River.

Por,

Por, for, by, through; *Consuéleme por amor de Díos*, Comfort me for God's sake; *Las diez tocaron quando passaba por esta calle*, it struck ten a Clock when I went through this Street. *Le assegúro esto por mi palabra, por mi vida, por mi Fe*, I assure you this by my Word, by my Life, by my Faith. *Por* is sometimes taken for *para*, but of this we will take notice afterwards.

Cábe, near, as *Le hallé cábe la Ciudad* (*Cábe*, an old Word) I found him near the City.

En, in; as *espéro y creo en Díos*, I hope, and believe in God.

Contra, against, as *lo que hablas es tóntra los Atributos de Díos*, what you do speak is against the Attributes of God, &c.

Prepositions governing the Ablative.

à, as *creo que le Castigarán à pena de Privacion de Oficio*, I believe that they will punish him, with the Privation, or depriving him of his Office or Employment. *Lo bízo à colór de engañarnos*, he has done it with an Intention to deceive under the Colour, &c. *à* is taken here as *con*.

Con, with; *ven con mígo*, come with me.

De, as *Díos formo à Eva de la Costilla, que es buésso tuerto*, God formed Eve from the Rib, which is a crooked Bone. *Vine de Róma*, I came from Rome.

Sin, without. *Lo bice sin ayúda*, I have done it without help.

En, in; *no tengo dinéro en el Bolsillo*, I have no Money in the Purse.

Por, for, *Lo bice por ti*, I have done it for you, &c.

C H A P. VIII.

Of INTERJECTIONS.

INterjections are Parricles thrown into Discourse, which denote, or show the Passions of the Mind. Of Mirth, or Rejoycing. *A la gála, a la gála.* Which is O fine, O rare, &c.

Wondering, *Valgame Diós*, God help me, which is also usual in a Fright, and upon other Occasions. Grieving, *Guay*, Alas! or *Ay de mi!* Alas for me.

Wishing, *Oxalá*, Would to God, &c.

Ha, ah! *bé*, as *bé que dices*, he! what you say!

O, as *O Dios!* *O Dolor!* O God! O pain, or grief!

A, as *à Fuláno*, ho, there such a one, &c.

REMARKS upon some Spanish Words and Phrases.

ALL Languages have some peculiar Expressions to themselves, which are not the same in other Tongues, and the *Spanish* is not without some of that Sort. Having therefore already run through all, that belongs to the usual Parts of Discourse, and their Nature; it will not be improper to add something concerning these Words and Phrases in the *Spanish* Tongue, which are not to be found in others.

In the first place, the Preposition *Des* is inseparable from some other Word, and never to be used but

but in Composition, as signifying nothing by itself; but being join'd to another Word, denotes a Privation of what the other imports, as the Syllable *Dis* does in some *English* Words; thus *Hónra*, is Honour, *Des'hónra*, Dishonour, or Disgrace: *Dí-cha*, good Fortune, *Desdicha*, Misfortune. The same Effect it has when join'd with Verbs; as *Hacér*, to make, *Des'hacér*, to undo; *Armár*, to arm, *Desarmár*, to disarm.

En is commonly in, as *en cása*, in the House; *en la calle*, in the Street, &c. but in some Cases it has a peculiar Signification, not to be express'd in any other Language, that I know of; as for instance, *Estar en cuérpo*, literally in *English* is, to be in Body, which is nonsense; but the true Meaning of it, is, to be without a Coat or Cloak for a Man, or for a Woman without a Scarf or a Veil, so that the Body is more expos'd to View, without an upper Garment. *Está en piéernas*, literally he is in Legs, which has no Meaning, but it signifies, he is bare legg'd, that is, his Legs are expos'd without Stockings. *Estói en cárnies*, literally I am in Flesh, but the true Meaning is, I am stark naked, I have nothing to cover my Flesh. *En cuéros*, signifies the same as *En cárnies*, that is stark naked, the Difference being that *en cárnies*, is in naked Flesh, and *en cuéros*, is in naked Skin; much like the *English* Expression, that a Man is in Buff, when he is stark naked.

En shews, or it notes the last end of a Thing; as *creo en Díos*, I believe in God. When it's found before the Infinitive, then it turns the Infinitive into an *English* Gerund, as *consiste en hablár bién*, it consists or depends in speaking well. When before a Gerund, it is the same as *after* and *at* in *English*; as *en cenándo*, after Supper, or when at Supper; *en confessándo la Verdád*, after your confessing the Truth, or when you confess the Truth; it signifies *as soon*, as *en acabándo lo diré*, as soon as I have done I will tell it

it to you. *En despertando, me levantaré*, as soon as I wake, I will get up; and then it stands for *luégo*, or *tan presto que, cómo, or quando*; as *en despertando*, viz. *Quando despertare*, when I shall, or should wake.

Hidépúta in its Genuine and usual Acceptation, is the Contraction of *Hijo de púta*, Son of a Whore, a most scandalous Word in all Languages, and as such, scarce ever us'd by *Spaniards* of any Politeness, in its vulgar and true Meaning: Yet as bad as it is in itself, it is become a Sort of Exclamation, mostly us'd by vulgar People, and that in Contempt, and by way of Scorn, as *O bidepúta y que gran personage que es!* O the Son of a Whore, or the Scoundrel, what a great Person he is! to denote a mean Person, a vile Wretch, carrying himself loftily. Yet some, through Ignorance, not reflecting on the Baseness of the Expression, will let it fly without thinking even to commend any thing that surprises them, as *O bidepúta y que bien que lo ha bécho!* where that scandalous word drops without thinking, and the whole imports no more, than, O how bravely he has done it! even as among us, we too often hear a Rake say to his Friend, Damn you Tom, I'm glad to see you! thus cursing him out of meer Affection.

Hidálgo, is a Gentleman, a Man of good Birth, being a Contraction of *Hijo dalgo*, or rather *Hijo de algo*, the Son of something; that is, of a Person of note, or one remarkable for something; not for much Money, which in *Spain*, does not make a Gentleman, but for something that is honourable; as Virtue, Learning, Wisdom, or Valour.

Vuésra mercéd, (as it is said before) is generally contracted into *Usted* in speaking, and in writing express'd by these two Letters *V. M.* This is a courteous expression to be found in no other Language, being always us'd where there is any Civility, the *Spaniards* never saying you to one another, which would

would be very unmannerly ; for *Tu*, you, is only us'd from a Master to a Servant, or from a Superior to some very mean Person. Where the least respect is shown, and this practis'd even to very indifferent Persons ; they say *Vos*, ye ; and even this is not allow'd of, unless the Person so expressing himself, be much superior to the other. The common word therefore in Discourse between People of any Fashion, or good Manners is *usted*, for *Vuestra mercéd*, which has nothing to answer it in *English*, but is in the Nature of your Worship ; for in speaking to a Nobleman, they use *Vuestra Señoría*, sometimes contracted into *Usía*, your Lordship : *Vuestra Excelenciá*, your Excellency, &c. but they have not the Title of your Grace, as in *English*. There is another respectful Way of speaking, which is calling a Man by his Name, though speaking to him, *Sea servido de sentárse el Señor Don Juan*, May it please Don John to sit down, &c. Where we may also observe, that the word *Don* is also peculiar to the *Spanish*, formerly a Title more sparingly us'd, and given only to Knights, and Persons of Distinction ; but now grown common to all that can claim any thing of Gentility, but yet not to Tradesmen, and inferior Persons. *Señór*, is like the *Latin Dominus*, either Sir, or Lord, and therefore equivocal ; for they say, *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the King ; and *Si Señor*, yes Sir, to the least Gentleman ; just as we do, Sir, to the King, and to any other. Yet is *Señór*, a Lord, as has been said ; the which Difference is found by the manner of speaking ; for though in speaking they say, *Señór Don Juan*, *Señór Don Pedro*, yet a Letter must not be superscrib'd, *Al Señor Don Pedro*, unless he be a Lord ; because then it implies Dignity, and in common speaking it does not. So in speaking to say, *es un Señor*, or *es un gran Señor*, implies that he is a Lord, or a great Lord. However within a Letter, as we begin Sir, so they begin, *Mi Señor mío*, without thereby meaning to give the title of Lord, but as

if

if we should say, my good Master, or good Sir. Much more may be said to this purpose, but this Place will not allow of it; these few Instructions are convenient for Learners, that they may not only speak true *Spanish*, but with good manners, and politely.

Fulano, *zutano* or *citano*, with their Diminutives *Fulanico*, or *Fulanillo*, *zutanico* or *citanico*, and *citanillo*, are Words us'd to signify a third Person nameless, as we say, such a one, and all of them import the same: the two first being us'd to express two distinct Persons, not named, as such a one, and such a one; the first of them always us'd if only one Person be spoke of, and the second never but when there is occasion to mention two. They are often us'd in the Feminine Gender, as *Fulana*, *citana*.

Abáxo, in it's own Sense signifies below, and *Debáxo*, under; but as apply'd, the first may have the same meaning with the latter; as *De Diós abáxo yó lo híze hómbré*, under God I made him a Man. *Del Rey abáxo no ay mayor Personaje*, next the King there is no greater Person.

A vuéltas, though it seems to come from *vuélvo*, I turn, or return, signifies among; as *A vuéltas de ótras cosas le dió una cadena*: among other things he gave him a chain.

Cábo, properly signifies the end; but it extends to other meanings, as *Estói al cábo*, in one sense is, I am reduc'd to extremity, either with Sickness, or Poverty; and the same Words import, I fully understand, or I am entirely apprized of the thing. Again, *Mugér bermósa por el cábo*, is a Woman perfectly beautiful; and *Tomár la cosa muí por el cábo*, is to take a thing in the hardest sense.

Recáudo, or *Recádo*, for it is written both ways, though most commonly pronounced the latter, is a word of various Significations. *El dinero está à buen recádo*, The Money is safely plac'd, it is in good

good Hands, or safe. *Recádo pára escrivr*, the necessaries for writing. *Dile un recádo*, I deliver'd him a Message. *Buén recádo trábigo*, I come well provided. *Recádo*, is also us'd for a Subpena, and several other ways.

Aldabáda, is properly, a Knock at a Door; but *dar aldabádas*, is sometimes meant of much babling, or talking to no purpose.

A pies juntillas, is a very odd Expression, without any real Signification of it self, and yet there is a way of using it thus, *Créo à pies juntillas*, I positively believe, I am stedfast in the Belief, without asking any further Questions.

Tomár las de villa Diego, is to run away.

Hablar de chacóta, to banter, or talk idly, a word seldom us'd, but by way of Contempt of the Person it is applied to.

Dar xabón a la Rópa, to soap Linnen for washing; but *Dar un xabón a una persóna*, is what we call to rattle one, to give a severe Reprimand.

A Few Comparisons.

Mas bláncó que la Nieve, whiter than Snow.

Mas négro que la Pez, blacker than Pitch.

Mas amárgo que la Hiel, more bitter than Gaul.

Mas dulce que la Miél, sweeter than Honey.

Mas brávo que un León, fiercer than a Lyon.

Mas mánso que una ovéja, tamer than a Sheep.

Comparisons to express doing Things impracticable.

Es cómo dar con el puño en el Ciélo. That is like striking at Heaven.

Es cómo bechár lánzas en la Mar. That is like darting at the Sea.

Es cómo predicár en Desiérto. It is like preaching in a Desert.

Es cómo cogér água en Cesto. It is like drawing Water in a Basket.

Es cómo querér volár sin álas. It is like attempting to fly without Wings.

Es cómo el pérro del Horteláno, que ni cóme las berzas, ni las dexa comér a los ótros. He is like the Gardiner's Dog, that neither eat's Cabbage, nor lets others eat it. We say, like a Dog in a Manger, that will neither eat Hay, nor let the Horse eat it.

Observe, That most of the Adverbs Adjectives are turned likewise in *Spanish* by the Preposition *con*, and the Substantive, as *prudentémnte*, prudently, is the very same as *con prudéncia*, with prudence.

Atrevidaménte, boldly, *con atrevimiento*, with boldness.

Eleganteménte, elegantly.

Con elegáncia, with elegance.

Dichosaménte, happily.

Con dicha, with happiness.

Liberalménte, liberally, *con liberalidád*, with liberality, &c.

There are Degrees of Comparison among the Adverbs, as *Doctaménte*, *mas doctamente*, *doctíssimamente*, wisely.

áy, *bái*, *abí*.

There are several who make no Difference between *áy* the Interjection, *áy* the Verb, and *áy* the Adverb; but there is a vast one, in their being spelt and pronounced right. The Interjection *áy*, alas, is rightly spelt, and the Accent is to be on the *á*, and 'tis to be pronounced long; the Verb is written thus *bái*, there is but one Syllable, and to be pronounced as such: the Adverb thus *abí* there; and a strong Accent is to be put on the *i*, as *áy de mi!* *que báí muchos Atbéos* or *Atbeístas abí en Londres*, y *témo el ír*, alas for me! that there are many Atheists there

there (or in that place *London*) in *London*, and I am afraid to go.

aquí, acá, &c.

Aquí here, in the Place where one stands; *acá*, hither; *por aquí*, *por acá*, hereabouts; *abí*, there, a little farther; *allá*, thither, to that place; *acúllá*, yonder, there, in that place; *por abí por allí*, thereabouts; *por abí por allá*, on that side, that way; and they are join'd to the Prepositions *de*, from, *por*, by; as *de aquí*, *de acá*, from, hence; *de allá*, *de acúlla*, from, thence; *por aquí*, by here, by this place; *por acá*, by these Parts, in these Parts; *por allá*, by those Parts; *por acúlla*, by those other remote Parts or Places.

ánte, ántes.

Ante, before, is a Preposition, as *no conviene hablar así ánte la preséncia del Rey*, it is not fit or convenient to speak so, or thus, before the King's Presence: *ánte* is an Adverb, and is used as *ántes*, as in the Law of *la Partida* 2, Tit. 4. L. 1. but at present never used so: It signifies sometimes that which is first in time, or of a greater importance, as *ánte todas las cosas*, before all things: *ánte* signifies likewise a Buffoloe's Hide, and the Fruit Plates that are served up at Dinner or Supper before the Meat: *ántes* has likewise this last Signification.

Antes, as an Adverb, signifies the preceeding Time or Place; as *lo dixé ántes*, I said it before; *conservó los Criados en los cargos de ántes*, he kept the Servants in the same Places they had before; it is likewise a Preposition Adversative, and signifies rather, as *antes quiero morir que pecar*, I rather love to die, then to sin: It requires likewise a Genitive, as *ánte de la Muerte del Rey apareció un Cometa*,
a Comet

a Comet did appear before the Death of the King, or the King's Death.

Antes is taken as *antecedente*, preceeding, or before, as *el ejército del año ántes nos taló los Campos*, the Army of the preceeding Year spoiled, ravaged, or wasted the Fields.

Antes con antes, adverbial. *immediately*, and more than immediately, if possible; a sudden diligence, *ex improviso*, suddenly, unexpected; as it will be seen in the several Phrases that often happen in Writings.

Antes del día, before Day break; *antesque*, a Preposition conjunctive, as *antesque vayas a trabajar, véte*; *à Rezár*, before you go to Work, go to or do your Prayers.

Ante and *antes* are likewise Prepositions, and help in the Composition of some Words, but never change *e* or *es* into *i* as an Author observes wrongfully, because we don't say, *Anticámara*, but *Antecámara*, Anti-chamber, *Antesála*, a Room before the Saloon, or the State Room.

Delante, adelante.

Delante, before, in presence, fronting, is a Preposition governing the Genitive, as *vivo delante de la Lonja*, I live fronting the Change: *este Crimen se comitió delante del Gobernador*, this Crime was committed before the Governor: *Quítese de delante de mi*, go away, or from thy presence. It is likewise an Adverb, as *el General va delante*, the General goes at the Head, or before, &c.

Adelante, an Adverb, signifies fronting, forwards, before, as *vámos adelante*, let us go on, or forwards. It signifies Time, when it has before it *en, para, de aquí, de allí*, &c. as *en adelante*, afterwards, in time to come; *para en adelante*, for the time to come; *de aquí adelante*, from hence forward; *mas adelante*, farther

farther yet; *de hoy en adelante*, from this time forward, &c.

!Aina, áinas.

!Aina, Adverb, soon, sooner, as *más áina lo haré yo que tu*, I will do it sooner than you; *tu aprendiste la lección en una hora, pero yo la aprenderé mas áina*, you did learn your Lesson in an Hour, but I will learn it sooner. So that *áina* always has *mas* before it.

!Ainas, Adverb, almost, near attend; as *áinas me mató*, he almost kill'd me; *estói áinas de la Muerte*, I am near my Death. These words are but seldom used in *Spanish*.

Balde, de Balde, en balde.

Balde is a Word used generally in *Andalusia*, and signifies a Bucket to draw Water from a Well, &c. but in *Spanish* has no Signification, but when in Composition, and then is an Adverb; as *debálde*, gratis, free cost, for nothing, without occasion; as *le hé servido debálde*, I have served him for nothing; *comímos de balde*, we eat free cost; *le castigó de balde*, punished him without occasion. *Enbalde* (not *embalde*, as some do write it carelessly) in vain, without effect; as, *despues de todo, nuestro trabajo será enbálde*, after all, our Labour will be in vain; *Prediqué enbalde*, I preached without effect, in vain.

Note, This frequent Expression of some Shopkeepers to the Buyers; *se lo venderé de balde*, I will sell it to you for nothing, that is, almost for nothing, so cheap that the like will be found nowhere for Cheapness.

Q

Atrúque

Atruéque.

Is an Adverb, *vamos atruéque*, let us change ; but when it signifies *instead*, or *in the room of*, then it is a Preposition, and requires the Genitive ; as, *atruéque de su anillo*, or *sortíja*, *le daré la miá*, I will give you my Ring instead, or in the room of yours.

Of *Pára* and *Por*.

These Prepositions are often confounded by the Gentlemen that learn the *Spanish*, nay even by some *Spanish* Authors, so that I think it necessary to observe that,

Pára, for ; serves to denote the Utility, or Detriment to a Person ; as *estos cien reales son pára Pedro, que es póbrec*, these hundred Reals are for Peter, who is poor, or because he is poor. *Los dí pára vmd.* I gave them for you ; *víne aquí pára hablar con vmd.* I came here to speak with you.

When the *English* puts *to* before the Infinitive, the *Spaniards* make use of *de*, *à*, *para*, or *por* ; but with this Distinction, that *de* is put before the Infinitive, and when the Verbs *venir*, *haber*, *tener*, &c. or a Noun is before the Infinitive ; as *Vengo de cenar*, I come from Supper ; *he de de amar*, I must love ; *tengo de ir*, I must go ; *tengo necesidad de ser consolado*, I want to be comforted, &c. when a Verb of Motion preceeds the Infinitive, as *la Léy de Díos me compéle à hacér bién*, Divine Law compels me to do good ; *vôl à leer este libro*, I go to read this Book. *Pára*, when the Verb tends to an Habit, Use, Custom, or its Quality, as *ô señór ! dadme vuestra Grácia, y hacédme bábil para amaros, constante pára sufrir, y firme pára perseverár*,

verár, O Lord! give me thy Grace, and make me able to love you, constant to suffer, and firm or stable to continue or persevere. *Por*, and *pára*, when they denote the End that moves or inclines, the Cause and the Means to obtain it; as *sirvo à Díos por gozár de el prêmio*, I serve God to enjoy the Reward, or that I may, or in order to enjoy the Reward. *El espíritu malo nos pone amenúdo malos pensamiéntos para desviarnos del camíno de la virtud*, the evil Spirit puts on us often bad Thoughts to set us out of the way of Virtue.

Para is used in questioning and answering, and signifies, for what? why? for whom? to what purpose, &c. as *Paraque se díxo esto?* to what purpose? to what end, for what is this said? *No báí paraque*, there is no Reason, no Occasion, no Cause: *Para quien es ésta carta?* *para mi*, for whom is this Letter? for me. *Paraque* signifies likewise *that*, and is a Sign that denotes the subjunctive Mood; as, *paraque yo áme*, that I may love: It expresses also, to what End, Office, or Place, a Thing, or a Person is good for; as *éste Caballéro es bueno para Ministro*, *aquél para Secretário*, *y el otro para Mayor dómo*, this Gentleman is good for a Minister, viz. to be a Minister, that for a Secretary, and the other for a Steward. *Este epéjo es bueno para este quárto*, *y aquéllas cortinas para mi cáma*, this Looking-Glass is good for this Room, and those Curtains for my Bed.

It denotes present and future Time; as, *este vestido es bueno para hói*, *pára Mañana*, *y para cada día*, this Suit of Cloth is good for this Day, for To-morrow, and for every Day: *he comprado trigo para un año*, I have bought Corn for a Year: *Abóra y para siempre*, *alabémos a Díos*, let us praise God now and for ever. Exceptions, *Para el año passado se compráron estas provisiones*, *y duran haun*, these Pro-

vifions were bought for laſt Year, that is, for the ſervice of laſt Year, and laſt as yet: *Para ayér (el día de ayér) ſe biciéron eſtos Verſos*, theſe Verſes were made for Yeſterday, that is, to celebrate that Day.

Pára póco, good for little, of ſmall capacity.

Paracon, between us, or in my, or our Opinion; as, *para conmigo eſ cierto*, in my opinion it is true.

Por ſometimes denotes that the Thing is not yet done; as, *eſta obra eſtá por acabar*, this Work is not yet finiſhed: *por bacerſe*, to be done.

It ſignifies likewiſe the End of, or Means to do a Thing; as, *ſe riñéron pormí*, they quarrelled on my account, &c.

Por, by, for, through; as *Por eſtos médios lo alcanzó*, he obtain'd it by theſe Means; *fuí al Banco por ducientas libras*, I went to the Bank for 200 l. *paſſémos por éſta cálle*, let us go through this Street.

Por, though, although, &c. *por pequéña que ſéa la tomaré*, tho' ſo ſmall I will take it, altho' it be ſmall I will take it, and then it denotes a Tenſe in the Optative, as *por docto que ſéa*, though he be a learned Man, &c.

In Compoſition, as *por tál*, ſo that; *por un tál*, for ſuch a one; *porloque*, *porloqual*, for which; *Pordonde*, which way; *porende*, therefore; *por éſſo*, for that Reaſon; *porque*, why; *por ventúra*, peradventure, perhaps. But *pro* for *provécho*, as *buen pro le hága*, much good may it do you: *pro*, *el pro*, the reaſon of a Thing, as *el pró de las Mugéres*, Women's Reaſon; *pro y contra*, *pro and con*, for and againſt; *por acáſo*, by chance, by accident; *por dinéro báila el Pérro*, the Dog dances for Money; or as we ſay in *Engliſh*, Money makes the Mare to go.

Priméro,

Primero, Primo, &c.

Are Adjective Ordinals, but with Distinction ; because we use *Primo*, and not *Primero* in the great Numbers, as an Author wrongfully saith ; we don't say *vigésimo primero*, but *vigésimo Primo*, 21st ; *trigésimo primo*, 31st. *Primero* stands sometimes for *primeramente* ; and when it has *lo* before it, it is taken as Substantive ; it is often us'd before and after the Substantives, when before them looses *o*, as *primer lugar*, *lugar primero* ; when an Adverb it signifies first, before, in the first place, rather ; as *primero iré a la Guerra, que a la Escuela*, I rather chuse to serve in the War, then to go to School, &c. *Primo*, the first, the best, chiefest, a delicate curious Thing : *Primo* rarely is join'd to any Substantive, because it stands as a Substantive itself, and varies its Termination, and then signifies a Cousin, as *Primo Hermáno*, a Cousin German ; *Prima Hermána*, a she Cousin German : *obra Prima*, curious Work, the best ; *lo Primo*, the very best, &c.

N O.

Altho' *no*, be a Negative, in questioning it is a Note of Interrogation ; as *me estará aquí no ?* shall I not wait here ? *No me hará este favor ?* Will you not do me this favour ? and then it stands for *whether or no*.

Tanto, Quanto, tan, Quan.

The Adverbs *Tanto*, so much, as much ; *Quanto*, how much, are often put before Substantives, Verbs, &c. to signify the Quantity, Manner, or Circumstances of the Action, &c. as, *por tanto*

comer estás enfermo, you are sick for having eat so much, for over eating ; *Quanto bebo me hace mal*, every thing I drink, (all that I drink) does me no good. *Quanto pide por estos guantes ? tanto*, how much do you ask for these Gloves ? so much. *Tanto quanto*, every thing, so much as ; *tanto mas*, so much more. *Tanto* signifies likewise a Counter to play : *Quanto*, all, every thing, as *quanto dice es falso*, all, what, or every thing he saith is false ; *quanto mas ?* how much more ? *quantos ?* how many ? *quanto quiera*, how much soever.

Tán, so, as ; as *aquel Páño es tan bueno como este*, that Cloth is as good as this ; *tiene tan buenos amigos*, he hath as good Friends : *quán*, how ; as *ò quan malo eres, y quan bueno te haces entre los Nobles*, O how bad you are, and how good do you make yourself among the Nobility.

Tanbien, so well, as well ; *estói tan bien convalecido*, I am so well recovered : *esto está tan bien hecho como se pueda hacer*, this is as well done as it could be done ; so that *Tanbien* must not be confounded with *Tambien*, as an Author does, because *también* signifies also, and not as well.

Además.

The Adverb *Además*, signifies, besides, moreover, over and above, in vain ; as *Además, conviene saber que*, besides, moreover, it is to be known that ; *pensativo además quedó Don Quixote, esperando, &c.* over and above thoughtful remain'd Don Quixote, waiting, &c. Vol. II. Chap. III. *Además se cansa*, takes pains in vain. *Pordemás*, that is, in vain, to no purpose ; it governs likewise Genitive, as *ademas de esto*, besides this, &c.

Según, when before a Verb is an Adverb, and signifies according, as ; as *Según dice Don Juan*, as Sir
John

John saith ; it is likewise a Preposition governing the Accusative ; as, *según mi parecer*, according to my Opinion.

Ayúso, an old Adverb, is the same as *abáxo*, below, under ; as *lo echáron ayúso*, they throw'd it down, below, under ; it signifies likewise *after* and *under*, as *abáxo* ; as *de Díos en Ayúso*, or *de Díos abáxo yo le curé*, under God, or after God, I am the Person who cured him, or made him well.

Hasta, till, even, up to, as far as ; as, *basta quando?* till when ? *basta que venga*, untill I come ; *basta quanto?* how much ? *basta tanto*, so much ; *basta el borde*, up to the brink ; *basta Palacio*, as far as the Palace ; *basta las doce*, till Noon.

This may serve by way of Specimen, and Practice will teach what can't be so well committed to writing, without far exceeding the Bounds of a Grammar.





THE
SECOND PART
OF THE
SPANISH GRAMMAR,
Called SYNTAX.



HE *Spanish* has so great an Affinity with the *Latin*, that whosoever understands the latter, will find little difficulty in the Construction of the other.

Having hitherto treated of the eight Parts of Speech, as they belong to Etymology, it remains now to treat of them as belonging to the Syntax (called Construction, or the order of Construction.)

CHAP.

CH A P. I.

Of the Concords and Articles.

THERE are three Concords in the *Spanish* Speech, viz.

1. Between the nominative Case, and the Verb; as, *yo ámo*, I love; *Pédro scribe*, *Peter* writes.

2. Between the Substantive and the Adjective; as, *bombre curioso*, a curious Man; *Muger virtuosa*, a virtuous Woman.

3. Between the Antecedent and the Relative, as *Feliz es, quien vive contento*, happy is he who lives contented, or with content.

Of the first Concord.

A Verb personal agreeth with his Nominative Case in Number and Person; as *yo Léo*, *tu Apréndes*, *el Maestro enséna*, I read, thou learns, the Master teaches, &c. Note, That many Nominative Cases, with a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Verb Plural; as, *Pédro y Juán viniéron a verme Ayér*, *Peter* and *John* came to see me Yesterday.

Sometimes a whole Clause, and the infinitive Mood of a Verb, may be the Nominative to the Verb following; as, *todo loque se díxo ayér*, *me movió á tomár ésta resolución*, all that was said Yesterday moved me to take this Resolution: *el comér satisface al hambriento*, to eat, eating, satisfies the Hungry; *el levantarse temprano es saludable*, to rise betime in the Morning, is wholesome.

Exceptions.

Exceptions.

When a Question is asked, then the Nominative goes after the Verb; as, *está el Sr. Fulano en casa?* is Mr. such a one at home? *como se entiende esto?* how is this understood; *que tiene vmd.?* What is the Matter with you? And so in the Negatives, as *no es esto?* *no es verdad?* Is it not this? is it not true? These Relatives are excepted; *que hora es?* What is it a Clock? *quién es?* who is? *quien toca?* who knocks? *quién llama?* who calls, &c.

Some of the Reciprocal Verbs, and the Imperatives of all the Verbs have their Nominative after them; as, *pésame mucho*, I am very sorry; *ama tu*, love thou.

When a Verb comes between two Nominatives of diverse Numbers, the Verb may indifferently accord with either of them; as, *tantas palabras juntas es confusion*, or *son confusion*, so many Words together are a Confusion: *las superfluidades son Excesso* Superfluities are an Excess.

Of the Second Concord.

The Adjective, whether it be a Noun, Pronoun, or Participle, agreeth with his Substantive in Case, Gender, and Number; as, *el bómbré sábio, y la Muger virtuosa son dignos de alabanza*, a learned Man, and a virtuous Woman are worthy of praise; by which you see how they agree, and that the Masculine Gender is more worthy than the Feminine; and so it is said *dignos* and not *dignas*: It is likewise plain by the above Example, that, many Substantives with a Conjunction copulative between them will have an Adjective Plural.

When

When a Clause serves as a Substantive, then the Adjective is to be put in the Neuter Gender ; as, *el Rogár a Dios en todo tiempo es bueno ; pero en tiempo calamitoso es necesario*, it is always good to pray to God ; but in calamitous time it is necessary.

Exceptions.

Before the Nouns Substantives beginning with *a*, *Euboniæ gratia*, for the sake of the good Sound, the Spaniards use the Masculine Article, as has been said before, as *el agua*, the Water ; *al alma*, the Soul ; which proceeds from the Spaniards not using the Apostrophe, as some other Nations do, &c.

After *Vuestra Merced* the Adjective does not agree in Gender with *v.m.d.* but with the Person to whom one speaks, as we observ'd before ; so that when we speak to a Man, we say, *bien venido sea v.m.d.* Sir you art welcome ; and in the Plural, *bien venidos sean v.mdes.* Gentlemen you are welcome ; when to a Woman, *vmd. es muy buena*, Madam you are very good, &c.

Note, That *Bueno*, *malo*, *uno*, *primero*, *tercero*, &c. when before a Substantive, they lose the Letter *o* ; and *ciento* loses *to* : and tho' some Authors are of Opinion, that *tanto* and *quanto* lose *to* before the Substantives, I say, that it is false, and wrong ; because *tanto* and *quanto* always remain whole, and are derived of the Latin Adverbs *Tanto*, *quanto* ; as, *quanto Mayor eres, tanto mas te humillarás*, how much the greater you are, so much the more you should be humbled. But *tán* and *quán* are derived from the Latin *tam* and *quam*.

Grande, loses *de* before the Substantives that begin with a Consonant ; as, *gran Mujer*, a great Woman ; *Gran Casa*, a great House : but if the Substantive begins with *a* then it is often indifferently

differently used, and when begins with another Vowel always retains *de*.

Observe likewise, that the *Spaniards* do generally use the Adjectives after the Substantives, as it has been said : but the Epithets are used by the best *Spanish* Authors before the Substantives ; as, *el Seráfico San Francísc*, the Seraphick St Francis ; *el Melifluo St Bernardo*, the Mellifluous St Bernard ; *el intrépido General*, the intrepid General ; *el Philósofo Aristoteles*, the Philosopher Aristotle : *Sanctísimo Pádre*, *Beatísimo Pádre*, the Holy Father ; *Excelentísimo Señor*, most excellent Sir ; *ilustrísimo Señor*, most illustrious Sir, &c. and so we say *es buen hombre*, he is a good Man ; *este es un mal hombre*, this is a bad Man.

Of the third Concord.

The Antecedent is a Word, or Clause that goes before the Relative, and is rehearsed again by the Relative.

The Relative agreeth with his Antecedent in Gender, Number and Person ; as, *es sabio, quien habla poco y bien*, that Man is wise, that speaketh but little and to the purpose.

When a Relative is between two Antecedents of diverse Genders, then it agreeth with either ; as, *el Réy se irá luego a una casa de campo, la que está en Windsor*, the King will soon go to a Country House, which is at Windsor ; *he recibido tres cartas, cuyo contenido me gusta mucho*, I have receiv'd three Letters, whose Contents please me much ; *atacáron al Enemigo, cuya infantería tomó luego la derrota*, they attack'd the Enemy, whose Foot soon gave way and fled.

Sometimes the Relative hath for his Antecedent the whole Sentence that goeth before it, and then it must be put in the Neuter Gender, and in the Singular

lar Number ; as, *alzáronse los soldados en el fuerte contra su Gobernador, lo que le obligó a entregarle*, the Soldiers revolted in the Fort or Fortrefs against their Governor, which oblig'd him to deliver it up.

Many Antecedents Singular having a Conjunction Copulative between them, will have a Relative Plural, which shall agree with the Antecedent of the most worthy Gender ; as, *recebí el Cabállo y la Múla que me embió, losque presenté al Sr. Fuláno*, I receiv'd the Horse and the Mule that you sent me, which I presented to Mr such a one.

When there is no Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative stands for the Nominative ; as, *quien dice esto ?* who saith this ? but when there is a Nominative between the Relative and the Verb, then the Relative shall be put in the Case governed by the Verb, or any other Word ; as, *la grácia que le pido*, the Favour which I beg of you ; *el Réy á quien obedesco*, the King to whom I obey ; *el Embaxador, de cuya protección gozo, me escribe ésta carta*, the Embassador whose Protection I enjoy, wrote this Letter to me.

Note, that the Relatives you may make use of, are *le, les, la, lo, las, los* ; (to these four last you may add *que* ; as, *laque, loque, lasque, losque*) *quien, tal, quál, cuyo, que* ; to which you may likewise add a Preposition ; as, *à loque Digo*, to which I say ; *de loque recibí gusto*, of which I received Pleasure ; *de quien es ?* to whom it belongs ? *para quién ? para él ?* for whom ? for him ; *cuyo es éste sombrero ?* then you may answer, *mio, tuyo, or suyo, or del Sr. Fuláno, de aquel Caballero*, mine, thine, or yours, or of Mr such a one, of that Gentleman.

Observe likewise, that these Relatives are called elliptic Articles, because they express the Substantive which is not there ; as, *recebí la de v.md, la* for *la carta*, I received yours ; *leí los libros de Quevédo, pero los del Padre Feijoo no*, I read Quevé-

238 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

do's Books, but not those of Father *Feijoo*; and then they govern the Case of the Substantive; as *recibí la de Pédro, pero no la de Juan*, I receiv'd that of *Peter's*, but not that of *John*, &c.

Of the Articles.

There are three Articles in *Spanish*, as is said before, viz. *el* for the Masculines, *la* for the Femines, and *lo* for the Neuters; and it can't be taken amiss, if I show here the manner, how they are to be used.

First, All proper Names of Men, Women, Gods, Goddeffes, Angels good or bad; of Months, Cities, Towns, and Villages, &c. have no Article before them; as, *Pbelipe V. Rey de España* *Lúis XV. Rey de Fráncia*; *Jórge II. Rey de Inglatérrea*, &c. *Philip V. King of Spain*, &c. *Carolina Réina de Inglatérrea*, *Calorine Queen of England*: *Jupiter*, *Júno*, *Lucrécia*, *St Miguel*, *St Michael*; *Enéro*, January; *Febréro*, February, &c.

Secondly, If we put an Adjective between proper Names, or express their Epithets, or specify some Action, Passion, or Motion, and take notice of their Qualities, &c. then we put the Article before them; as, *el Omnipotente Dios*, *el Dios de Misericórdia*; the Almighty God, the God of Mercy; *el invencible è intrépido General*, the invincible, and intrepid General: *el Rey*, *la Réina*, *el Príncipe*, *la Príncesa*, y *el Dúque de Cumberland irán à la comédia este nóche*, the King, the Queen, the Prince, the Princess, and the Duke of *Cumberland* will go to the Play-house this Night; and so before other common Words.

Thirdly, Before the Numerals is never made use of the Article, but when they are taken relatively; as, *los dos viniéron*, the two came; *los doce mēses del año*, the twelve Months of the Year; *los siete días de la*

de la semana, the seven Days of the Week ; *las doce Tribus*, *los doce Apostoles*, *los doce pares de Fráncia*, *las quátro partes del Mundo*, &c. and so are *úno*, *ótro*, *qual*, the Participles, and some of the Infinitives ; as, *el uno*, the one, &c. *lo dicho*, the above said, *el comer*, *el beber* y *el dormir*, *con Moderación*, *bacén bien al cuérpo*, to eat, to drink, and to sleep with Moderation, does good to the Body.

The Particle *an* so much us'd in *English* is omitted in *Spanish* ; for tho' we say, another Man, another Day, they only say as the Latin, *ótro bómbré*, *ótro día*, not *un otro hombre*, or *un ótro día*.

España has but seldom an Article, and *Serdëña*, *Portugál*, *Secília*, and *cándia* never.

CH A P. II.

Of the Construction of Nouns.

WHEN two Substantives of diverse Significations, do so come together, that the Latter in some kind or other seem to be possessed, or depend of the former, then the latter is put in the Genitive Case ; as, *el amor de Díos es mas perfecto*, the Love of God is the most perfect : *amor del Pádre*, the Love of a Father ; *la Ternéza de la Mádre*, the Tendernefs of a Mother ; *la Eloquência de Cicerón*, the Eloquence of Cicero, &c. And often this Genitive is turned into an Adjective ; as, *el amor Divíno*, the Divine Love ; *el Amor Patérno*, the fatherly Love ; *la Ternéza Matérna*, the Motherly Tendernefs, &c.

An Adjective in the Neuter Gender put alone without a Substantive, standeth for a Substantive, and

and may have a Genitive Case after it ; *déme un poco de lo mucho, y algo de lo poco*, give me a little of the much, and something of the little you have ; *lo prudente de Don Pedro nos admira*, the prudent Part of Don Peter surprises us, &c.

The Nouns of Praise, and Dispraise, of Want, of Arts, Sciences, all proper Names of Cities, Towns, &c. of God, all proper Names of Men, Women, Spirits good and bad, of irrational Creatures, of inanimates, of Months, Nouns of Measure, &c. coming after a Noun Substantive, or a Verb Substantive may be put with the Preposition *de* ; as *Muchácho de buen ingenio*, a Boy of a good Wit ; *bómbre de mal Crédito*, a Man of bad Credit or Reputation ; *Maestro de Musica*, a Master of Music ; *Profesor de Theología*, a Professor of Divinity ; *la Casa de Pedro*, Peter's House ; *la ciudad de Londres*, the City of London ; *la voluntad de Dios*, the Will of God, &c.

Sometimes the Genitive Case is put alone, the former Substantive being understood by Eclipsis ; as *recebí dos Cartas, la de Pedro leí, pero no la de mi Correspondiente*, I receiv'd two Letters, I read that of Peter's, but not that of my Correspondent.

Of the Construction of Adjectives.

Adjectives that signify Desire, Knowledge, Remembrance, Ignorance, or Forgetting, and such other like require a Genitive ; as *codicioso de dinero*, covetous of Money ; *ignorante de todo*, ignorant of all things, &c.

Nouns Partitives, and certain Interrogatives, with certain Nouns of Numbers, require Genitive ; as *algúno, ningúno, solo, úno, qualquier, dos, tres, Primero, segundo, &c. algúno de vosotros*, somebody of you, *el primero de vosotros*, the first of you.

Rómulo

Rómulo fue el Primero de los Reyes de Roma, Romulus was the first of the Kings of Rome; *de que se trata en Londres?* *de Guerra*, what are you about in London? or what talke you in London? of War; *de quien se bábla?* *de los Turcos*, of whom speak they? of the Turks.

Adjectives signifying Fulness, Emptiness, Plenty, or Want, require *de*; as, *lleno de agua*, full of Water; *falto de juicio*, without his Senses. And sometime they require the Preposition *en*; as *abundante de todo*, or *en todo*, plentiful, or well stored with every Thing; *Rico de bienes*, or *en bienes temporales*, y *Pobre de los*, or *en los espirituales*, rich in temporal Goods, and poor in the spiritual, &c.

Digno, and *indigno*, require a Genitive; as, *sói digno*, or *indigno de honra*, I am worthy or unworthy of Honour. But *adornado*, *contento*, *descontento*, *alégre*, &c. will have *de* or *con*, as, *este quarto está adornado de preciosas alájas*, or *con preciosas alájas*, this Room is adorned with fine Furniture; *Contento* and *Descontento*, require likewise *en*, as, *estói contento de esto*, *con esto*, or *en esto*, I am contented with this, &c.

Adjectives, whereby is signified Profit, Disprofit, Likeness, Unlikeness, submitting or belonging to something, govern a Dative Case; as, *útil*, *provechoso*, *cómodo*, *Bueno*, *conveniente*, *gustoso*, *málo*, *rendido*; *iguál*, *desiguál*, *semejante*, *parecido*, *conforme*, &c. as, *será útil à Pedro el trabajar*, working will be profitable to Peter; and so are those of Affinity, which likewise are construed with a Genitive; as, *sói Pariente de Fulano* or *à Fulano*, I am a Relation of, or to such a one.

Add to these some of the Verbals in *ble*, as *amable*, *dable*, &c.

N. B. That the Nouns of Measure of Length, Breadth, or Thickness of any Thing, is put in the Accusative, and the Adjective in the Genitive; as, *esta torre tiene cien piés de alto*, this Tower is one hundred Feet

R

high;

high; *éste Páño tiéne dos váras de áncbo*, this Cloth has two Yards in Breadth.

Some Adjectives govern the Ablative Case; as, *con*, or *en la cólera estói amarillo*, y *con la ira cólerico*, y *con sus amenázazas temerófo*, I am pale for being angry, angry with Wrath, and with his Threatning timorous.

There are Ablatives Absolutes, (so called for their having no dependance in the Speech) as *acabáda la céna*, the Supper being finished, or having sup't; *quitáda la Cáuza*, *céza el efécto*, the Cause being remov'd, the effect ceased.

The Ablative of the Instrument is made in *Spanish* with the Preposition *con*, with; as *lo bíce con el Martíllo*, I have done it with the Hammer.

The Words *expérto*, *experiméntado*, *Períto*, *versádo*, *curfádo*, &c. require an Ablative with *en*; as *versádo en libros*, versed in Books.

Of the Numerals.

The Numerals may be divided into Cardinals; as, *úno*, *dos*, *tres*, &c.

Ordinals; as, *Priméro*, *segundo*, *tercéro*, &c.

Distributives, as, *de úno en úno*, *de dós en dós*, *de três en três*, &c.

Partitives, as *cada úno*, *úno y otro*, *algúno*, &c.

Collectives, as *una docéna*, *quincéna*, *veinténa*, *treinténa*, &c. a dozen and no more in *English*, they saying in its stead twenty, thirty, &c. *el quínto*, the fifth; *la diéxma*, a tenth, &c.

Of Augmentation; as *lo dóble*, *lo triple*, *lo quadru-ble*, &c.

Universal, as *todo*, *ningúno*, *náda*.

Particular; as, *algúno*, *alguien*, &c.

All which govern the Genitive Case; as, *el Priméro de tódos*, the first of all.

Of the Comparatives.

The Comparatives *mas*, more ; *ménos*, less, govern *que*, than, in which the force of the Comparison lies ; *el todo es Mayor que la parte*, the Whole, or the Compound is greater or bigger than the Part ; *su Malicia es peor que la de el diáblo*, it's Malice is worse than that of the Devil's ; and so in *mejór*, *menór*. Now for the Regular Comparatives ; as, *es mas sábio que Salomón*, is wiser than Solomon ; *es mas Hermósa que Rachél*, is more beautiful than Rachel ; *es ménos prudente que su Hermáno*, is less prudent than his Brother.

They govern likewise *deloque*, than what ; as, *es mas Docto deloque se piensa*, is more learned than what it is thought ; *es mas afortunádo deloque merece*, is more lucky than what he deserves.

When the Articles *el*, *la*, *lo* are put before *mas*, then it governs the Genitive ; as, *es el mas discreto de los hombres*, he is the discreetest of Men ; *la mas afable de todas las Mugéres*, the most affable of all Women ; *lo mas selecto de todo*, the most select of all, of every Thing.

They govern also the Preposition *entre* ; as, *es la mas Hermósa entre todas las Mugéres*, is the most beautiful among all Women ; *es el mas Docto entre todos los del Colegio*, is the most learned among all those of the College. Some Spanish Writers put *de* before *entre* ; as, *es el mas señaládo de entre sus condiscípulos*, is the most signilized from among his School-Fellows. By which the curious may observe the several Constructions that the Comparatives will bear.

The Examples with the Article before *mas*, are called Relative Superlatives, and the following absolute or independing ; which end in *íssimo* *íssima* *érrimo-ma*, &c. as *prudentíssimo*, most

discreet ; *próximo*, nearest ; *minimo*, the least, the smallest ; *acérrimo*, most vehement, most obstinate. When the Adverb *múi*, very, is before the Positive, then the Positive is made Superlative ; as

Doctíffimo, } *Múi Docto*, *very learned*.

Prudentíffimo, } *Múi Prudente*, *very prudent*, &c.

C H A P. III.

Of P R O N O U N S.

NOS, and *Vos*, though in reality they signify the same as *Nosotros*, and *Vosotros*, that is, We, and Ye ; yet they differ in the use, and in that the two latter have the Feminine Gender, *Nosótras* and *Vosótras*, which the other have not, being always the same in all Genders. *Nosotros* is in all common use, as *We* with us ; but *Nos*, is generally used by a single Person, as a Sovereign, or the like, where *We* is also imployed in *English*. But sometimes *Nos* signifies *Us*, when it follows a Verb, as *dádnos de comér*, give us to eat ; *guiádnos a la cása*, lead us to the House ; and after *no*, as *no nos maltráteys*, do not abuse us.

Vos, is also apply'd to a single Person, that is in speaking to inferiors, or between familiar Friends, to avoid the word *tu*, thou ; which is too gross in *Spanish*, as has been said before, and to save the respect of *V. M.* also above spoken of ; thus they say, *vos os engañáis*, you are mistaken : and so before Verbs Plural, as *vos amáis*, you love ; *vos perdéis*, you lose ; but in the other Cases the *v* is cut off ; as *yo os dáre*, I will give you ; *el os llevará*,

llevará, he will carry you ; and the same when it follows the Verb ; as *quitáos de abí*, get you from thence ; and so in many other Cases.

Note, That *Los*, *Las*, are construed with the first and second Persons of the Plural ; as, *losque somos Chriştíanos, vivámos como táles*, We that are Christians, let us live as such. *Dícen los Apostoles, que lasque somos casádas obedescámos à los Marídos*, The Apostles say, that we married should obey the Husbands : *Losque fuéredes Chriştíanos, observád y cumplíd los Preceptos de Díos*, you that are Christian, keep and accomplish the Commandments of God, &c.

El, and *Ella* have a Dative Case of a different Termination, which is contrary to the general Spanish Rule ; for they sometimes make *le* and *les*, and these two are only used, when they imply something of Acquisition, and denote the Person receiving ; as, *Vi a Pédro y díle*, or *le di sus cártas*, I saw Peter and gave him his Letters. *Vide mis amigos, y comunicuéles mis cuidádos*, I saw my Friends, and imparted my Affairs to them ; where it appears in both places, there is an imparting, or giving. In these Cases there is no using of *lo*, or *los* for *le*, or *les*, because it would breed Confusion, as will appear in this Instance, *Los que perdiéron sus baziéndas, píden a los juezes, que los abórquen los ladrónes*, They that have been robb'd of their Goods, require of the Judges that they hang the Thieves. Now were it said, *Píden a los juézes que los abórken los ladrónes*, there would be no deciding whether they requir'd that the Thieves should be hang'd, or that the Thieves should hang them.

Mi, *ti*, *si*, are used after Prepositions ; as *a mi*, to me ; *pára ti*, for you ; *por si*, by himself ; but after *con*, with, they must all have the Syllable *go* added to them ; as *con mígo*, with me ; *con tígo*, with you ; *con sígo*, with himself.

Me, te, se, are join'd to Verbs, and stand for the Dative, and Accusative Cases; as, *díxome*, he told me; *servírte*, to serve you; *amárse*, to love himself.

They may also be placed before the Verb, provided a Nominative Case is before them; as *yo me iré*, I will be gone; *tu te irás*, you will be gone; *el se irá*, he will be gone; sometimes the Nominative Case is not expressed, but always understood; as *mé áma*, he loves me; where *el* is understood, as *el*, he; or *Juan*, John, or *Pédro*, Peter.

Observe here, that *me, te, se,* sometimes are us'd in the Dative by the Figure Pleonasm; as, *¿señor! y á donde os me llévan?* O Lord! where are they going to carry you from me? *¿Quien te se me cubrió de dolor!* Who is he that came here to cover or fill you up with Grief? instead of *quien te cubrió de dolor?*

Se before the third Person of a Verb, generally signifies what we express by *it is*, or *they*; as, *se díze*, it is said, or reported, or they say, or report; for if it be used to signify himself, as has been observed above, it is usual to add *a sí*, or *a sí mismo*, which denotes himself; as, *se áma a sí mismo*, he loves himself.

La, le, lo, las, les, los, me, te, se, nos, and *vos*, are frequently joined to Verbs; as, *oiréla*, I will hear her; *diréle*, I will tell him; *harélo*, I will do it; *llevarélos*, I will carry them; *escribiréles*, I will write to them; *despedirélos*, I will dismiss them; *iréme*, I will be gone; *véte*, be you gone; *váyase*, let him be gone; *passeémonos*, let us walk; but in joining *vos* to the Verb, the *v* is always cut off; as, *amáros*, to love you, not *amárvos*; and if the Verb be the third Person Plural of the Imperative Mood, the last Letter of it which is always *d*, must be also cut off; as, *calentáos*, warm yourselves, and so in others.

When *le, lo, las, los,* are joined to the Infinitive Mood, the last *r* of it is sometimes changed into *l*, for the softer Sound, as for *dezírle*, say *dezílle*; but this is no general Rule.

Note,

Note, That when a Relative is referred to a Noun Masculine, then we make use of *le*, when to a Feminine of *la*, when to a whole Sentence or Clause of *lo* in the Neuter.

Mío, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro, and *mismo*, have the Article added to them, when they are spoken absolutely, and without a Substantive ; as, *lo mío*, what is mine ; *lo tuyo*, what is thine. Unless they are spoken in Answer to a Question ; as if it be asked, *Cuyo es éste cavállo?* whose Horse is this? the Answer is, *mío, tuyo*, or *suyo*, mine, yours, or his.

Cuyo is naturally an Interrogation ; as, *cuyo es ésto?* Whose is this? But it is often us'd to signify the Person a Thing belongs to ; as *El hombre cuyo es éste cavállo*, the Man whose Horse this is, or to whom this Horse belongs.

Mi, tu, su, Plur. *mis, tus, sus*, are us'd for *mío, tuyo, suyo* ; but always before a Substantive ; as, *mi casa*, my House ; *tu libro*, your Book ; *su cara*, his Face ; *mis guantes*, my Gloves ; *tus espuelas*, your Spurs ; *sus papeles*, his Papers.

Este, ése, aquél, are all Demonstratives ; but *éste* denotes a Thing near the Person speaking ; *ése*, a Thing rather near him that is spoken to ; and *aquél*, that which is at a Distance from both ; as, *este cuchillo*, this Knife ; *ése Pláto*, that Dish ; *aquél perro*, that Dog. The same is to be understood of the Feminine Gender of these Words, *Esta, ésa, aquella*, and of the Neuter, *Esto, éso, aquello* ; and so of the Plural Number of them, *Estos, esos, aquellos, éstas, éssas, aquellas*. *Aquél* pronounced with energy, stands for the first Person Singular, and *aquellos* for the first Plural ; as, *yo aquél que en los pasados tiempos cante*, &c. I he who in former Times sung, &c.

The Relatives, or Interrogatives. *Qual*, sometimes is interrogatory, as *Qual déellos?* which of them? and sometimes Comparative, as *Qual es el veráno, tal el inviérno*, Such as the Summer is, such

is the Winter ; and sometimes it is distributive, as *Quál cóge el óro, quál la pláta*, One gathers the Gold, another the Silver.

Que tal, differs herein from *Quál*, that the latter asks the particular Person, or Thing, and is *Which of them* ? whereas the other questions the Quality of the Person, or Thing, as *Que tal es éste cavállo* ? What sort of Horse is that ?

Que is also an Interrogation, as *Que dizes* ? What do you say ? It is also Demonstrative, as *El Hómbre que bábla*, The Man that speaks. It also signifies *than* ; as, *Mas vále bablárr póco, que bablárr mal*, It is better to say little than to talk amiss. It is sometimes in the Nature of an Exclamation, as *Que Desgrácia !* What a Misfortune ! *Que linda mugér !* What a fine Woman ! *Que*, the same as *that*, as *que yo váya*, that I may go ; *Qué* for *porqué*, why, because ; as, *bázlo tu, qué yo no puédo*, do it thou, because I can't. Observe that *áque* is not one *Spanish* Word, because *à* is a Preposition, and denotes *to*, and then is not an Adverb, for *à que*, is the same as *to what End, to what Purpose* ; as *à que vinó éste hombre !* we understand, *à que fin*, to what end came this Man ? *à que juégo perdió su dinéro* ? At what, or at which Game did you loose your Money ? And always is a Relative, the same as *quál*, or *cúyo*, &c.

C H A P. IV.

Of V E R B S.

PROperly speaking, the *Spanish* Verbs have only these following simple Tenses, viz. the Present, the Preterimperfect, the Preterperfect, and the Future, of the Indicative Mood ; the Imperative Mood ; and the Present, Preterimperfect, and Future, of the Optative or Subjunctive ; as

Indicative.

Indicative,

<i>Present.</i>	'Amo,	<i>I love.</i>
<i>Preterimperf.</i>	Amába,	<i>I did love.</i>
<i>Preterperfect.</i>	Amé,	<i>I have loved.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Amaré,	<i>I shall, or will love.</i>

Imperative,

'Ama,	<i>Do you love.</i>
-------	---------------------

Optative and Subjunctive.

<i>Present.</i>	Pléga a Díos que yo áme,	<i>God grant I love.</i>
<i>Preterim.</i>	Amára, amáffe, or amaría,	<i>Would to God I did love.</i>
<i>Future.</i>	Amáre,	<i>When I shall love.</i>

Infinitive,

<i>Present.</i>	Amár,	<i>To love.</i>
<i>Gerund.</i>	Amándo,	<i>Loving.</i>
<i>Participle Passive.</i>	Amádo,	<i>Loved.</i>

All the rest are formed by Circumlocution, putting several Words together to supply the Defect of such Tenses, as it has been said before.

And altho' there has been said enough of this Part of Speech in Part II. yet as the Verbs are the principal and most essential Part of a Grammar, I think it proper to observe here what none of the Grammarians has taken notice of before, in order to remove the several Difficulties that start to Beginners.

I. Verbs Substantives, and certain Passive Verbs, as *ser*, *ser llamado*, *ser Nombrado*, with other like will have such Case after them, as they have before them, that is the Nominative Case; as, *Pédro es hombre*, Peter is a Man; *yo me llamo Juan*, I am call'd John, &c. all Verbs of Gesture, that is those that betoken bodily moving, going, resting, or doing; as also all the Verbs that have the Word that goeth before, and the Word that comes after, both belonging to one Thing, require the Nominative after them; as, *Pédro vá cojo*, Peter goeth lame; *el Rey duerme seguro*, the King sleepeth void of Care, &c. Also the Verb of the Infinitive Mood has

has the same Cases, when Verbs of wishing and the like come near them ; as, *Pédro desea ser santo*, Peter wisheth to be Holy : *Yo antes quisiera ser Rico, que parecerlo*, I had rather be rich, than to be accounted so, &c.

2. Of the Auxiliary Verbs. *Havér* governs the Accusative ; as, *Pédro bá el libro*, Peter hath the Book. *Estar*, when it signifies to be in a Place, requires the Ablative with *en* ; but when to be with somebody, an Ablative with *con* ; as, *estaré v. md en su casa* ! will you be at home ? *Yo estaré en la Lónja*, I shall be on the Change ; *estói con v. md*, I am with you ; here *con* is used for shortness, because the meaning is, *Yo estói en compañía de v. md*, I am in your Company. Observe this Phrase, *estar en éssó, en ello*, &c. *está v. md en éssó* ? do you remember of that ? have you observed, or taken notice of that ? are you in the same Mind, &c. *Ser* when it signifies Possession, or pertaining to a Thing, will have the Genitive ; (except when the Pronouns *mío, tuyo, suyo, nuestro, vuestro* are to be us'd, because then they are in the Nominative ; as, *este libro es mío*, &c.) as, *este Péine es de mi Muger*, this Comb belongs to my Wife. But when it denotes the Property of a Thing, it has a Dative after it ; as, *ésto es para mi*, this is for me ; *es à Pedro*, it belongs to Peter, &c. Note, That *mí, tí sí*, seldom can be put in the Genitive by themselves, or without a Substantive ; tho' they may in the Dative ; as, *es de mi Hermáno*, it belongs to my Brother ; you may say, *es pára mi, para tí, para si*, is for me, for you, for him : except *de tí à Muger digo ésto*, of you O my Wife I say this ; *como báblas tan mal de mi* ? why do you speak so bad of me, &c.

Of the Genitive.

Verbs signifying Grief, Compassion, Remembrance, Want, Forgetting, &c. will have a Genitive ; as, *Pesame de la Muerte de su Padre*, I am sorry

sorry for the Death of your Father: *Me compadésc*o de sus hijas, I pity his Daughters; *Caresco*, *necesário* de dinéros, I want Money. And thus *de* is put before the Thing spoke in the Speech, *es menester acordarse de lo que me dixo*, it is necessary to remember of what you said to me: *Me olvidé de esto*, I forgot that.

The Reciprocals of geering, boasting, and distrusting, govern the Genitive, as *vanagloriarse*, *picarse*, *desconfiarse*, &c.

Of the Dative.

Active Verbs have either Dative or Accusative; as, *conósc*o esta Létra, I know this Writing; *conosco à Don António su Amigo*, I know Don Anthony your Friend.

The Prepositions of the Dative are *à* or *pára*.

To this Rule of the Dative belong the Verbs,

Jugar, to play; as, *Juégo à los naipes*, I play at Cards.

Obedecér, *desobedecér*, &c. *Obedesco al Rey*, I obey the King.

Mandár, when it signifies to command an Army, &c. requires the Accusative; when other Things, the Dative; as, *el Dúque de Montemár Mandó el Ejército Español en Itália*, the Duke of Montemar commanded the Spanish Army in Italy; *el Rey mandó al Embaxador de Venécia de salir de Londres en tres días*, the King ordered the Venetian Ambassador to go out of London in three Days.

Ir, to go; as, *vói à Roma*, I go to Rome.

Affistir, to help or assist; as, *assistiré à Pédro*, I will help or assist Peter.

Saludár, to salute; as, *salúdó à Fuláno*, he saluted such a one. *Hablár*, to speak; *llamár*, to call; *satisfacér*, to satisfy; *servír*, to serve, *favorecér*, to favour; *desafiár*, to chalenge; *absolvér*, to absolve; *aconsejár*, to give Advice; *Amenazár*, to threaten: The Verbs of pleasing, displeasing, granting, denying,

ing, pardoning, and so all manner of Verbs put acquisitively, that is, with these Tokens *to*, or *for*, after them, will have a Dative Case of the Person, and often the Accusative of the Thing.

The Impersonals *acontecér*, *avenír*, *convenir*, *importár*, *pertenecér*, *placér*, and the like to these, will have often two Datives of Person; as, *à mi me aconteció*, it happened to me; *à tí te conviene*, it is convenient for you; *no le importa à el*, it does not concern him, &c.

The Accusative.

The *Latin* Verbs, which govern the Accusative of the Thing, and the Dative of the Person, govern generally the same in Spanish; as, *restituí al César lo que pertenece al César*, render ye to Cesar what is belonging to Cesar; *di el libro al Impresor*, I gave the Book to the Printer, &c.

Verbs of asking, teaching, arraying; also most of the Verbs Transitives, viz. all such as have after them an Accusative Case of the Doer, or Sufferer, whether they be Active, or Commune, and sometimes the Verbs Neuters, will have an Accusative of the Thing; as, *Gózo salud*, I enjoy Health; *pido esta Gracia, ruégo este favor*, I ask this Favour; *tocar el Organo*, to play on the Organ.

Generally all the Active Verbs require an Accusative or Dative; as, *amár à Dios, hacer bien*, to do good; *Guardar los Mandamientos de Dios*, to keep God's Commandments; *descubrir la verdad*, to discover the Truth; *ganar el pleito*, to get the Suit of Law.

Ser, to be; sometimes governs an Accusative, in the Infinitive; as, *es bueno ser hombre bonrado*, it is good to be an honest Man,

Of the Ablative.

All Passive Verbs, and generally most of the Reciprocals, will have the Ablative with *de* ; as, *sôî amado de mi Pádre*, I am loved of my Father ; *me levanto de la Cáma*, I get up from the Bed ; except *acostárse*, *recostárse*, *sentarse*, which have the Ablative with *en*.

The Price of a Thing is put after Verbs in the Accusative with *por* ; as, *lo compré por un péso*, I bought it for a piece of Eight ; *lo vendí por tres reales*, or *à tres reales la yárda*, I sell it at three Reals per Yard.

Verbs of Plenty, Filling, Emptying, Loading, or Unloading, will have an Ablative ; as, *abúndo de riquezas*, I abound of Riches ; *te llenaré de opróbrios*, I will load you with Injuries, &c.

Verbs that betoken Receiving, or Distance, or taking away, will have an Ablative ; as, *recibí mil pésos de Pédro*, I received one thousand Pieces of Eight of Peter : *Kensington dista tres mállas de Londres*, Kensington is three Miles from London.

Verbs of arguing, quarrelling, fighting, &c. require the Ablative with *con* ; as, *arguir*, *reñir*, *peleár*. The Verbs that govern in *Latin* these Prepositions *a*, *ex*, *ab*, will have in *Spanish* an Ablative with *de*, if *cum*, *con* ; *pro*, *por* ; *post*, *despues* ; *usque*, *básta*, &c.

Observe at the last, that the following Rules are retained by the *Spanish* Authors, for the Verbs, viz.

1. If the Word governed by the Verb signifies a thing animate, generally it is put in the Dative Case ; as, *vôî à ver à mi Pádre*, I go to see my Father, *ámo à mi Mádre*, I love my Mother.

The Verbs of Motion to a Place, always govern the Dative ; as, *vôî à Madrid*, I go to Madrid : the Verbs of Motion, from a Place, govern the Ablative with *de* ; as, *vengo de España*, I come from Spain ; if the Action, Motion, or Passion is through

a Thing or Place, then the Verbs govern the Accusative with *por* ; as, *vendré por Paris*, I shall come by way of Paris ; *sufrió por v. md.* I suffered for you, &c.

3. To express a Thing indefinitely, the Spaniards always use the Accusative Case ; as *trábigo pan y vino* ; as in Latin, *affero panem & vinum*.

4. The Verbs *vér*, to see ; *mirár*, to look ; differ ; because *vér* requires Accusative ; as, *vér el Palacio*, to see the Palace ; and *mirár*, Dative and Accusative, as *Míro el juégo* ; *míro à los que juégan*, but when they signify to look for one, then they govern the Accusative with *por* ; as *Estói mirándo por v. md.* I am looking for you.

Of the Particles requisite to some Tenses.

5. The Present Tense of the Subjunctive, &c. and the first and second Preterimperfects of the said Mood, are construed with *que*, *paraque*, *porque*, *aunque*, *bienque*, *oxala*, *supuestoque*, *puésto que*, *da doque*, *a fin que*, *conque*, *puesque*, &c. as,

Es buéno que yo váya, it is good, that I go.

Paraque el venga, To the end that he may come.

Porque tu aprendieffes à orár, for that you might learn how to pray.

Aunque el venga, &c. altho he come, &c.

Afin que Aprendiéra, ò *aprendieffe*, to the end that he might learn, &c.

The impersonal Verbs generally govern the Subjunctive with *que*, but with this Distinction ; that when the impersonal is in the Present Tense, or Future of the Indicative Mood, then they always govern the present of the Subjunctive Mood ; but when the Impersonal (or any other Verb taken impersonally) is in any of the Preterits of the Indicative, then it governs the Imperfect, the Perfect, the Plus-perfect,

perfect, or the Future of the Subjunctive, according to the meaning of the Speech; as,

Conviene or *Convendrá*, *que el Réy en Persóna Cománde el Ejército*, it is convenient, or it will be convenient, that the King in Person do command the Army.

Convino *que el Príncipe fuéſſe con el*, it was convenient that the Prince should go with him.

The Present Subjunctive is likewise construed with the Particles *por sutil*, *por Docto*, *por sábio*, *por pequeño*, *por Grande*, &c. but *por* stands there for *aunque*, although; as,

Qualquiera cosa cosa por pequeña que sea bace su papel en el mundo, any thing, although it be little or small, does some service in the World, that is, serves for some Thing or Purpose in the World.

An Imperative often requires the Present, the first and second Preterimperfect, and the Future of the Subjunctive Mood, as, *sea loque sea*, let it be as it will, altho' it be so: *sea loque fuera* or *fuéſſe*, let the Thing be, or happen as it would; *sea loque fuere*, happen what it shall happen, at all Events.

All the Tenses of the Subjunctive may be construed with *luégoque*, *quando*, *si*, *como*, *aunque*; but *pléga à Dios*, and *sea Dios servido*, require only the Present Subjunctive; and *plugiera* or *pluguiéſſe*, *fuera* or *fuéſſe* *Dios servido* may be construed with all the Tenses of the Subjunctive, except the Present Tense.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood requires *si*, *quando*, *aunque*, *ò y como*, *de gusto*, *con gusto*, *de muy buena* *ò mala gana*, *ò quan de gana*, *por ventúra*, *acáſo*, &c.

Pues, *puesque*, *aunque*, *como*, *quando*, *luégo*, may be construed with all the Tenses of the Indicative Mood; as, *quando vine del campo*, *caí del caballo*, *pues perdí el estribo*, when I came from the Country I fell from the Horse, because I lost the Stirrup, &c.

The third Imperfect of the Subjunctive Mood is sometimes construed by Circumlocution, viz. with the Infinitive and the Words, *bía, bías, bía, &c.* as *bablarte bía* (for *hablaría*), *escribirle bía por el correo* (for *escribiríale*), *abrazarla bía* (for *abrazaría*) ; and the Reader will find, that if the Pronoun and the Letter *b* are taken away, it remains that Tense ; as, if from *bablarte bía, te* and *b* is taken, there it will remain *hablaría*. And although some Authors are of Opinion that *bablarte bía*, stands for *bablarte iba*, I was going to speak to you ; yet Father *Valéra* observes that that manner of speaking is a Circumlocution proper to the third Preterimperfect, and often used in the *Spanish* Poetry, adding *b* to *ía* by the Figure Epenthesis, to denote that the Accent should lie on the *í*, as *hacerte bía bien, si fuesse buéno*, (*hacerte biá* for *haría*) he would do good for you, if you was good.

The second Future of the Indicative Mood, which is made by the Auxiliary Verb *havér*, is construed with Elegancy with the Particles *me, te, se, le, la, lo, les, las, los*, at the End of the Infinitive ; as, *Guiarme has* for *me guiarás*, or rather for *has de guiárme*, you must guide me ; *darte hé mi bía en casamiento* for *be de darte*, or *te daré mi bía en casamiento*, I will or must give you my Daughter in Marriage ; *darte la be*, for *be de dártela*, or *te la daré*, I will give her to you.

7. The *English* Tongue has one Sign to the Infinitive, viz. *to* ; and in *Spanish* there is none for the Infinitive, as Infinitive, as *Amár*, to love ; *Leér*, to read ; *oír*, to hear : Altho' there are several Particles used in *Spanish* before the Infinitive, they are governed by other preceeding Verbs or Nouns Substantives, and these are *a, pára, de, con, en, por, hasta, despuesde*, and *el* when the Infinitive serves as a Nominative to another Verb.

CH A P. V.

Of Prepositions.

THE Cases to be given to some Parts of Speech, being one principal Part of Syntax, and there being properly no Cases in *Spanish*, as there are in *Latin*, we will therefore treat of the Prepositions, which answer the End of the *Latin* Cases.

When the Noun in Speech denotes the Person possessing, or signifies whose a Thing is, we always make use of the Preposition *de*; as, '*Esto libro es de Juan*, This is *John's* Book; unless we use the positive Degree of that same Person, making it an Adjective to the Thing possessed; as, '*Esta ley es de Dios* or *divina*, This is *God's* Law, or *divine* Law.

This Use of the Positive is so necessary, when the Possession belongs to any of the Pronouns, *yo*, *tu*, *se*, that we must always say, '*Esta Casa es mia*, *tuya*, *suya*, This House is mine, yours, his; not *de mi*, *ti*, or *si*. But they may be used when they do not denote Possession; as, *acuérdate de mi*, remember me; *duélete de ti*, have Compassion on your self; *dió buena cuenta de si*, he gave a good Account of himself.

The Preposition *de* is also applied to the Place from whence we come; as, *Vengo de Palacio*, I come from Court.

When the Preposition denotes Acquisition, or the Person for whom a Thing is, we use the Prepositions *a*, or *pára*; as, *dáale a Juan ésta carta*, give *John* this Letter; '*Esta carta es pára Juan*, this Letter is for *John*. Except here the Terminations, *me*, *te*, *se*, of the Pronouns *yo*, *tu*, *el*, which though they

denote Acquisition, do not admit of these Prepositions ; as, *dióme el dinero*, he gave me the Money.

They are also applied to the Place we are going to, whether proper or appellative ; as, *Vói a Madrid, de dónde partiré para Róma*, I am going to *Madrid*, from whence I will set out for *Rome*.

A is also applied to the Noun Passive ; as, *Pédro ama a Juán*, *Peter* loves *John* ; but when the Noun is an Appellative, it is sometimes used, and sometimes omitted ; as, *El maestro enseña los Discípulos*, or *a los Discípulos*, the Master teaches the Scholars.

The Preposition *Con*, before *mi*, *ti*, *si*, requires, that the Syllable *go* should be added to them ; as, *ven conmigo*, come with me ; *iré contigo*, I will go with you, *Pédro es áspero consigo*, *Peter* is harsh to himself. When *Con* is before an Infinitive, then the Verb is turned into a Gerund in *English* ; as, *con amár*, with loving.

Prepositions in Composition are frequent in *Spanish*, that is, joined to other Words and made one with them. These are commonly *a*, and *en*, *em*, &c. as, *Dinéro*, is Money, thence *bómbre adinerádo*, a money'd Man ; and we see the like in the *English*, where adding *ed* to Money makes the same as the *Spanish a* : But this does not hold in most other Words : from *Noche*, Night, *anochecer*, to grow Night, which the *English* does not express without such Circumlocutions. *Vide*, the second Part, and the Remarks.



CHAP. VI.

Of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Interjections.

VERY little need be said of these three Parts of Speech more than has been observed before.

As for those Adverbs, that are formed by adding *ménte* to Adjectives, as is done in *English*, by the Addition of the Syllable *ly*; when two of this Sort follow one another, the two additional Syllables, *ménte*, of the first of them, are always cut off; thus, *Caminár segura, y alegreménte*, To travel safely, and merrily.

A Negative Adverb joined to any other Negative Part of Speech, does not make an Affirmative, as in *Latin*, and other Languages; for, *No véo a nádie*, is, I see No-body; *No te balla ninguno*, No-body can find you; nor can the same Words be taken negatively without both the Negatives; for, it can not properly be said in *Spanish*, *Véo a nádie*, for, I see No-body; but if we would avoid the two Negatives, we must say, *No véo a persóna alguna*, I see not any Person; *Nádie te balla*, No-body can find you.

Thus, *No quiero náda*, is, I will have Nothing; but, *un no náda*, is next to Nothing; as, *Fáltale un no náda del péso*, It wants as much as Nothing of the Weight. Notwithstanding which, the learned in *Spain* are of a contrary Opinion; and do rightly say, that in the *Spanish*, as well as in *Latin*, two Negative Parts of Speech make an Affirmative; as, *No náda, algo*, something, &c.

No, is also sometimes used by way of Interrogation; as, *No vendréis por acá?* Will not you come this Way?

The Conjunction *Tambien*, also, and *Tampóco*, neither, are used thus; *El va, y yo iré también*, He goes, and I will go also; *El no quiere, ni yo tampóco*, He will not, nor I neither.

Of Interjections, there is no more to add to what has been said already.

Of Figurative Construction.

THERE are two Sorts of Construction, the Proper, or Simple; and the Improper, or Figurative. The first of them is that which in all Points is agreeable to the Rules of Grammar, which has been sufficiently spoken of before. The Figurative is a Way of speaking that departs in some respect from the established Rules, and yet is admitted and received, because in common Use, not only among the Illiterate, but also among the Learned.

What little there is of this Sort in the *Spanish* Tongue most necessary to be known, shall be comprehended in a few Lines.

The Paragoge, a Figure which adds some Letter, or Syllable at the End of a Word, is now quite out of Use in *Spanish*, but may be found in some old Poems, especially common Songs and Ballads, where they sometimes, to make up a Verse, say, *Amóre* for *Amór*, Love; *Cantáre*, for *Cantár*, a Song, or to sing: But these superfluous Additions are now, as has been said, quite laid aside, and only found in the Verb, *Sói*, and *Vói*, from the Verbs *Ser*, to be, and *Ir*, to go; and therefore according to the general Rule of *Spanish* Verbs, ought to be *Só*, and *Vo*, as they were used in former Ages, but of latter Times the *i* has been added for the better Sound.

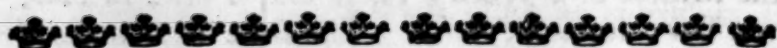
The Syncope is the cutting off some Letter, in the Middle of a Word ; as, *yo vía*, I saw, *tu vías*, you saw ; for *veía*, *veías*. The same is frequently used in the second Person Plural of the Preter-imperfect Tense of the Optative, and Subjunctive Moods, of Verbs ; as *Anduviésséis*, for *Anduviéssedeis* ; *Andariáis*, for *Andariadeis* ; *Anduviérais*, for *Anduviéradeis*, &c.

The Apocope, is cutting off a Letter at the End of a Word ; as, *Mas val prevenir, que ser prevenido*, It is better to prevent, than to be prevented ; where we have *mas val*, for *mas vále*. The same may be seen in other Words, but now little used.

Metathesis, is Inverting the natural Order of the Letters in a Word ; as, some are apt to say, *bacéldo*, do it ; *decéldo*, say it ; *quitáldo*, take it away ; instead of *bacéldo*, *decéldo*, *quitáldo*, which are the properest and most polite Way of speaking, and therefore the other Way not to be imitated.

There is another Figurative Construction, called Eclipsis, when several Words are left out of a Sentence, and to be understood ; as, *Buénos días*, Good-morrow, where is to be understood, *os dé Dios*, God give you ; *buén Viáge*, a good Voyage ; *sub-intelligitur*, *os dé Dios*, God give you ; and so in many other Cases, which are common in all Languages, and therefore do not need to have much said of them.

The same may be said of many other Figures, which if all were to be mentioned, would rather tire, than inform the Reader ; and it would be likewise superfluous to mention here, and to burden the Memory with the Rules of the Prosody, which are the same as those of the Latin, and no ways necessary to learn the *Spanish* Language, besides what has been said in the Orthography.



Some General Observations for forming
the *Spanish* from the *Latin*.

Latin Substantives which have their Ablative in tate become Spanish by changing tate into dad, laying the Accent as in the Latin, as,

<i>Latin</i>	{	Charitate	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Caridad
		Fidelitate			Fidelidad
		Obscuritate			Obscuridad
		Voluntate			Voluntad
		Infinite			Infinidad
		Magnanimitate			Magnanimidad

Many Latin Words beginning with pl change it into ll in Spanish ; as,

<i>Latin</i>	{	Plenus	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Lléno
		Pluvia			Llúvia
		Plaga			Llaga
		Plorare			Llorar
		Planctus			Llanto

But this is nothing of a general Rule, for very many *Latin Words* beginning with *pl* retain the same in *Spanish* ; as, *Planta*, a Plant ; *Placer*, Delight ; *Plébe*, the Multitude ; *Pluma*, a Feather, &c.

Latin

Latin Words beginning with f, in Spanish often change it into H, thus

<i>Latin</i>	{	Facere	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Hacér
		Faba			Hába
		Falco			Halcón
		Farina			Harína
		Formosus			Hermófo
		Ferrum			Hiérro
		Fervor			Hervór
		Furnus			Hórno

Latin Substantives ending in one in the Ablative, become Spanish by taking off the last Vowel, as

<i>Latin</i>	{	Educatione	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Educación
		Religione			Religión
		Congregatione			Congregación
		Generatione			Generación

Where note, that they change *t* into *c*, as above.

<i>Latin</i>	{	Sermone	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Sermón
		Cicerone			Cicerón
		Platone			Platon

Latin Substantives ending in o in the Ablative, are true Spanish, as

<i>Latin</i>	{	Ornamento	<i>Spanish</i>	{	Ornaménto
		Experimento			Experimentó
		Exemplo			Exémplo
		Argumento			Arguménto
		Antidoto			Antídoto

264 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

Latin Adjectives ending in lis, in Spanish cast away is, thus

Latin { Materialis
Finalis
Facilis
Debilis

Spanish { Material
Finál
Fácil
Débil

Latin Adjectives ending in us, are made Spanish by their Ablative in o, as

Latin { Malus
Bonus
Siccus
Humidus

Spanish { Málo
Buéno
Séco
Húmido

Latin Verbs become Spanish by only cutting off the last e, thus

Latin { Castigare
Amare
Tenere
Perdere
Sentire

Spanish { Castigár
Amár
Tenér
Perdér
Sentír

It would be endless to pretend to shew all the Affinity between the *Spanish* and the *Latin*, the main Body of the former being derived from the latter, with only such small Difference as may easily be conceived from what has been said above.





A
VOCABULARY,
CONTAINING

Such Words as most frequently occur in common Use, and are therefore most necessary to be first known by Learners; as, The Parts of the Body, Household-Furniture; Names of Beasts, Birds, and Fishes; the Service at Table; Fruit, Trees, Cloathing, and many other Sorts, all under their respective Heads.



The Parts of Human Body.
Pártes del Cuérpo Humáno.

<p>LA cabéza, <i>the head.</i> El célebro, <i>the brain.</i> El cogóte, <i>the part behind, where the head and neck join.</i> La coronílla, <i>the crown of the head.</i> La molléra, <i>the mould of the head.</i> La frénte, <i>the forehead.</i></p>	<p>Las fiénes, <i>the temples.</i> La oréja, <i>the ear.</i> La ternílla de la oréja, <i>the gristle of the ear.</i> El huéco de la oréja, <i>the hollow of the ear.</i> La téla del oído, <i>the drum of the ear.</i> La céja, <i>the eyebrow.</i> El párpado, <i>the eyelid.</i></p>
--	--

Las

*The Parts of Human Body.**Partes del Cuerpo Humano.*

- Las pestañas, the eye-lashes.* *La núca, the nape of the*
El lagrimál, or la cuénca *neck.*
del ojo, the corner of the *La garganta, the throat.*
eye. *El gaznate, the gullet.*
El blánc del ojo, the white *El seno, the bosom.*
of the eye. *La teta, a pap.*
La niña del ojo, the eye- *El pézon de la teta, the*
ball, or sight of the eye. *nipple of the breast.*
Téla del ojo, the film of *El pecho, the breast.*
the eye. *El estómago, the stomach.*
Niervo óptico, the optic *Las costillas, the ribs.*
nerve. *La barriga, the belly.*
La nariz, the nose. *El ombligo, the navel.*
Las ventánas de la nariz, *La ingle, the groin.*
the nostrils. *El brazo, the arm.*
La ternilla de la nariz, the *El códo, the elbow.*
gristle of the nose. *El sobáco, the armpit.*
La punta de la nariz, the *La mano, the hand.*
tip of the nose. *La muñeca, the wrist.*
La mexilla, or el carrillo, *La palma de la mano, the*
the cheek. *palm of the hand.*
La boca, the mouth. *Los dedos, the fingers.*
La enzía, the gum. *Las juntúras, or júnatas de*
Los diéntes, the fore teeth. *los dedos, the joints of*
Las muélas, the grinders. *the fingers.*
Los colmillos, the eye teeth. *La yéma del dedo, the*
La lengua, the tongue. *brawn of the finger.*
El paladár, the palate. *El pulgár, the thumb.*
La quixáda, the jaw. *El dedo índice, the fore-*
La bárba, the chin, or the *finger.*
beard; but in the latter *El dedo del corazón, the*
sense commonly used in the *middle finger.*
plural, Bárbas. *El dedo annulár, the fourth*
El cuélló, the neck. *finger.*
La cervíz, the binder part *El dedo menique, or au-*
of the neck. *riculár, the little finger.*

La

The Parts of Human Body.

Pártes del Cuérpo Humáno.

La uña, <i>the nail.</i>	El pié, <i>the foot.</i>
Las espáldas, <i>the back.</i>	La plánta del pié, <i>the sole of the foot.</i>
Loshómbros, <i>the shoulders.</i>	La gargánta del pié, <i>the joint of the foot.</i>
Los lómos, <i>the loins.</i>	El empéine, <i>the instep.</i>
Los ládos, <i>the sides.</i>	El calcañál, <i>the heel.</i>
Las nálgas, <i>the buttocks.</i>	El dédo del pié, <i>a toe.</i>
Las pártes vergonzófas, <i>the privities.</i>	El dédo górdó, <i>the great toe.</i>
El mústlo, <i>the thigh.</i>	La piél, or el pelléjo, <i>the skin.</i>
La rodilla, <i>the knee.</i>	El cabéllo, <i>the hair.</i>
El jarréte, <i>the ham.</i>	Un pélo, <i>a single hair.</i>
La piérna, <i>the leg.</i>	La cára, <i>the face.</i>
La pantorrilla, <i>the calf of the leg.</i>	El viságe, <i>the visage.</i>
La espinílla, <i>the spine-bone.</i>	
El tovíllo, <i>the ankle.</i>	

The interior Parts of Human Body.

Pártes interiôres dél Cuérpo Humáno.

M Orecillo, <i>a muscle.</i>	La espaldilla, <i>the shoulder-bone.</i>
Grássa, or gordú- ra, <i>fat.</i>	La canilla del brazo, <i>the arm bone.</i>
Membrána, <i>a membrane.</i>	Huéssó sacro, } <i>the rump</i>
Nêrvio, or niêrvo, <i>a nerve.</i>	or Rabadilla, } <i>bone.</i>
Véna, <i>a vein.</i>	Esqueléto, <i>a skeleton.</i>
Artéria, <i>an artery.</i>	El corazón, <i>the heart.</i>
Ternilla, <i>a gristle.</i>	Los bófes, or } <i>the lungs</i>
Huéssó, <i>a bone.</i>	Los pulmónes, or } <i>or the</i>
Meólló, or } <i>marrow.</i>	Los liviános, } <i>lights.</i>
Tuétano, }	El hígado, <i>the liver.</i>
La calavéra, <i>the skull.</i>	El bázo, <i>the spleen.</i>
Choquezuélas, <i>the chine bones.</i>	Los riñones, <i>the kidneys.</i>
El espinázo, <i>the back bone.</i>	Los sêfos, <i>the brains.</i>
Las costillas, <i>the ribs.</i>	El celêbro, <i>the brains.</i>

El

The interior Parts of Human Body.

Partes interiores del Cuerpo Humano.

El estómago, <i>the stomach.</i>	La flema, <i>flegm.</i>
La boca del estómago, <i>the</i>	El quile, <i>the chile.</i>
<i>pit of the stomach.</i>	La leche, <i>the milk.</i>
Las tripas, <i>the guts.</i>	Orina, or urina, <i>urine.</i>
Los intestinos, <i>the bowels.</i>	Estiércol, <i>dung.</i>
La madre, or } <i>the matrix,</i>	Sudor, <i>sweat.</i>
La matriz, } <i>or womb.</i>	Móco, <i>snot.</i>
La vexiga, <i>the bladder.</i>	Cáspa, <i>scurf.</i>
La sangre, <i>the blood.</i>	Saliva, <i>spittle.</i>
La cólera, <i>the choler.</i>	Lágrima, <i>a tear.</i>

The five Senses,
Los cinco Sentidos.

La vista, <i>the sight.</i>	El gusto, <i>the taste.</i>
El oído, <i>the hearing.</i>	El tacto, <i>the feeling.</i>
El olfato, <i>the smell.</i>	

Good Qualities in Human Bodies,
Buénas Calidades del Cuerpo Humano.

Salúd, <i>health.</i>	Brío, <i>sprightliness.</i>
Hermosura, <i>beauty.</i>	Buén talle, <i>a good shape.</i>

Defects in Human Bodies,
Defectos del Cuerpo Humano.

Fealdad, <i>deformity.</i>	Flaqueza, <i>weakness.</i>
Arrugas, <i>wrinkles.</i>	Ser tuerto, <i>to have but one</i>
Pécas, <i>freckles.</i>	<i>eye.</i>
Lagañas, <i>blear-eyes.</i>	Coxéz, <i>lameness.</i>
Verruga, <i>a wart.</i>	Ser tartamúdo, <i>to stammer.</i>
Lunár, <i>a mole.</i>	Corcóva, <i>crookedness.</i>
Núbe en el ojo, <i>a pearl</i>	Ser calvo, <i>to be bald-headed.</i>
<i>in the eye.</i>	Ser rómo, <i>to have a flat nose.</i>
Catarata, <i>a cataract.</i>	Estár estropeado, <i>to be crip-</i>
Ceguedad, or ceguera, <i>blindness.</i>	<i>pled.</i>
Magrura, <i>leanness.</i>	Tullido, <i>lame of the limbs.</i>
	Eunucho, <i>an eunuch.</i>
	Zúrdo,

Defects in Human Bodies,
Defectos del Cuérpo Humáno.

Zúrdo, <i>left-handed.</i>	Mánco, <i>lame of a hand.</i>
Vísco, or visójo, <i>squint-</i>	Múdo, <i>dumb.</i>
ey'd.	Sórdo, <i>deaf.</i>

Of all that appertains to Cloathing,
De lo que toca al vestir.

Páño, <i>cloth.</i>	Fiéltro, <i>felt.</i>
Páño fino, <i>fine cloth.</i>	Angéo, <i>canvas.</i>
Páño básto, <i>coarse cloth.</i>	Bayéta, <i>bays.</i>
Páño tundído, <i>mill'd cloth.</i>	Lána, <i>wooll.</i>
Grána, or } <i>Scarlet.</i>	Estámbré, <i>worsted.</i>
Escarláta, }	Séda, <i>silk.</i>
Ráxa, <i>cloth rasb.</i>	Bocací, <i>buckram.</i>
Sayál, <i>sackcloth.</i>	Jóya, <i>a jewel.</i>
Frísa, <i>frize.</i>	Hevília, <i>a buckle.</i>
Estaméña, <i>serge.</i>	Alamáres, <i>loops on coats.</i>
Estófa, <i>stuff.</i>	Ojál, <i>a button-hole.</i>
Taferán, <i>taffety.</i>	Bordadúra, <i>embroidery.</i>
Ráso, <i>satin.</i>	Botón, <i>a button.</i>
Terciopélo, <i>velvet.</i>	Fránja, or } <i>fringe.</i>
Damásko, <i>damask.</i>	Fluéque, }
Brocado, <i>brocade.</i>	Púntas, or encáxe, <i>lace.</i>
Gorgorán, <i>program.</i>	Cínta, <i>a ribbon.</i>
Chamelóte, <i>taby.</i>	Listón, <i>a broad ribbon.</i>
Téla de oro, <i>cloth of gold.</i>	Passamáno, <i>gold or silver</i>
Algodón, <i>cotton.</i>	lace.
Fustán, <i>fustian.</i>	Ribére, <i>an edging.</i>
Líno, <i>flax.</i>	Sombréro, <i>a hat.</i>
Cambráy, <i>cambrick.</i>	Cópa del sombréro, <i>the</i>
Holánda, <i>holland.</i>	crown of the hat.
Ruán, <i>fine French linnen.</i>	Fálda del sombréro, <i>the</i>
Téla de cáñamo, <i>bempen</i>	brim of the hat.
cloth.	Trencillo, <i>the hat-band.</i>
Terlíz, <i>ticken.</i>	Plumáge, <i>a feather.</i>
Calicú, <i>calico.</i>	Bonetrillo de viejo, <i>a skull-</i>
Gáza, <i>muzlin.</i>	cap.

Bonéte,

*Of all that appertains to Cloathing.**De lo que tóca al vestír.*

Bonéte, <i>a cap.</i>	Bótas, <i>boots.</i>
Bonéte pára dormír, <i>a night-cap.</i>	Poláinas, <i>spatterdashs.</i>
Bonéte de clérigo, <i>a clergy-man's square cap.</i>	Espuélas, <i>spurs.</i>
Górra, <i>an old fashion cap.</i>	Puños, or } <i>cuffs or ruffles.</i>
Caperúza, <i>another sort of cap.</i>	Bueltas, }
Camísa, <i>a shirt.</i>	Tahalí, <i>a shoullder-belt.</i>
Almilla, <i>a wastecoat.</i>	Tíros, <i>a waste-belt.</i>
Chúpa, <i>a wastecoat.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Calzoncillos, <i>drawers.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Jubón, <i>a doublet.</i>	Cápa, <i>a cloak.</i>
Mánga, <i>a sleeve.</i>	Casaca, <i>a coat.</i>
Mánga perdida, <i>a loose hanging sleeve.</i>	Ungarina, <i>a coat.</i>
Faldillas de jubón, <i>the skirts of a doublet.</i>	Guante, <i>a glove.</i>
Calzones, <i>breeches.</i>	Ceñidór, <i>a girdle.</i>
Balóna, <i>a band.</i>	Cabelléra, <i>a wig.</i>
Cuéllo, <i>a collar.</i>	Pañuelo, or } <i>a pocket</i>
Coléto, <i>a buff coat.</i>	Pañizuélo, or } <i>band-</i>
Agujéta, <i>a point.</i>	Liénzo de fal- } <i>ker-</i>
Faltriquéra, <i>a pocket.</i>	triquéra, } <i>chief.</i>
Bolsillo, <i>a coat or waste-coat-pocket.</i>	Rópa, or } <i>a gown.</i>
Médias, <i>stockins.</i>	Ropón, }
Médias de séda, <i>silk-stockings.</i>	Rópa de levantár, <i>a morn- ing gown.</i>
Médias de estambre, <i>worsted stockings.</i>	Pelíco, or } <i>a shepherd's</i>
Lígas, <i>garters.</i>	Zamárra, } <i>jerkin.</i>
Zapátos, <i>shoes.</i>	
Escarpínes, <i>socks.</i>	
Pantúflo, <i>a slipper.</i>	
Borceguí, <i>a buskin.</i>	

*Pára Mugéres,
For Women.*

Tocádo, <i>a head-dress.</i>
Tóca, <i>a quois.</i>
Mánto, <i>a veil.</i>
Sáya, <i>a petticoat.</i>
Vasquiña, <i>an upper petticoat</i>
Guardapiés, <i>a petticoat.</i>
Enáguas, <i>the petticoat next to them.</i>

Of all that appertains to Cloathing for Women.

De lo que tóca al vestír pára Mugéres.

Avantál, or delantál, an	Avanico, a fan.
apron.	Guardasól, or } an umbrella.
Ballénas, stays.	Quitasól, }
Rópa, a gown.	Relóx, or } a watch.
Mantilla, a mantle.	Muéstra, }
Capillo, a hood.	Tablillas, tables.
Chápin, properly a Spanish	Espéjo, a looking-glass.
high clog, made of cork,	Buxeta, a little box.
but applied to signify any	Estufilla, a muff.
other.	Calcetas, under stockings of
Liénzo del cuélllo, a neck-	ibread or cotton.
bandkerchief.	Péinador, a combing cloth.
Zarcillos, ear-rings.	Cosas de niños, things for
Arracadas, pendants.	children.
Gargantilla, a necklace.	Pañales, clouts.
Collár, a collar.	Mantillas, mantles.
Manillas, or } bracelets.	Fáxa, a rowler or swaith.
Bracelètes, }	Juguétes, play-things.
Jóyas, jewels.	Cúna, a cradle.
Sortijas, rings.	Ama, a nurse.
Pedrerías, precious stones.	Díxes, toys.
Anillo, a ring.	

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocánte al Comér y Bebé.

L A comída del médio	Hastío, a loathing of meat
día, dinner.	for want of stomach.
Céna, supper.	'Asco, a loathing at the
Almuérzo, breakfast.	sight of nastiness.
Merienda, bever, or after-	Borrácho, a drunkard.
noon's luncheon.	Buén bebedor, a good
Colación, collation.	drinker.
Banquète, an entertainment.	Buen apetíto, a good appe-
Combidádo, a guest.	tite.
Hámbre, hunger.	Gloton, a glutton.
Sed, thirst.	Pan, bread.

Pan

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocánte al Comér y Beber.

Pan bláncó, <i>white bread.</i>	Pepitória, <i>giblets.</i>
Pan candiál, <i>the whitest bread.</i>	Carbonáda, <i>meat broil'd on the coals.</i>
Pan bázo, <i>brown bread.</i>	Picadillo, <i>a bask.</i>
Pan molléte, <i>French bread.</i>	Cecína, <i>hung meat.</i>
Pan reciénte, <i>new bread.</i>	Pernil, or } <i>a gammon or</i>
Pan de tódo el trigo, <i>wheaten bread.</i>	Jamón, } <i>ham.</i>
	Carnéro, <i>mutton.</i>
Pan de centéno, <i>rye bread.</i>	Váca, <i>beef.</i>
Pan deceváda, <i>barley bread.</i>	Cordéro, <i>lamb.</i>
Pan de avéna, <i>oaten bread.</i>	Ternéra, <i>veal.</i>
Pan de mijo, <i>millet bread.</i>	Puércó, <i>pork.</i>
Pan de levadúra, <i>leavened bread.</i>	Cábra, <i>goat's flesh.</i>
Biscócho, <i>bisket.</i>	Cabrító, <i>kid.</i>
	Tocino, <i>bacon.</i>
Rebanáda de pan, <i>a slice of bread.</i>	Pierná de carnéro, <i>a leg of mutton.</i>
Cantéro de pan, <i>a crust of bread.</i>	Espálda de carnéro, <i>a shoulder of mutton.</i>
La cortéza, <i>the crust.</i>	Lómo, <i>a loin.</i>
Mássa, <i>dough.</i>	Pécho, <i>a breast.</i>
Tórta, <i>a cake.</i>	Mános de carnéro, <i>sheep's trotters.</i>
Rosquílla, <i>a fine sort of cake, made like a roll.</i>	Ruéda de ternéra, <i>a fillet of veal.</i>
Buñuélo, <i>a fritter.</i>	Affadúra, <i>the pluck.</i>
Tárta, <i>a tart.</i>	Salchicha, <i>a saucidge.</i>
Quesadilla, <i>a cheesecake.</i>	Longaniza, <i>a great saucidge.</i>
Empanáda, <i>a pye.</i>	
Cárne, <i>flesh.</i>	
Cárne cozída, <i>boil'd meat.</i>	Salchichón, <i>the biggest saucidge.</i>
Cárne assáda, <i>roast meat.</i>	
Cárne estofáda, <i>stew'd meat.</i>	Morcilla, <i>a blood pudding.</i>
Cárne fríta, <i>fry'd meat.</i>	Pastél, <i>a pasty.</i>
Cárne grilláda, <i>broil'd meat.</i>	Cáldo, <i>broth.</i>
Cárne mómia, <i>flesh without bones.</i>	Sópa, <i>soop.</i>
	Potáge, <i>pottage.</i>

Pápas,

Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.

De lo tocánte al Comér y Beber.

Pápas, or }	any sort of	Huévos y torrénos, col-
Púches, }	pap.	lops and eggs.
Písto, jelly broth.		Huévos rebuélto, butter'd
Léche, milk.		eggs.
Náta, cream.		Huévos de saltriquera,
Suéro, whey.		yolks of eggs in a shell of
Requesón, curds.		sugar, to carry in the
Mantéca, butter.		pocket.
Quéso, cheese.		Huévos reales, } sweet eggs
Cuájo, rennet.		or Cabéllos } spun out
Cuajada, milk bardned with		de ángeles, } like hairs.
rennet, before it breaks		Sazón, seasoning.
into curds and whey.		Salmuera, brine.
Huévo, an egg.		Espécias, spice.
Yéma de huévo, the yolk		Pimiénta, pepper.
of an egg.		Gengibre, ginger.
Clára del huévo, the white		Clávo de especias, cloves.
of the egg.		Canéla, cinnamon.
Huévo blándo, a soft egg.		Nuéz muscada, or de
Huévo dúro, a hard egg.		especia, nutmeg.
Huévo frésco, a new egg.		Flor de especia, mace.
Huévo en cáscara, an egg		Mostáza, mustard.
in the shell.		Agráz, verjuice.
Huévo cozído, a boil'd egg.		Vinagre, vinegar.
Huévo asádo, an egg roast-		Azéite, oyl.
ed in the embers.		Sal, salt.
Huévo estrelládo, a fry'd		Azúcar, sugar.
egg.		Escabéches, pickles.
Huévo huéro, an addle egg.		Dúlces, sweatmeats.
Huévo empolládo, an egg		Almívar, sugar boil'd up
with a chicken in it.		for conserves.
Huévos de pescádo, the		Conservas, conserves.
spawn of fish.		Confites, comfits.
Huévos mexídos, yolks of		Mermeláda, marmelade.
eggs stew'd with white		Peráda, pears preserv'd like
wine and sugar.		marmelade.

T

Pastillas

*Of what concerns Eating and Drinking.**De lo tocánte al comer y Beber.*

Pastillas de bóca, <i>sweet lozenges.</i>	Víno añejo, <i>old wine.</i>
Naranjada, <i>candy'd oranges.</i>	Mosto, <i>new wine.</i>
Turrón, <i>a rich sweetmeat made of almonds, honey, &c.</i>	Víno ligero, <i>light wine.</i>
Barquillos, <i>or } sweet-</i>	Vinazo, <i>a strong wine.</i>
Suplicaciones, <i>} wafers.</i>	Víno moscatél, <i>muscadine wine.</i>
Bebida, <i>drink.</i>	Malvasía, <i>malmsey.</i>
Víno, <i>wine.</i>	'Agua pié, <i>liquor made of water put to the grapes after they have been press'd.</i>
Víno puro, <i>pure wine.</i>	Hez del víno, <i>wine lees.</i>
Víno aguado, <i>wine and water.</i>	Hypocrás, <i>hypocras.</i>
Víno vuélto, <i>prick'd wine.</i>	Aguardiente, <i>brandy.</i>
Víno tinto, <i>red wine.</i>	Cervéza, <i>ale or beer.</i>
Víno blanco, <i>white wine.</i>	Alója, <i>meath or metheglin.</i>
Víno halóque, <i>pale wine.</i>	Cídra, <i>cyder.</i>
Víno claréte, <i>claret wine.</i>	Chocoláte, <i>chocolate.</i>
Víno dulce, <i>sweet wine.</i>	Teá, <i>or Thé tea.</i>
Víno picánte, <i>sharp wine.</i>	Limonáda, <i>limonade.</i>

Los Animáles, 'Aves, Péces, Frútas, Híerbas, Raíces, &c. comestíbles, se hallarán debaxo de sus propios Títulos.

The Beasts, Fowls, Fishes, Fruits, Herbs, Roots, &c. that are eatable, will be found under those Heads.

Béstias.	Beasts.
Béstia, <i>a beast.</i>	Váca, <i>a cow.</i>
Béstia domestica, <i>or</i>	Buéy, <i>an ox.</i>
Mánfa, <i>a tame beast.</i>	Carnéro, <i>a sheep.</i>
Béstia feróz, <i>a fierce beast.</i>	Ovéja, <i>an ewe.</i>
Ganádo, <i>cattle.</i>	Cordéro, <i>a lamb.</i>
Ganádo mayór, <i>great cattle.</i>	Bezérro, <i>a calf.</i>
Tóro, <i>a bull.</i>	Javalí, <i>a wild boar.</i>
	Puércos,

Puérco, <i>an hog.</i>	Alazán tostádo, <i>a dark sorrel.</i>
Búfalo, <i>a buffalo.</i>	Hovéro, <i>that has a white spot on the off hind foot.</i>
Cabállo, <i>an horse.</i>	Rubicán, <i>flea-bitten.</i>
Cabállo castrádo, <i>a gelding.</i>	Cabállo aguádo, <i>py-bald.</i>
Garañón, <i>a stallion.</i>	Yégua, <i>a mare.</i>
Cabállo entéro, <i>a stone-horse.</i>	Cabrón, <i>a he-goat.</i>
Cabállo corredór, <i>a race-horse.</i>	Cábra, <i>a she-goat.</i>
Cabállo de alquiler, <i>a horse to be let.</i>	Cabríto, <i>a kid.</i>
Cabállo de máno, <i>a led horse.</i>	Pérro, <i>a dog.</i>
Cabállo de pósta, <i>a post-horse.</i>	Pérro de caza, <i>a bound.</i>
Cabállo rebélde, <i>a restive horse.</i>	Sabuésso, <i>a blood-bound.</i>
Cabállo desbocádo, <i>a bard mouth'd horse.</i>	Podénco, or } <i>a setting dog.</i>
Cabállo medrófo, <i>a starting horse.</i>	Perdiguéro }
Cabállo tropezadór, <i>a stumbling horse.</i>	Pérro calládo, <i>a bound that does not open well.</i>
Cabállo que sacúde, <i>a jolting horse.</i>	Párro báxo, <i>a terrier.</i>
Cabállo asmático, <i>a broken winded horse.</i>	Lebrél, <i>a grey-bound.</i>
Cabállo indómito, <i>a horse that has not been broke, or will not be broke.</i>	Pérro ventór, <i>a finder.</i>
Cabállo báyo, <i>a bay horse.</i>	Pérro del águá, <i>a water-dog.</i>
Báyo castaño, <i>a chesnut bay.</i>	Mastín, <i>a mastif.</i>
Báyo escúro, <i>a brown bay.</i>	Pérro de pastór, <i>a shepherd's dog.</i>
Báyo dorádo, <i>a bright bay.</i>	Pérro veladór, <i>a house dog.</i>
Picázo, <i>a py'd horse.</i>	Perrillo de falda, <i>a lap-dog.</i>
Rúziorodádo, <i>dapple grey.</i>	Aláno, <i>a bull-dog.</i>
De colór de gamúza, or gamuéza, <i>a cream colour.</i>	Gálgo, <i>a hare hound.</i>
Alazán, <i>a sorrel.</i>	Lechón, <i>a sucking-pig.</i>
	Cochíno, <i>a young hog.</i>
	Conéjo, <i>a rabbit.</i>
	Hacanéa, <i>a pad.</i>
	Muléto, <i>a young mule.</i>
	Múlo, <i>an he mule.</i>
	Múla, <i>a she mule.</i>
	Pótro, <i>a colt.</i>
	Pollíno, <i>an asses's colt.</i>
	Ciérvo, <i>a stag.</i>
	T 2
	Ciérva,

276 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

Ciérva, <i>a hind.</i>	Ratón, <i>a mouse.</i>
Cachorro de ciérvo, <i>a</i>	Ráta, <i>a rat.</i>
<i>sawn.</i>	Zorra, <i>or</i> } <i>a fox.</i>
'Affas de ciérvo, <i>a stag's</i>	Rapósa, }
<i>horns.</i>	Tópo, <i>a mole.</i>
Rástro, <i>opisadas de ciérvo,</i>	Hiéna, <i>an biena.</i>
<i>the track of a stag.</i>	Leopárdo, <i>a leopard.</i>
Comadréja, <i>a weasel.</i>	León, <i>a lion.</i>
Texón, <i>a badger.</i>	Leóna, <i>a lyones.</i>
Gamúza, <i>a wild goat.</i>	Leoncillo, <i>a lion's whelp.</i>
Cábra montés, <i>a roe-buck.</i>	Lóbo, <i>a wolf.</i>
Gáto de algália, <i>a civet-cat.</i>	Lóbo cervical, <i>an ounce.</i>
Gámo, <i>a fallow-deer.</i>	'Oso, <i>a bear.</i>
Dáma, <i>a doe.</i>	Osóillo, <i>a bear's cub.</i>
Hardilla, <i>a squirrel.</i>	Pantéra, <i>a panther.</i>
Elephánte, <i>an elephant.</i>	Abáda, <i>or</i> } <i>a rhino-</i>
Foína, <i>or</i> } <i>a martin.</i>	Rhinocerónte, }
Márta, }	Tígre, <i>a tiger.</i>
Móno, <i>a monkey.</i>	Puérco montés, <i>a wild</i>
Gímio, <i>an ape.</i>	<i>boar.</i>
Armínio, <i>an ermin.</i>	Navájas, <i>or colmillos de</i>
Erízo, <i>an hedge-hog.</i>	<i>javalí, the tusks of a wild</i>
Liébre, <i>an hare.</i>	<i>boar.</i>
Liebrilla, <i>a levret.</i>	Lavajál de javáli, <i>the soil</i>
Conéjo, <i>a rabbit.</i>	<i>of a wild boar.</i>
Lirón, <i>a dormouse.</i>	

Creatures that drag on the Earth.

Animáles que se arrástran por Tierra.

Serpiénte, <i>a serpent.</i>	Cocodrillo, <i>a crocodile.</i>
Serpiénte aláda, <i>a flying</i>	Lagartíja, <i>a lizard.</i>
<i>serpent.</i>	Lagarto, <i>an alligator.</i>
Dragón, <i>a dragon.</i>	Bívora, <i>or víbora, a viper.</i>
'Aspid, <i>an asp.</i>	Bivoréño, <i>or viboréño,</i>
Culébra, <i>a snake.</i>	<i>a young viper.</i>

Amphibious

Amphibious Creatures.

Animáles Amphíbios.

Bívaro, or	} a bever, or	Tortúga, or	} a tortoise.
Castór,		Galápago,	
Nútria, or	} an otter.		
Lódra,			

Savandíjas.

Araña, a spider.
 Arañuéla, a little spider.
 Carcóma, a worm in wood.
 Orúga, a caterpillar.
 Aradór de la máno, an
 band-worm.
 Sápo, a toad.
 Escarabájo, a beetle.
 Caracól, a snail.
 Hormíga, a pismire, or ant.
 Rána, a frog.
 Grillo, a cricket.
 Reboltón, an insect that
 spoils vines.
 Piójo, a louse.
 Liendre, a nit.
 Púlga, a flea.

Insects.

Chínche, a bug.
 Langósta, a locust.
 Escorpión, a scorpion.
 Tarántula, a tarantula.
 Polilla, a moth.
 Mósca, a fly.
 Moscárda, a wasp.
 Abéja, a bee.
 Moscón, a great fly.
 Zángano, a drone.
 Cigarra, a grasshopper.
 Abísipa, or avispa, a wasp.
 Tahón, a gad bee, or hornet.
 Lucernéja, a fire-fly.
 Maripósa, a butter-fly.
 Vaquilla de diós, a lady-
 bird.

'Aves.

'Aguila, an eagle.
 Aguilúcho, an eaglet.
 Búitre, a vulture.
 Esmerejón, a merlin.
 Gavilán, a sparrow-hawk.
 Mochuélo, a tassel-hawk.
 Halcón, a falcon.
 Torzuélo, a male facon.
 Girifálte, a gersfalcon.
 Alcotán, a lanner.
 Sácre, a sacre.

Birds.

Gárza, an heron.
 Gárzota, a small heron.
 Miláno, a kite.
 Cuérvo, a crow, or raven.
 Cornéja, a rook.
 Calándria, a lark.
 Nevecilla, a wagtail.
 Canário, a canary bird.
 Gilguéro, a goldfinch.
 Mírla, a blackbird.
 Pinzón, a chafinch.

278 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

Ruiseñór, <i>a nightingale.</i>	Pávo, <i>a turkey.</i>
Verderón, <i>a greenbird.</i>	Estorníno, <i>a sterling.</i>
Papagáyo, <i>a parrot.</i>	Francolín, <i>a godwit.</i>
Urraca, <i>a magpye.</i>	Faisán, <i>a pheasant.</i>
Grájo, <i>a daw.</i>	Zorzál, <i>a thrush.</i>
Lechúza, <i>an owl.</i>	Hortoláno, <i>an ortolan.</i>
Morciélagó, <i>a bat.</i>	Gorrión, <i>a sparrow.</i>
Mochuélo, <i>a chough.</i>	Perdíz, <i>a partridge.</i>
Cumáya, <i>a night raven.</i>	Palóma, <i>a dove.</i>
Chotacábras, <i>a goat-sucker.</i>	Pichón, <i>a pigeon.</i>
!Anade, <i>a duck.</i>	Palomíno, <i>a young pigeon.</i>
Cercéta, <i>a teal.</i>	Tórtola, <i>a turtle-dove.</i>
Chirlíto, <i>a curlew.</i>	Alción, <i>a king's-fisher.</i>
Cuervo maríno, <i>a cormo- rant.</i>	Golondrina, <i>a swallow.</i>
Gánso, <i>a goose.</i>	Avestruz, <i>an ostrich.</i>
Páto, <i>a goose.</i>	Ciguéña, <i>a stork.</i>
!Anfar, or } <i>the same.</i>	Cuculillo, <i>a cuckow.</i>
Anféron, }	Císne, <i>a swan.</i>
Cernícalo, <i>a wind whiffer.</i>	Pitiróxo, <i>a robin-red breast.</i>
Fúlga, <i>a moorhen.</i>	Grúlla, <i>a crane.</i>
Abión, <i>a martin.</i>	Pezpítalo, or } <i>a wagtail.</i>
Gavióta, <i>a gull.</i>	Chirivía, }
Somorgujón, or } <i>a diver.</i>	Abuillo, <i>a lapwing.</i>
Cercéta, }	Oropéndola, <i>a whistling.</i>
Cuervo maríno, <i>a cormo- rant.</i>	Vencéjo, <i>a martlet.</i>
Chócha, or } <i>a wood- cock.</i>	Abejarúco, <i>a titmouse.</i>
Gallína ciéga }	Abutárda, <i>a bustard.</i>
Tórdo, <i>a stare, or starling.</i>	Tórdo loco, <i>an owl.</i>
Codorníz, <i>a quail.</i>	Pelícano, <i>a pelican.</i>
Capón, <i>a capon.</i>	Feníz, or phénix, <i>a phoenix.</i>
Gállo, <i>a cock.</i>	Chírlo, <i>a wood-pecker.</i>
Gallína, <i>a hen.</i>	Picóverde, <i>a green beak.</i>
Póllo, <i>a chicken.</i>	Reyezuélo, <i>a plover.</i>
Pólla, <i>a pullet.</i>	Aguzaniéve, <i>a wren.</i>
	Talavilla, <i>a bunting.</i>
	Mérgo, <i>a puffin.</i>

Parts of a Bird.

Pártes de 'Ave.

El pico, *the beak.*

Plúma, *a feather.*

Plumázo, *the down.*

'Ala, *the wing.*

Peñolas, or } *quills, or pen-*

Penulas, } *feathers.*

Pié, *the foot.*

Cóla, *the tail.*

Búche, *the craw.*

Gárras, or } *the claws, or*

Uñas, } *talons.*

Rabadílla, *the rump.*

Pechúga, *the wing of a fowl dress'd.*

Entrepechúga, *the brawn.*

Pézes.

Abúrno, *a blech.*

Sábalo, *a rich fish like salmon.*

Anchóva, *an anchove.*

Anguila, *an eel.*

Balléna, *a whale.*

Bárbo, *a barble.*

Méro, *the bolybut.*

Lúfo, *a pike.*

Cárpa, *a carp.*

Calamaréjo, *a calamary.*

Talpáire, *the miller's thumb.*

Cabállo maríno, *a sea horse.*

Cóngrio, *a conger.*

Delphín, *a dolphin.*

Doradillo, *the gilt back.*

Lenguádo, *a foal.*

Langósta, *a lobster.*

Esturión, *a sturgeon.*

Góbio, *a gudgeon.*

Harénque, *a herring.*

'Ostra, *an oyster.*

Fishes.

Lampréa, *a lamprey.*

Langostílla, *a prawn.*

Lóbo, *a bass.*

Sárda, *a mackarel.*

Marsópa, *a porpoise.*

Abadéxo, *poor jack.*

Merlúza, *stock-fish.*

Alméja, *a muscle.*

Ortiga pez, *the stinging-fish.*

Pérca, *a perch.*

Púlpo, *a polipus.*

Ráya, *a thornback.*

Líza, *skate.*

Sardína, *a pilchard.*

Salmón, *salmon.*

Xíbia, *a cuttle-fish.*

Ténca, *a tench.*

Atún, *a tunny fish.*

Tremiélga, *a cramp fish.*

Trúcha, *a trout.*

Rodoválo, *a turbot.*

Parts of a Fish.

Pártes del Pez.

Hocico, <i>the snout.</i>	Huévos de pez, <i>the spawn</i>
Agallas, <i>the gills.</i>	<i>properly the hard row,</i>
'Alas con que náda, <i>the fins.</i>	<i>which is in small grains.</i>
Escámas, <i>the scales.</i>	Léche del pez, <i>is the soft</i>
Espínas, <i>the bones.</i>	<i>row.</i>
Cóncha, <i>the shell of such</i>	
<i>as have one.</i>	

'Arboles.

Trees.

Alvaricóque, <i>an apricot</i>	Manzáno, <i>an apple tree.</i>
<i>tree.</i>	'Alamo negro, <i>an alder</i>
Alméndro, <i>an almond tree.</i>	<i>tree, or black poplar.</i>
Durázno, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Alamo bláncó, <i>the common</i>
Guíndo, <i>a cherry tree.</i>	<i>poplar.</i>
Cerézo, <i>an hart cherry tree.</i>	Cédro, <i>a cedar tree.</i>
Castáño, <i>a chefnut tree.</i>	Sahúco, <i>an elder tree.</i>
Cídro, <i>a citron tree.</i>	Enzína, <i>or</i>
Membríllo, <i>a quince tree.</i>	Róble, <i>} an oak.</i>
Servál, <i>a service tree.</i>	Cornízo, <i>the cornil tree.</i>
Pálma, <i>a date tree.</i>	Cyprés, <i>the cypress tree.</i>
Higuéra, <i>a fig tree.</i>	'Ebano, <i>the ebony tree.</i>
Azuféifo, <i>a jujub tree.</i>	Arze, <i>the maple.</i>
Granádo, <i>a pomgranate tree.</i>	Háya, <i>the beach.</i>
Limón, <i>a lemon tree.</i>	Frésno, <i>the ash.</i>
Morál, <i>a mulberry tree.</i>	Azébo, <i>the holm, or holy</i>
Níspelo, <i>a medlar tree.</i>	<i>oak.</i>
Avelláno, <i>a nut tree.</i>	Téxo, <i>the ewe tree.</i>
Nogál, <i>a walnut tree.</i>	Laurél, <i>the laurel.</i>
Olivo, <i>or Azeitúno, an</i>	Alcornóque, <i>the cork tree.</i>
<i>olive tree.</i>	Olmo, <i>the elm.</i>
Azebúche, <i>a wild olive tree.</i>	Píno, <i>a pine tree, or fir</i>
Naránjo, <i>an orange tree.</i>	<i>tree.</i>
Alvérchigo, <i>a peach tree.</i>	Plántano, <i>a plane tree.</i>
Ciruélo, <i>a plumb tree.</i>	Sáuze, <i>a willow tree.</i>
Perál, <i>a pear tree.</i>	Téjo, <i>the linden tree.</i>

Arbolillos,

Arbolillos, or Mátas.

Shrubs.

Agnocásto, *the agnus castus.*

Aliso, *the lote tree.*

Bálsamo, *the balsam tree.*

Bóx, *the box tree.*

Madresélva, *the honey-suckle-tree.*

Zarzamóro, *the blackberry-bush.*

Hiniésta, *broom.*

Uva espino, *a gooseberry-bush.*

Adélpha, *ivy.*

Brúsko, *butcher's broom.*

Alhócigo, *the pistacho tree.*

Regalíz, or regalicia, *the liquorice tree.*

Roméro, *rosemary.*

Rosal, *a rose tree.*

Savina, *savin.*

Tamaríz, *a tamarind tree.*

Aléña, *privet.*

Viña, *a vine.*

Labrúsca, *a wild vine.*

Párra, *a wall vine.*

Frúta,

Fruit.

Albaricóque, *an apricot.*

Alméndra, *an almond.*

Madróño, *a fruit like a straw-berry.*

Durázno, *a peach.*

Guínda, *a cherry.*

Ceréza, *an heart-cherry.*

Castaña, *a chestnut.*

Cídra, *a citron.*

Membrillo, *a quince.*

Sérva, *service.*

Dátil, *a date.*

Hígo, *a fig.*

Bréva, *the first fig.*

Azufáifa, *a jujub.*

Granáda, *a pomegranate.*

Limón, *a lemon.*

Móra, *a mulberry.*

Níspero, *a medlar.*

Avellána, *a hazel nut.*

Nuéz, *a walnut.*

Azeitúna, *an olive.*

Naránja, *an orange.*

Alvérchigo, *a peach.*

Ciruéla, *a plumb.*

Ciruéla passa, *a prune.*

Péra, *a pear.*

Péra bergamóta, *a bergamot-pear.*

Manzána, *an apple.*

Camuéfa, *a pippin.*

Manzána de S. Juan, *a John-apple.*

Uva espín, *a gooseberry.*

Melocotón, *a melocotoon.*

Melón, *a melon.*

Bellóta, *an acorn.*

Algarróba, *a carob.*

Alcaparra, *a caper.*

Zárza móra, *a blackberry.*

Tamaríz, *a tamarind.*

Piñón, *the kernel of a pine-apple.*

Uva, *a grape.*

Things belonging to Fruit and Trees,
Cófas tocántes a Frútas y 'Arboles.

Cáscara de granáda, nuéz,	Raíz, a root.
<i>Ec. the shell of a pomegranate, nut, or the like.</i>	Hébras de raíz, the fibres of a root.
Telita de granáda, o ótra semejante frúta, the thin film in the pomegranate, or such fruit.	Arraigár, to take root.
Pimpóllo, the sucker or sprout of a vine.	Trónco, the trunk of a tree.
Sarmiénto, a twig of a vine.	Cortéza del árbol, the bark.
Yéma de viña, the bud of a vine.	Zúmo del árbol, the sap.
Zarcillos de la vid, the tendrils of a vine.	Móho, the moss.
Pámpano, a vine branch.	Rámo, a branch.
Renuévo de vid, a young shoot of a vine.	Hója, a leaf.
Racímo de úvas, a bunch of grapes.	Cuéscó de frúta, the stone of fruit.
Pepíta de la úva, a grape-stone.	Mondadúras de frúta, the paring of fruit.
Podár, to prune.	Pezón, the stalk.
Escavár, to lay open the roots.	Engerír, or ingerír, to engraft.
Rodrigár, to prop a vine.	Almáciga, a nursery of trees.
Desojár, to nip the superfluous leaves of the vine.	Arboléda, a grove.
Cavár, to dig about a vine.	Arbol filvéstre, a wild tree.
Rozár, to weed.	Plantár, to plant.
	Marhojár, to bark trees.
	Engerír de púa, to engraft.
	Engerír de cañúto, to inoculate.
	Engérto, a graft.
	Pepíta, the seed or small kernel of fruit.

Corn, and its Parts,
Trígos, y sus Pártes.

Trigo, wheat.	Trigo rubión, red wheat.
Trigo candíal, the best wheat.	Escándia, bearded wheat.
	Herrén, mashing corn.
	Espélta,

Espélta, <i>spelt.</i>	Tallo de la espíga, <i>the stem.</i>
Centéno, <i>rye.</i>	Núdo de la espíga, <i>the knot under the ear.</i>
Ceváda, <i>barley.</i>	Núdo del tallo, <i>the joynt of the stem.</i>
Avéna, <i>oats.</i>	Gránza, <i>the husk or chaff.</i>
Arróz, <i>rice.</i>	Rás pa de la espíga, <i>the beard.</i>
Mijo, <i>millet.</i>	
Mijo gránde, or } <i>indian</i>	
Maíz, } <i>wheat.</i>	

Legúmbres,

Pulses.

Alverjón, <i>a great vetch.</i>	Lantéja, <i>a lentil.</i>
Garvánzos, <i>a sort of spanish peas.</i>	Altramúz, <i>a lupin.</i>
Arvéjas, or } <i>peas.</i>	Judía, <i>a french bean.</i>
Guifantes, } <i>peas.</i>	Zicerchás, <i>tares.</i>
Mába, <i>a bean.</i>	Cáscara, <i>the cod.</i>
	Holléjo, <i>the husk.</i>

Roots, Plants, and Herbs.

Rayces, Plantás, y Yérvas.

Ajénjo, <i>wormwood.</i>	Cóles, <i>coleworts.</i>
'Apio, <i>smallage.</i>	Bérza, <i>cabbage.</i>
'Ajo, <i>garlick.</i>	Repóllo, <i>a sprout.</i>
Enéldo, <i>dil.</i>	Colyflór, <i>coliflower.</i>
Anís, <i>amiseed.</i>	Calabáza, <i>a pumpkin or gourd.</i>
Armuéllés, <i>orach, or golden flowers.</i>	Pepíno, <i>a cucumber.</i>
Alcachófa, <i>an artichoke.</i>	Perexíl de la mar, <i>sampbire.</i>
Espárago, <i>asparragus.</i>	Mastuérzo, <i>garden cresses.</i>
Abrótano, <i>southernwood.</i>	Escalona, <i>a scallion.</i>
Acélga, <i>white beet.</i>	Escaróla, <i>endive.</i>
Blédo, <i>a blite.</i>	Espináca, <i>spinage.</i>
Borrája, <i>borage.</i>	Hinójo, <i>fennel.</i>
Cárdó, <i>a thistle.</i>	Hoblón, <i>bops.</i>
Zanahórias, <i>carrots.</i>	Lechúga, <i>a lettice.</i>
Voléza, <i>chervil.</i>	Lechúga cerrá- } <i>cabbage</i>
Hóngo, <i>a mushroom.</i>	da, or Murciána, } <i>lettice.</i>
Chirivía, <i>a skirret.</i>	Lechúga crespa, <i>curl'd lettice.</i>
Achicória, <i>succory or endive.</i>	

Nábo,

Nábo, <i>a turnep.</i>	Genciána, <i>gentian.</i>
Cebólla, <i>an onion.</i>	Camedreós de água, <i>germander.</i>
Acetófa, <i>french sorrel.</i>	Hierba puntéra, <i>bouseleek.</i>
Romáza, <i>long sorrel.</i>	Veléño, <i>henbane.</i>
Azedéra, <i>common sorrel.</i>	Marrúbio, <i>borebound.</i>
Perexil, <i>parsley.</i>	Matricária, <i>feverfew.</i>
Puérro, <i>a leek.</i>	Málvas, <i>mallows.</i>
Verdolága, <i>purslain.</i>	Coróna de rey, <i>melilot.</i>
Ruíponces, <i>rampions.</i>	Torongíl, <i>balm.</i>
Xaramágo, <i>or</i> }	Mercuriál, <i>mercury.</i>
Ruquéta, }	Mil hójas, <i>or</i> }
Rúda, <i>rue.</i>	Ciénto en rama, }
Sálvia, <i>sage.</i>	Corazoncillo, <i>St. John's wort.</i>
Criadilla de tierra, <i>a truffle or pignut.</i>	Nárido, <i>spikenard.</i>
Marjeróna, <i>sweet marjoram.</i>	Orégano, <i>origanum.</i>
Culantro, <i>coriander.</i>	Tabáco, <i>tobacco.</i>
Agárico, <i>agarick.</i>	Parietária, <i>pellitory.</i>
Gafete, <i>or</i> }	Cepacavállo, <i>ground thistle.</i>
Epatório, }	Dormidéra, <i>poppey.</i>
Acíbar, <i>aloes.</i>	Perficária, <i>arsesmart.</i>
Angélica, <i>angelico.</i>	Pervínca, <i>perwinkle.</i>
Celidónia, <i>celandine.</i>	Rósa montés, <i>piony.</i>
Betónica, <i>betony.</i>	Llantén, <i>plantain.</i>
Bistorta, <i>bistort or snake-weed.</i>	Polipódio, <i>polypody.</i>
Manzanilla, <i>camomile.</i>	Axenúz, <i>or</i> }
Culantrillo de pózo, <i>maiden-bair.</i>	Neguilla, }
Centória, <i>centory.</i>	Hierba cidréra, <i>briony.</i>
Coloquintida, <i>coloquintida.</i>	Poléo, <i>penniroyal.</i>
Verbásco, <i>or</i> }	Elebóro, <i>belebore.</i>
Gardolóbo, }	Ruybárbo, <i>rheubarb.</i>
Hamapóla, <i>a poppey.</i>	Sanguinária, <i>bloodwort.</i>
Dítamo, <i>ditony.</i>	Sanícula, <i>self-beal.</i>
Artadégua, <i>fleabane.</i>	Sarazinésca, <i>heart-wort.</i>
Eléboro, <i>belebore.</i>	Satyrión, <i>ragwort.</i>
Tártago, <i>spurge.</i>	Saxifrágia, <i>saxifrage.</i>
	Escabiosa, <i>scabious.</i>
	Escamonéa, <i>scammony.</i>
	Cebólla

Cebólla albarrana, <i>a wild onion.</i>	Líno, <i>flax.</i>
Alfórvas, <i>fenugreek.</i>	Cegúta, <i>hemlock.</i>
Hierba cána, <i>ground-sell.</i>	Halécho, <i>fern.</i>
Valeriána, <i>valerian.</i>	Palomílla, <i>fumitory.</i>
Verbéna, <i>vervein.</i>	Yézgo, <i>dane wort, or dwarf elder.</i>
Bránca urfina, <i>bears foot.</i>	Júnco, <i>a rush.</i>
Acónito, <i>wolfbane.</i>	Cerrája, <i>sow thistle.</i>
Espliego, <i>lavender spike.</i>	Mandrágora, <i>mandrake.</i>
Amór del horteláno, <i>burdock.</i>	Morélla, <i>night shade.</i>
Perexil de água, <i>water parsley.</i>	Correhuéla, <i>knot grass.</i>
Tamariz silvéstre, <i>tamarisk shrub.</i>	Ortiga, <i>a nettle.</i>
Asarabáca, <i>asarabacca.</i>	Valéla, <i>pepperwort.</i>
Calaminto, <i>catmint.</i>	Azafrán, <i>saffron.</i>
Caña, <i>a reed.</i>	Xabonéra, <i>soap-wort.</i>
Doradilla, <i>mules fern.</i>	Alfálfa, <i>darnel.</i>
Cañamo, <i>bemp.</i>	Albaháca, <i>sweet basil.</i>
	Hierbabuéna, <i>mint.</i>
	Sérpol, <i>wild thyme.</i>
	Tomillo, <i>thyme.</i>

Flóres,

Flowers.

Jacinto, <i>the hyacinth.</i>	Vellorita, <i>a cowslip.</i>
Jasmin, <i>jasmin.</i>	Ranúnculo, <i>the ranunculus.</i>
Junquillo, <i>the junquil.</i>	Rósa, <i>a rose.</i>
Azucéna, <i>a lilly.</i>	Maravilla, <i>a marigold.</i>
Máya, <i>a daisy.</i>	Girafól, <i>the sun-flower.</i>
Narcisso, <i>the daffodil.</i>	Tulipán, <i>a tulip.</i>
Clavél, <i>a pink.</i>	Violéta, <i>a violet.</i>
Amaránte, <i>the velvet flower.</i>	Alelí, <i>a white violet.</i>
Peónia, <i>a peony.</i>	Capúllo, <i>a rose-bud.</i>

Colóres,

Colours.

Morádo, <i>purple.</i>	Colór de ladrillo, <i>brick colour.</i>
Colór de auróra, <i>aurora colour.</i>	Azúl, <i>blue.</i>
Bláncó, <i>white.</i>	Colombíno, <i>dove-colour.</i>
	Limonádo,

Limonádo, <i>lemon colour.</i>	Grána, <i>scarlet.</i>
Amúsko, <i>filamot.</i>	Leonádo, <i>tawny.</i>
Colór de lláma, <i>flame colour.</i>	Négro, <i>black.</i>
Colór de fuégo, <i>fire colour.</i>	Anaranjádo, <i>orange colour.</i>
	Azeitunádo, <i>olive colour.</i>
Carmesí, <i>crimson.</i>	Róxo, <i>or</i> }
Pádo, <i>grey.</i>	Colorádo, } <i>red.</i>
Ceniciénto, <i>ash colour.</i>	Berméjo, <i>reddish.</i>
Amarillo, <i>yellow.</i>	Colór de rósa, <i>rose colour.</i>
Encarnádo, <i>carnation.</i>	Vérde, <i>green.</i>
	Colór de mar, <i>sea-green.</i>

Virtúdes y Vicios, buenas y malas Calidades
de los Hómbres.

*Virtues and Vices, good and bad Qualities
of Men.*

R ecatádo, <i>cautious.</i>	Reboltoso, <i>mutinous.</i>
Diéstro, <i>dextrous.</i>	Bien criádo, <i>well-bred.</i>
Dócil, <i>docil.</i>	Cortés, <i>courteous.</i>
Galán, <i>gallant.</i>	Grave, <i>sober.</i>
Símple, <i>harmless.</i>	Jústo, <i>just.</i>
Agúdo, <i>sharp.</i>	Prudente, <i>discreet.</i>
Vivo, <i>sprightly.</i>	Desvergonzádo, <i>impudent.</i>
Sutíl, <i>subtil.</i>	Fogoso, <i>fiery.</i>
Chocarréro, <i>given to buff-foolry.</i>	Impertinente, <i>impertinent.</i>
Nécio, <i>foolish.</i>	Importuno, <i>troublesome.</i>
Astúto, <i>crafty.</i>	Ligero, <i>light.</i>
Lóco, <i>mad.</i>	Descuidádo, <i>careless.</i>
Malicioso, <i>malicious.</i>	Temerário, <i>rash.</i>
Temeroso, <i>fearful.</i>	Afable, <i>affable.</i>
Espantadizo, <i>apt to be frightened.</i>	Amigable, <i>friendly.</i>
Valeroso, <i>brave.</i>	Bizarro, <i>brave.</i>
Tonto, <i>stupid.</i>	Charitativo, <i>charitable.</i>
Fantástico, <i>fantastical.</i>	Cásto, <i>chaste.</i>
Embustero, <i>deceitful.</i>	Constante, <i>constant.</i>
Desatinádo, <i>distracted.</i>	Devoto, <i>devout.</i>
Großero, <i>clownish.</i>	Diligente, <i>diligent.</i>
	Fiél, <i>faithful.</i>
	Generoso, <i>generous.</i>

Humilde,

Humilde, <i>umble.</i>	Rabiófo, <i>outrageous.</i>
Mifericordiófo, <i>merciful.</i>	Alégre, <i>merry.</i>
Paciénte, <i>patient.</i>	Ufano, <i>gay.</i>
Religiófo, <i>religious.</i>	Indecífo, <i>irrefolute.</i>
Ambiciófo, <i>ambitious.</i>	Zelófo, <i>jealous.</i>
Sobérbio, <i>proud.</i>	Adúltero, <i>an adulterer.</i>
Avariéto, <i>covetous.</i>	Rufián, <i>a ruffian.</i>
Hypócrita, <i>an hypocrite.</i>	Matadór, <i>a murderer.</i>
Cobárde, <i>a coward.</i>	Blasphemadór, <i>a blasphemer.</i>
Holgazán, <i>idle.</i>	Salteadór, <i>a highway-man.</i>
Altívo, <i>baughty.</i>	Juradór, <i>a swearer.</i>
Chifmófo, <i>a tale-bearer.</i>	Calumniadór, <i>a slanderer.</i>
Aduladór, <i>a flatterer.</i>	Murmuradór, <i>a censurer.</i>
Golófo, <i>a glutton.</i>	Hechicéro, <i>a forcerer.</i>
Defleál, <i>faithlefs.</i>	Trampófo, <i>a cheat.</i>
Defagradecido, <i>ungrateful.</i>	Homicída, <i>a murderer.</i>
Inhumáno, <i>inhuman.</i>	Inceftuófo, <i>inceftuous.</i>
Insolénte, <i>insolent.</i>	Ladrón, <i>a thief.</i>
Luxuriófo, <i>lewd.</i>	Mentirófo, <i>a liar.</i>
Porfiádo, <i>positive.</i>	Perjúro, <i>perjur'd.</i>
Perezófo, <i>slothful.</i>	Pérfido, <i>perfidious.</i>
Pródigo, <i>prodigal.</i>	Profáno, <i>profane.</i>
Váno, <i>vain.</i>	Rebelde, <i>a rebel.</i>
Mugeriégo, <i>given to women.</i>	Sacrílego, <i>a sacrilegious person.</i>
Atrevído, <i>bold.</i>	Traidór, <i>a traitor.</i>
Colérico, <i>passionate.</i>	

Pártes de un Réino,
Parts of a Kingdom.

Província, <i>a province.</i>	Aldéa, <i>a village.</i>
Ciudad, <i>a city.</i>	Distrito, <i>a district.</i>
Villa, <i>a market town.</i>	

Pártes de una Ciudad,
Parts of a City.

Cáfa, <i>a house.</i>	Iglesia, or	} <i>a church.</i>
Tienda, <i>a shop.</i>	Témplo,	
	Palácio,	

Palácio, <i>a palace.</i>	Mercádo, <i>a market.</i>
Hospítal, <i>an hospital.</i>	Carnicería, <i>the shambles.</i>
Cása de la villa, <i>or del</i>	Encrucijáda, <i>a cross way.</i>
ayuntamiéto, <i>the town-</i>	Lónja, <i>or</i> } <i>an exchange.</i>
bouse.	Bólsa, }
Tribunál, <i>a court of justice.</i>	Cárcel, <i>a prison.</i>
Arsenál, <i>an arsenal.</i>	Múros, <i>or</i> } <i>the walls.</i>
Académia, <i>an academy.</i>	Murállas, }
Colégio, <i>a college.</i>	Fortificacónes, <i>fortifica-</i>
Calle, <i>a street.</i>	tions.
Callejón, <i>an ally.</i>	Plazuéla, <i>a little market</i>
Calléja, <i>or</i> }	<i>or square.</i>
Callejuéla, }	

Of the Inhabitants of Cities,
De los Moradóres de las Ciudades.

Niño, <i>a child.</i>	El poblácho, <i>or la plébe,</i> <i>the mob.</i>
Muchácho, <i>a boy.</i>	Canálla, <i>the rabble.</i>
Muchácha, <i>a girl.</i>	Ciudadáno, <i>a citizen.</i>
Mózo, <i>a youth.</i>	Oficial, <i>a tradesman.</i>
Hómbre, <i>a man.</i>	Mecánico, <i>a mechanick.</i>
Mugér, <i>a woman.</i>	Labradór, <i>a peasant.</i>
Viéjo, <i>an old man.</i>	Aldeáno, <i>a countryman.</i>
Viéja, <i>an old woman.</i>	Pícaro, <i>a rogue.</i>
Decrépito, <i>one that is de-</i> <i>crepit.</i>	Esclávo, <i>a slave.</i>
Cóxo, <i>lame of the legs.</i>	Platóro, <i>a goldsmith.</i>
Máncó, <i>lame of the hands.</i>	Libréro, <i>a bookseller.</i>
Ciégo, <i>blind.</i>	Barbéro, <i>a barber.</i>
Sórdo, <i>lame.</i>	Mercadér de séda, <i>a mer-</i> <i>cer.</i>
Magistrádo, <i>a magistrate.</i>	Mercadér de páño, <i>a</i> <i>woollen-drapeer.</i>
Nóble, <i>noble.</i>	Mercadér de liénzo, <i>a</i> <i>linnen-drapeer.</i>
Hidálgo, <i>a gentleman.</i>	Sástre, <i>a tailor.</i>
Caballéro, <i>a knight.</i>	Costuréra, <i>a sempstress.</i>
Tendéro, <i>a shop-keeper.</i>	Sombreréro, <i>a hatter.</i>
Mercadér, <i>or</i> }	Calcetéro, <i>a hosier.</i>
Hombre de } <i>a merchant.</i>	Zapatéro,
negocio, }	

Zapatéro, <i>a shoe-maker.</i>	Juéz, <i>a judge.</i>
Herréro, <i>a smith.</i>	Carceléro, <i>a goalor.</i>
Albéitar, <i>a farrier.</i>	Verdúgo, <i>the executioner.</i>
Cerrajéro, <i>a lock-smith.</i>	Ceréro, <i>a wax-chandler.</i>
Lavandéra, <i>a laundress.</i>	Ganapán, or { <i>a porter to</i>
Comádre, } <i>a midwife.</i>	esportillero, { <i>carry bur-</i>
or Partéra, }	dens.
Médico, <i>a physician.</i>	Remendón, <i>a botcher, or</i>
Cirujáno, <i>a surgeon.</i>	cobler.
Charlatán, <i>a mountebank.</i>	Tataravuélo, <i>a grandfa-</i>
Sacamuélas, <i>a tooth-drawer.</i>	ther's grandfather.
Silléro, <i>a sadler.</i>	Bisfavuélo, <i>a great grand-</i>
Carpintéro, <i>a carpenter.</i>	father.
Peón, <i>a labourer.</i>	Avuélo, <i>a grandfather.</i>
Albañíl, <i>a bricklayer.</i>	Pádre, <i>a father.</i>
Pintór, <i>a painter.</i>	Mádre, <i>a mother.</i>
Panadéro, <i>a baker.</i>	Hijo, <i>a son.</i>
Carnicéro, <i>a butcher.</i>	Hija, <i>a daughter.</i>
Frutéra, <i>a fruiterer.</i>	Nieto, <i>a grandson.</i>
Verduléra, <i>an herb woman.</i>	Bisnieto, <i>a great grandson.</i>
Pasteléro, <i>a pastry-cook.</i>	Hermáno, <i>a brother.</i>
Tabernéro, <i>a vintner.</i>	Cuñado, <i>a brother in law.</i>
Cervezéro, <i>a brewer.</i>	Padrástro, <i>a step-father.</i>
Mesonéro, <i>an inn-keeper.</i>	Madrástra, <i>a stepmother.</i>
Ventéro, <i>the same.</i>	Suégro, <i>the husband's, or</i>
Reloxéro, <i>a watchmaker.</i>	the wife's father.
Pregonéro, <i>a cryer, or</i>	Nuéra, <i>the wife of the son.</i>
bawker.	Yérno, <i>the husband of the</i>
Joyéro, <i>a jeweller.</i>	daughter.
Boticário, <i>an apothecary.</i>	Primo hermano, <i>a cousin</i>
Buhonéro, <i>a pedlar.</i>	german.
Vidriéro, <i>a glazier.</i>	Tío, <i>an uncle.</i>
Carbonéro, <i>a collier.</i>	Sobrino, <i>a nephew.</i>
Jardinéro, <i>a gardiner.</i>	Primo segúndo, <i>a second</i>
Letrado, <i>a learned man,</i>	cousin.
or a lawyer.	Marído, <i>an husband.</i>
Procuradór, <i>a solicitor.</i>	Mugér, <i>a wife.</i>
Abogado, <i>an advocate, or</i>	Nóvio, <i>a bridegroom.</i>
counsellor at law.	Desposádo, <i>one betrothed.</i>
	U
	Ahijádo,

Ahijádo, <i>a godson.</i>	Víudo, <i>a widower.</i>
Padrino, <i>a godfather.</i>	Hernádo de léche, <i>a foster-brother.</i>
Madrina, <i>a godmother.</i>	Niño de la piédra, <i>a foundling.</i>
Compádre, <i>an he-gossip.</i>	Niño supuesto, <i>a false child.</i>
Comádre, <i>a gossip.</i>	Bastardo, <i>a bastard.</i>
Compañero, <i>or } a com-</i>	Donzélla, <i>a maiden.</i>
Camaráda, <i>} panion.</i>	Mugér casáda, <i>a married woman.</i>
Mellizo, <i>a twin.</i>	Mugér parída, <i>a lying-in woman.</i>
Cofráde, <i>a brother of the same society.</i>	'Ama de léche, <i>a wet nurse.</i>
Cofradía, <i>a guild or society.</i>	Mancéba, <i>a lewd mistress.</i>
Comunidad, <i>a company.</i>	Raméra, <i>or, } a whore.</i>
Huérfano, <i>an orphan.</i>	Púta,
Soltéro, <i>a bachelor.</i>	
Heredéro, <i>an heir.</i>	
Tutor, <i>a tutor.</i>	
Curador, <i>a guardian.</i>	

A House, and all that belongs to it.
 Casa, y todo lo perteneciente a élla.

Cása, <i>a house.</i>	Artezón, <i>an arch'd cieling.</i>
El solár, <i>the ground the house stands upon.</i>	Bóveda, <i>a vault.</i>
Cimiénto, <i>the foundation.</i>	'Alto de cása, <i>a story of a house.</i>
Paréd, <i>a wall.</i>	Escaléra, <i>a stair-case.</i>
Pátio, <i>a court.</i>	Tejado, <i>a til'd roof.</i>
Facháda, <i>the front.</i>	Puerta, <i>a door.</i>
Un andar or álto, <i>a floor.</i>	Pasadizo, <i>a passage or entry.</i>
Portál, <i>a porch.</i>	Corral, <i>a court-yard.</i>
Ventána, <i>a window.</i>	Trascorrál, <i>a back-yard.</i>
Entresuélo, <i>a low room or floor between the upper and lower that are more lofty.</i>	Cámara, <i>a bed-chamber.</i>
Zaquizamí, <i>or ciélo, the cieling; also the space between the cieling and the roof of a house, and a cock-loft.</i>	Aposénto, <i>or } a chamber.</i>
	Pieza,
	Quarto, <i>an apartment.</i>
	Anticámara, <i>an anticamber.</i>
	Requádra, <i>a back room.</i>
	Sála, <i>a hall.</i>

Corredór,

Corredór, <i>a gallery.</i>	Umbrál, <i>the threshold.</i>
Retrete, <i>a closet.</i>	Bastidores de la puerta, <i>the frame of the door.</i>
Estúdio, <i>a study.</i>	Postigo, <i>a wicket.</i>
Armário, or } <i>a cupboard.</i>	Quícios, or } <i>hinges.</i>
Alazéna, }	Góznos, }
Escaparate, <i>a press for cloaths, or the like.</i>	Cerradura, <i>a lock.</i>
Guárda róba, <i>a wardrobe.</i>	Cerradura de golpe, <i>a spring-lock.</i>
Alcóva, <i>an alcove.</i>	Candádo, <i>a padlock.</i>
Desván, <i>a garret.</i>	Pestillo, <i>the bolt of a lock.</i>
Balcón, or } <i>a balcony.</i>	Cerrójo, <i>a bolt.</i>
Miradór, }	Llave, <i>a key.</i>
Azutéa, <i>the flat roof of an house.</i>	Ventanilla, <i>a little window.</i>
Camaranchón, <i>a cockloft.</i>	Picaporte, <i>a latch.</i>
Tórre, <i>a tower.</i>	Tránca de puerta, <i>the bar of a door.</i>
Bodéga, or } <i>a cellar.</i>	Guárdas de la llave, <i>the wards of a lock.</i>
Cuéva, }	Cañuto de llave, <i>the pipe of a key.</i>
Repostería, <i>the butler's room.</i>	Vidriera, <i>the glass of the window.</i>
Despénfa, <i>a buttery or pantry.</i>	Réjas de ventana, <i>the bars of a window.</i>
Cozina, <i>a kitchen.</i>	Escalera de caracol, <i>a winding stair-case.</i>
Caballeriza, <i>the stable.</i>	Llanos de escalera, <i>the landing places of stairs.</i>
Perrería, <i>a dog-kennel.</i>	Descánso de escalera, <i>the half pace of stairs.</i>
Palomár, <i>a dove-house.</i>	Grada, or } <i>a step.</i>
Gallinéro, <i>a hen-roost.</i>	Escalón, }
Jardín, <i>a garden.</i>	Escalera secreta, <i>back stairs.</i>
Párque, <i>a park.</i>	Viga, <i>a beam.</i>
Priváda, or } <i>the privy.</i>	Vigón, <i>the girder, or main beam.</i>
Neceffária, }	Tábla, <i>a board.</i>
Coronilla del edificio, <i>the top of the structure.</i>	Cruzéro, <i>a rafter.</i>
Téja, <i>a tile.</i>	U 2
Pizarra, <i>a slate.</i>	Ladrillo,
Rípia, <i>a shingle.</i>	
Ala de tejádo, <i>the eaves of the house.</i>	
Canál, <i>the gutter.</i>	

Ladrillo, <i>a brick.</i>	Rodapiés, <i>the bases of the bed.</i>
Paréd maéstra, <i>the main wall.</i>	Tapéte, <i>a carpet.</i>
Paréd de en médio, <i>the party-wall.</i>	Sávanas, <i>sheets.</i>
Paréd de cal y cánto, <i>a wall of lime and stone.</i>	Frazâdas, <i>blankets.</i>
Tabíque, <i>a lath and plaster partition.</i>	Covertór, <i>the counterpane.</i>
Cal, <i>lime or plaster.</i>	Almohâdas, <i>pillows.</i>
Argamássa, <i>mortar.</i>	Tapicería, <i>tapestry.</i>
Encostradura de paréd, <i>the plaster of a wall.</i>	Pintúra, <i>or quâdro, a picture.</i>
Yéssó, <i>very fine white lime.</i>	Espéjo, <i>a looking-glass.</i>
Jalbégue, <i>white-wash.</i>	Candeléro, <i>a candlestick.</i>
Méssa, <i>a table.</i>	Despaviladeras, <i>snuffers.</i>
Bânco, <i>a bench.</i>	Arâña, <i>a branch to hold many candles.</i>
Sílla, <i>a chair.</i>	Yéscá, <i>tinder.</i>
Sílla de brâzos, <i>an arm-chair.</i>	Pajuéla, <i>a match.</i>
Taburéte, <i>a chair with a back.</i>	Pedernál, <i>a flint.</i>
Sitiál, <i>a stool without a back.</i>	Eslabón, <i>the steel to strike fire.</i>
Banquillo, <i>a stool.</i>	Orinál, <i>a chamber-pot.</i>
Cáxa, <i>a box.</i>	Colchón, <i>a quilt to lye on.</i>
Arca, <i>or arcón, a chest.</i>	Cólcha, <i>a quilt to lay on the bed.</i>
Caxón, <i>a case of drawers.</i>	Cátre, <i>a couch.</i>
Tiradór, <i>a drawer.</i>	Câma de campo, <i>a field-bed.</i>
Escritório, <i>a cabinet.</i>	Testéra de câma, <i>the bed's-head.</i>
Câma, <i>a bed.</i>	Colúnas de câma, <i>the bed-posts.</i>
Lécho, <i>the part of the bed that is laid on.</i>	Xergón, <i>a straw-bed.</i>
Armadura, <i>or maderáge de câma, a bedstead.</i>	Estéra, <i>a mat.</i>
Ciélo de la câma, <i>the bed's tester.</i>	Calentadór de câma, <i>a warming pan.</i>
Cortínas de câma, <i>bed-curtins.</i>	Chimenéa, <i>a kitchen.</i>
	Respiradéro, <i>or cañón de chimenéa, the funnel of the chimney.</i>
	Morillos,

Morillos, <i>andirons.</i>	Herráda, <i>a bucket or pail.</i>
Fuélles, <i>bellows.</i>	Cúbo, <i>a tub.</i>
Tenázas, <i>tongues.</i>	Lexía, or } <i>lye.</i>
Pála, or badíl, <i>a shovel.</i>	Coláda, } <i>lye.</i>
Guarda fuégo, <i>a skreen.</i>	Xabón, <i>soap.</i>
Urgadór, atisadór, <i>a pot-ker.</i>	Levadúra, <i>leaven.</i>
!Olla, <i>a pottage-pot.</i>	Rodilla de cozina, <i>a coarse kitchen cloth.</i>
Tapadéra, <i>the pot-lid.</i>	Estropájo, <i>a dish-clout.</i>
!Aña, <i>the ear of the pot.</i>	Pála del hórno, <i>the peel for the oven.</i>
Puchéro, <i>a pipkin.</i>	Harína, <i>meal.</i>
Cucharón, <i>a ladle.</i>	Salvados, <i>bran.</i>
Caldéra, <i>a kettle.</i>	Artéssa, <i>a tray.</i>
Escalfadór, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Mantéles, <i>table-cloth.</i>
Trévedes, <i>a trevet.</i>	Servilléta, <i>a napkin.</i>
Hornillo, <i>a stove.</i>	Aguamaníl, <i>an ewer.</i>
Hórno, <i>an oven.</i>	Almofia, <i>a bason.</i>
Sartén, <i>a frying-pan.</i>	Toálla, <i>a towel.</i>
Cázo, <i>a sauce-pan.</i>	Platillos, <i>plates.</i>
Cazuéla, <i>a little pan.</i>	Cuchillo, <i>a knife.</i>
Escumedéra, <i>a skimmer.</i>	Tenedór, <i>a fork.</i>
Parrillas, <i>a gridiron.</i>	Saléro, <i>salt.</i>
Coladéro, <i>a cullander, or streiner.</i>	Pláto, <i>a dish.</i>
Cedázo, <i>a sieve.</i>	Escudilla, <i>a porringer.</i>
Rálla, <i>a grater.</i>	Cuchára, <i>a spoon.</i>
Agúja de mechár, <i>a larding-pin.</i>	Tajadór, <i>a chopping-block.</i>
Añadór, <i>a spit.</i>	Jarro, <i>a mug.</i>
Azeitéra, or } <i>an oyl pot.</i>	Táza, <i>a cup or dish.</i>
Alcúza, } <i>an oyl pot.</i>	Salvilla, <i>a salver.</i>
Vinagéra, <i>a cruet.</i>	Flásko, <i>a flask, or bottle.</i>
Almiréz, <i>a metal mortar.</i>	Vídrio, <i>a glass.</i>
Mortéro, <i>a stone mortar.</i>	Mondadiéntes, <i>a tooth-picker.</i>
Máno de mortéro, <i>a pestle.</i>	Mayordómo, <i>a steward.</i>
Brazerillo, <i>a chafing-dish.</i>	Trinchánte, <i>a carver.</i>
Redóma, <i>a vial.</i>	Secretário, <i>a secretary.</i>
Sumidéro, <i>a sink.</i>	Camaréro, <i>a chamberlain, or valet de chambre.</i>
Cántaro, <i>a pitcher.</i>	U 3 Despenséro,

Despenséro, <i>a caterer, or clerk of the kitchen.</i>	Maéstre sala, <i>a sewer.</i>
Capellán, <i>a chaplain.</i>	Bodeguéro, <i>a butler.</i>
Limosnéro, <i>an almoner.</i>	Repostéro, <i>a butler.</i>
Páge, <i>a page.</i>	Halconéro, <i>a falconer.</i>
Lacáyo, <i>a footman.</i>	Cozinéro, <i>a cook.</i>
Cochéro, <i>a coachman.</i>	Galopín, <i>a scullion.</i>
Mózo de cabállos, <i>a groom.</i>	Portéro, <i>a porter.</i>
Caballerízo, <i>a gentleman of the horse.</i>	Caséro, <i>or hu-ésped, du-éño, or ámo de la cása,</i>
Copéro, <i>a cupbearer.</i>	} <i>the land-lord.</i>

*Of Country Affairs.**De las cosas del Campo.*

Alquería, <i>a country or farm house.</i>	Rastrillo, <i>the barrow.</i>
Quintéro, <i>a farmer.</i>	Sembradór, <i>a sower.</i>
Boyéro, <i>or</i>	Escardadór, <i>a weeder.</i>
Vaquéro, } <i>a cow-keeper.</i>	Rozadór, <i>a weeding-hook.</i>
Porquéro, <i>or</i>	Segadór, <i>a reaper.</i>
porquerízo, } <i>a swine-herd.</i>	Guadña, <i>a scythe.</i>
Pastór, <i>a shepherd.</i>	Trillo, <i>a flail.</i>
Zurrón, <i>a scrip.</i>	Hórca, <i>a fork.</i>
Cayádo, <i>a shepherd's crook.</i>	Viéldo, <i>a winnowing fan,</i>
Hónða, <i>a sling.</i>	Pescadór, <i>a fisher-man.</i>
Orteláno, <i>or</i>	Red barredéra, <i>a drag-net.</i>
Jardinéro, } <i>a gardiner.</i>	Vára, <i>or caña para pescar,</i>
Cavadór, <i>a ditcher.</i>	} <i>a fishing rod.</i>
Vinadéro, <i>a vine dresser.</i>	Sedál de la cáña, <i>a fishing-line.</i>
Azáda, <i>or</i>	Anzuélo, <i>a fishing-hook.</i>
Azadón, } <i>a spade.</i>	Cazadór, <i>a huntsman.</i>
Aradór, <i>or</i>	Cébo, <i>a bait.</i>
Labradór, } <i>a plough-man.</i>	Líga, <i>birdlime.</i>
Arádo, <i>a plough.</i>	Jáula, <i>a cage.</i>
Estéva, <i>or</i>	Obréro, <i>or</i>
Manzéra, } <i>a plough-bandle.</i>	Jornaléro, } <i>a day labourer.</i>
Réja del arádo, <i>a plough-share.</i>	Asnéro, <i>a keeper of asses.</i>
	Hómbre

Hómbre del cámpo, <i>a country-man.</i>	Bóveda de párras, <i>an arbour.</i>
Cámpo que descansa, <i>a fallow-field.</i>	Labérynto, <i>a labyrinth.</i>
Tierra entre los sùlcos, <i>a ridge.</i>	Grúta, <i>a grotte.</i>
Súlco, <i>a furrow.</i>	Cascáda, <i>a cascade.</i>
Trigo en hiérba, <i>green corn.</i>	Fuén-te, <i>a fountain.</i>
Tierra incúlta, <i>land not till'd.</i>	Chórr-o de águ-a, <i>a water-spout.</i>
Món-te, or } <i>a bill, or</i>	Pilón de fuén-te, <i>the vase of a fountain.</i>
Montaña, } <i>mountain.</i>	Encañádo, or } <i>an aqueduct.</i>
Cuésta, or } <i>a little bill.</i>	aquedúcto, }
Colládo, }	Hortalíza, <i>all sorts of herbage.</i>
Cérro, <i>a rising ground.</i>	Plánta, <i>a plant.</i>
Válle, <i>a valley.</i>	Camíno real, <i>the high-way.</i>
Abís-mo, <i>a bottomless pit.</i>	Sénda, or } <i>a path.</i>
Zánja, <i>a ditch.</i>	Veréda, }
Langúna, <i>a lake, or marsh.</i>	Pisáda, or } <i>a track.</i>
Llanúra, <i>a plain.</i>	Rástro, }
Péña, or } <i>a rock.</i>	Cavalgadúra, <i>a beast for the saddle.</i>
Róca, }	Carréta, <i>a waggon.</i>
Peñasco, <i>a great rock.</i>	Cárr-o, <i>a cart.</i>
Despeñadéro, <i>a precipice.</i>	Ruéda, <i>a wheel.</i>
Bósque, <i>a forest.</i>	Ráyo de ruéda, <i>the spoke of a wheel.</i>
Esplanáda, <i>a curious plain.</i>	Llántas, or } <i>the felloes of</i>
Máta, <i>a thicket.</i>	Cámbas, } <i>the wheel.</i>
Zárza, <i>a bramble.</i>	Cúbo de ruéda, <i>the nave of the wheel.</i>
Espína, <i>a thorn.</i>	'Exe de ruéda, <i>the axle-tree.</i>
Prádo, <i>a meadow.</i>	Estáca, or } <i>the pin of a</i>
Vergél, <i>a garden, a bower.</i>	Clavo, } <i>wheel.</i>
Huérta, <i>an orchard.</i>	Caléssa, <i>a caloché or chaise.</i>
Jardín, <i>a garden.</i>	Litéra, <i>a horse litter.</i>
'Era de jardín, <i>a bed in a garden.</i>	'Andas, <i>the shafts.</i>
Gloriéta de jardín, <i>a bed of flowers.</i>	Cóche, or carróza, <i>a coach.</i>
Almáciéga, <i>a seed-plot.</i>	U 4 Rástra,

Rástra, or } <i>a sledge.</i>	Bolsa, <i>a purse.</i>
Nárria, } <i>a sack,</i>	Costál, or }
Césta, <i>a basket.</i>	Sáco, }
Canásta, <i>a flasket.</i>	Maléta, <i>a portmanteau.</i>
Espuérta, <i>a dirt-basket.</i>	Talégo, <i>a bag.</i>
Cherrión, <i>a dung-cart.</i>	Valíja, <i>a cloak-bag.</i>
Banásta, <i>a great hamper.</i>	Zurrón, <i>a budget or scrip.</i>
Alfója, <i>a wallet.</i>	

The Church, and Things pertaining to Religion.
Iglésia, y cosas Religiosas.

Náve de iglésia, <i>the isle of a church.</i>	Misál, <i>a mass-book.</i>
Cimbório, <i>the dome.</i>	Sotána, <i>a cassock.</i>
Pináculo, <i>a pinnacle.</i>	Sobrepelliz, <i>a surplice.</i>
Chóro, <i>the choir.</i>	Roquéte, <i>a short surplice.</i>
Capílla, <i>a chapel.</i>	Bonéte, <i>a cap.</i>
Atril, <i>a desk.</i>	Mitra, <i>a miter.</i>
Sacristía, <i>the vestry.</i>	Báculo, <i>a crozier.</i>
Campanário, <i>the belfry.</i>	Patriárcha, <i>a patriarch.</i>
Campana, <i>a bell.</i>	Arzobispo, <i>an archbishop.</i>
Badájo, <i>the clapper of the bell.</i>	Obispo, <i>a bishop.</i>
Pila de bautizar, <i>the font.</i>	Obispado, <i>a bishoprick.</i>
Isópo, <i>a sprinkler.</i>	Diócesis, <i>a diocese.</i>
Confessionário, <i>a confession-seat.</i>	Coadjutór, <i>a coadjutor.</i>
Tribúna, <i>a tribune, or gallery.</i>	Sufragáneo, <i>a suffragan.</i>
Cimentério, <i>the church-yard.</i>	Sacerdóte, <i>a priest.</i>
Ostário, <i>the charnel.</i>	Sacerdócio, <i>priesthood.</i>
Altár, <i>an altar.</i>	Diácono, <i>a deacon.</i>
Frontál, <i>an antependium.</i>	Subdiácono, <i>a subdeacon.</i>
Tabernáculo, or } <i>the ta-</i>	Acólito, <i>one that serves the</i>
Sagrário, } <i>bernacle.</i>	<i>priest at the altar.</i>
Pálio, <i>a canopy.</i>	Lectór, <i>a reader.</i>
Maníel del altar, <i>the altar-cloth.</i>	Clérigo, <i>a clergyman.</i>
	Preládo, <i>a prelate.</i>
	Abád, <i>an abbot.</i>
	Abadessa, <i>an abbess.</i>
	Abadía, <i>an abbey.</i>
	Canónigo, <i>a canon.</i>
	Deán, <i>a dean.</i>

Prevoste,

Prevóste, <i>a provost.</i>	Lección, <i>a lesson.</i>
Archidiácono, <i>an arch-deacon.</i>	Verfete, <i>a verse.</i>
Precentór, <i>a precentor.</i>	Sermón, <i>a sermon.</i>
Maéstre de chóro, <i>the master of the choir.</i>	Meditación, <i>meditation.</i>
Cantór, <i>a singing-man.</i>	Oración vocál, <i>vocal prayer.</i>
Sacristán, <i>the vestry keeper.</i>	Oración mentál, <i>mental prayer.</i>
Prebendádo, <i>a prebendary.</i>	Predicár, <i>to preach.</i>
Cúra, <i>the parson of a parish.</i>	Hacér el catechísmo, <i>to catechize.</i>
Paróchia, <i>a parish.</i>	Entérrar, or } <i>to bury.</i>
Vicário, <i>a vicar.</i>	sepultár, }
Oficiál, <i>an official.</i>	Excomunión, <i>excommunication.</i>
Promotór, <i>a proctor.</i>	Suspensión, <i>suspension.</i>
Encomiéndá, <i>a thing given in commendam.</i>	Entredícho, <i>an interdict.</i>
Bautísmo, <i>baptism.</i>	Irregularidad, <i>irregularity.</i>
Confirmación, <i>confirmation.</i>	Descomulgár, <i>to excommunicate.</i>
Matrimonio, <i>matrimony.</i>	Iglésia cathedrál, <i>a cathedral church.</i>
Comulgár, <i>to receive the holy sacrament.</i>	Conventuál, <i>the church of a monastery.</i>
Ordenes fáculos, <i>holy orders.</i>	Parrochiál, <i>a parish church.</i>
Ceremonia, <i>a ceremony.</i>	Adviénto, <i>the time of advent.</i>
Rúbrica, <i>the rubrick.</i>	Quarésma, <i>the lent.</i>
Rituál, <i>a ritual.</i>	Témporas, <i>ember-weeks.</i>
Oficio divíno, <i>divine service.</i>	Vigília, <i>an eve.</i>
Pfaltério, <i>the psalter.</i>	Ayúno, <i>a fast.</i>
Pfalmo, <i>a psalm.</i>	
Antíphona, <i>an antiphon.</i>	

Things relating to War.

Cófas tocántes a la Guérra.

Artillería, <i>artillery, or great guns.</i>	Cañón, <i>a cannon.</i>
Pieza de artillería, <i>a canon.</i>	Bóca de cañón, <i>the mouth of the gun.</i>
Tren de artillería, <i>the train of artillery.</i>	Fogón, <i>the touch-hole.</i>
	Culáta

298 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

Culáta del cañón, <i>the breech of the gun.</i>	Lanza, <i>a lance.</i>
Carretón de cañón, <i>a carriage of a great gun.</i>	Alabárda, <i>an balbard.</i>
Cargar, <i>to load.</i>	Partesana, <i>a partesan.</i>
Apuntár, <i>to level.</i>	Píca, <i>a pike.</i>
Disparár, <i>to fire.</i>	Alfange, <i>a cymiter.</i>
Tiro de cañón, <i>a cannon-shot.</i>	Espáda, <i>a sword.</i>
Desmontár un cañón, <i>to dismount a gun.</i>	Puño de la espáda, <i>the handle of the sword.</i>
Enclavár un cañón, <i>to nail up a gun.</i>	Pomo de la espáda, <i>the pommel of the sword.</i>
Culebrína, <i>a culverin.</i>	Guarnición de espáda, <i>the hilt of the sword.</i>
Falconéte, <i>a falconet.</i>	La hója, <i>the blade.</i>
Pedréro, <i>a pattererow.</i>	Puñal, <i>a poniard.</i>
Cañón entéro, <i>a whole cannon.</i>	Bayonéta, <i>a bayonet.</i>
Médio cañón, <i>a half cannon.</i>	Dága, <i>a dagger.</i>
Petárdo, <i>a petard.</i>	Yélmo, <i>a whole helmet.</i>
Bómba, <i>a bomb.</i>	Celáda, <i>the same.</i>
Mortéro, <i>a mortar-piece.</i>	Morrión, <i>a morrion.</i>
Granáda, <i>a granade.</i>	Viséra, <i>the vizor of an helmet.</i>
Mosquéte, <i>a musket.</i>	Gorjál, <i>the gorget.</i>
Carabína, <i>a carbine.</i>	Péto, <i>a breast-plate.</i>
Escopéta, <i>a fire-lock.</i>	Coráza, <i>a cuirass.</i>
Pistóla, <i>a pistol.</i>	Espaldár, <i>the back-plate.</i>
Bála, <i>a bullet.</i>	Cosseléte, <i>a corslet.</i>
Pólvora, <i>powder.</i>	Braceléte, <i>armour for the arms.</i>
Mécha, <i>match.</i>	Escarcelón, <i>armour from the waste to the thighs.</i>
Pedernál, <i>a flint.</i>	Grévas, <i>greaves for the thighs.</i>
Flécha, <i>an arrow.</i>	Inojéras, <i>armour for the knees.</i>
Dardo, <i>a dart.</i>	Broquél, <i>a buckler.</i>
Javalína, <i>a boar-spear.</i>	Escúdo, <i>a shield.</i>
Hónða, <i>a sling.</i>	Adárga, <i>a target.</i>
Arco, <i>a bow.</i>	Cóta de málla, <i>a coat of mail.</i>
Máza de armas, <i>a battle-axe.</i>	

General,

General, <i>a general.</i>	Centinéla, <i>a sentinel.</i>
Teníente general, <i>a lieutenant-general.</i>	Avanguárdia, <i>the vanguard.</i>
Sargénto mayor de batálla, <i>a major-general.</i>	Cuérpo de batálla, <i>the main body of the army.</i>
Maéstre de cámpo, or coronél, <i>a colonel.</i>	Retaguárdia, <i>the rear.</i>
Sargénto mayor, <i>a major.</i>	Cuérpo de reférva, <i>the corps de reserve.</i>
Capitán, <i>a captain.</i>	Cuérpo de guárdia, <i>the corps de guard.</i>
Teníente, <i>a lieutenant.</i>	Ala, <i>the wing of an army.</i>
Cornéta, <i>a cornet.</i>	Batallón, <i>a battalion.</i>
Alférez, <i>an ensign.</i>	Regimiento, or Tércio, <i>a regiment.</i>
Sargénto, <i>a serjeant.</i>	Trópa de cabállos, <i>a troop of horse.</i>
Cábo de esqúadra, <i>a corporal.</i>	Compañía de ínfantería, <i>a company of foot.</i>
Quadrilléro, <i>a brigadier.</i>	Hiléra, <i>a rank.</i>
Soldádo, <i>a soldier.</i>	Fíla, <i>a file.</i>
Caudílo, <i>a leader, or commander.</i>	Esquadrón, <i>a squadron.</i>
Tambór, <i>a drum.</i>	Mochilléro, <i>a soldier's boy.</i>
Pífano, <i>a fife.</i>	Bagáge, <i>the baggage.</i>
Trompéta, <i>a trumpet.</i>	Vivandéro, <i>a sutler.</i>
Atabál, <i>a kettle-drum.</i>	Partída, <i>a party.</i>
Soldádo de acabállo, <i>a trooper.</i>	Corredóres, <i>the forlornbope</i>
Soldádo de apié, <i>a foot-soldier.</i>	Baridóres, <i>discoverers.</i>
Dragón, <i>a dragoon.</i>	Murállas, or Múros, <i>walls.</i>
Piquéro, <i>a pikeman.</i>	Alména, <i>a battlement.</i>
Mosquetéro, <i>a musketeer.</i>	Parapéto, <i>the parapet.</i>
Escopetéro, <i>a fusilier.</i>	Castílo, <i>a castle.</i>
Infante, <i>a foot soldier.</i>	Fuérte, <i>a fort.</i>
Infantería, <i>the infantry.</i>	Fortaléza, <i>a fortress.</i>
Caballería, <i>the cavalry.</i>	Fortificación, <i>a fortification.</i>
Artilléro, <i>a gunner.</i>	Tórre, <i>a tower.</i>
Bombardéro, <i>a bombardier.</i>	Ciudadéla, <i>a citadel.</i>
Ingeniéro, <i>an ingeneer.</i>	Bastión, <i>a bastion.</i>
Minéro, <i>a miner.</i>	
Gastadór, <i>a pioneer,</i>	Cortína,

Cortina, <i>a curtain.</i>	Contramárcha, <i>a counter-march.</i>
Média luna, <i>an half-moon.</i>	Escaramúza, <i>a skirmish.</i>
Tronéra, <i>a loop-hole.</i>	Batálla, <i>a battle.</i>
Terrapléno, <i>a rampart.</i>	Sítio, <i>a siege.</i>
Caballéro, <i>a cavalier, or mount.</i>	Quartél, <i>quarter.</i>
Rebelín, <i>a ravelin.</i>	Encamisada, <i>a camifade, or surprise.</i>
Contraescarpa, <i>the counter-scarp.</i>	Salida, <i>a sally.</i>
Barrera, <i>a barrier.</i>	Batir, <i>to batter.</i>
Falsa braga, <i>a fausse-bray.</i>	Brécha, <i>a breach.</i>
Fóssó, <i>the ditch.</i>	Escalada, <i>an escalade.</i>
Repécho, <i>a breast-work.</i>	Affalto, <i>an assault or attack.</i>
Garita, <i>a sentinel's box.</i>	Llamada, <i>the chamade.</i>
Casemata, <i>a casemate.</i>	Capitulación, <i>a capitulation.</i>
Galería, <i>or } a gallery.</i>	Guarnición, <i>a garrison.</i>
Corredór, <i>} a gallery.</i>	Tocar la cáxa, <i>to beat the drum.</i>
Estrada cubierta, <i>the covered way.</i>	Levantár gente, <i>to raise men.</i>
Cestón, <i>a gabion.</i>	Pagár el sueldo, <i>to pay the men.</i>
Estaca, <i>a palisade.</i>	Batir la estrada, <i>to scour the country.</i>
Redúto, <i>a redoubt.</i>	Levantár el sitio, <i>to raise the siege.</i>
Atalaya, <i>a place for discovery, or the person that is to discover.</i>	Marchár a vandéras desplegadas, <i>to march with flying colours.</i>
Manta, <i>a mantlet, or cover for men from the shot.</i>	Reforzár el ejército, <i>to reinforce the army.</i>
Fagina, <i>fascines.</i>	Tocar a recoger, <i>to sound a retreat.</i>
Mina, <i>a mine.</i>	Entregár una plaza, <i>to surrender a place.</i>
Contramina, <i>a countermine.</i>	
Trinchera, <i>a trench.</i>	
El réal, <i>the camp.</i>	
Vituallas, <i>provisions.</i>	
Munición, <i>ammunition.</i>	
Visoño, <i>a fresh water soldier.</i>	
Picoréro, <i>a marauder.</i>	

The Year, and its Parts.

El 'Año y sus Partes.

'Año, *a year.*
Mes, *a month.*
Semána, *a week.*
Día, *a day.*
Nóche, *a night.*

Mañana, *the morning.*
Tarde, *the evening.*
Hóra, *an hour.*
Minúto, *a minute.*
Momento, *a moment.*

The Months.

Lós Méfes.

Enéro, *january.*
Febrero, *february.*
Márzo, *march.*
Abríl, *april.*
Máyo, *may.*
Júnio, *june.*

Júlio, *july.*
Agósto, *august.*
Setiémbre, *september.*
Octúbre, *october.*
Noviémbre, *november.*
Deciémbre, *december.*

The Days of the Week.

Días de la Semána.

Domíngo, *sunday.*
Lúnes, *monday.*
Mártes, *tuesday.*
Miércoles, *wednesday.*

Juéves, *thursday.*
Viérnes, *friday.*
Sábado, *saturday.*

Navegación.

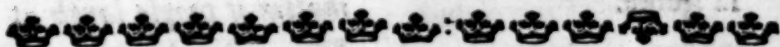
Navío, or }
náve, or } *a ship.*
náo, }
Navío de guerra, *a man*
of war.
Navío mercantil, *a mer-*
chant-ship.
Navío ligero, *a light ves-*
sel for sailing.
Galéra, *a galley.*
Galeáza, *a galeass.*
Galeón, *a galleon.*
Galeóta, *a galliot.*

Navigation.

Fragáta, *a frigate.*
Sáica, *a saick.*
Caráca, *a carrack.*
Fústa, *a foist.*
Pináza, *a pinnace.*
Bárca de passage, *a ferry-*
boat.
Canóa, *a canoe.*
Pirágua, *a piragua.*
Góndola, *a sort of boat so*
called.
Esquífe, *a skiff.*

Barqueta, or } a boat.	Véla del trinquete, the fore-sail.
Barquilla, }	
Bálfa, a float.	Véla cevadéra, the sprit-sail.
Capitána real, the admiral.	
Almiránta, the vice-admiral.	Véla latina, a shoulder of mutton sail.
Armáda, a navy of men of war.	Rémo, an oar.
Flóta, a fleet of merchants.	Pála de rémo, the blade of the oar.
Esquádra, a squadron.	Tronéras, the port-holes.
Abórdo, aboard.	Empavesadas, the nettings.
Pópa, the poop, or stern.	Gallardete, a pendant.
Proa, the prow, or head.	Vanderóla, a flag.
Tartána, a tartan.	Vandéra, the colours.
Bergantín, a brigantin.	Brúxula, the compass.
Navío de fuégo, a fireship.	Púnta de la proa, the stern.
Patáche, a patach.	Puente, the deck.
Felúca, a felucca.	Cubiérta, the same.
Bárca, a bark.	Tílla, the hatches.
Bárco, or } a boat.	Báncos de galéra, the
Batél, }	thoughts of a galley.
Sentína, the well.	Timón, the helm.
Iástre, ballast.	Quílla, the keel.
Mástil, or } the mast.	'Ancora, an anchor.
'Arbol, }	Amárra, or } a cable.
'Arbol mayór, the main-mast.	Maróma, }
La gábia, the round top.	Sóna, the sounding lead.
Trinquete, the fore-mast.	Piloto, a pilot, or master.
Quilla del árbol, the step of the mast.	Guardián, the boat-swain.
Enténa, a yard.	Marinéro, a sailor.
Véla, a sail.	Forzádos, or } gally-slaves.
Véla mayór, the main-sheet.	Galeótes, }
Véla de gábia, the top-sail.	Espaldér, the hindermost rower in a gally.
Perroquete, the top-gallant sail.	Vogavánte, the fore-man in rowing.
Véla mesána, the mizzen sail.	Cómitre, the boat-swain in a gally.

Cofario, or } a pyrate.	Cálma, a calm.
Piráta, }	Viénto en pópa, the wind
Cámara grande, the great	full aftern.
cabbin.	Cogér el viénto, to ply to
Torménta, a tempest.	windward.
Borrásca, a storm.	Ir a la bolina, to ply and
Bonánza, fair weather.	tack upon a wind.



Algúnas Senténcias, y Refránes Españoles.
Some Spanish Sentences, and Proverbs.

A Zéite, vino, y amígo, antiguo.	O IL, wine, and a friend, the older the better.
Aunque séas prudente viejo, no desdénies el consejo.	Though you be a discreet old man, do not disdain to be advised.
Aunque compuéstala mentíra, siémpre es vencida.	Al ye though never so well disguised, is always worsted.
Aunque vistáis à la móna de seda, móna se quèda.	Though you cloath a monkey in silk, it is still a monkey; that is, there is no making a silk purse of a sow's ear.
Asno de muchos, lóbos de cómen.	An as that has many masters is devour'd by the wolves; that is, every bodies business is no bodies business.
A río rebuélto, ganancia de pescadóres.	It is best fishing in troubled waters.
Aquella es bién casada, que ni tiéne suégra, ni cuñada.	She is well marry'd, who has neither mother, nor sister in law.
A quién dices tu puridad, a éste das tu libertad.	When you entrust one with your secret, you give up your liberty.
Aquéllos son ricos, que tiénen amigos.	They are rich who have friends.

A quién

- A quién no le sobra el pan, He that has not bread to
ne críe can. spare, must not keep a dog.
- A quién dan, no escóge. Beggars must not be choosers.
- A pádre guardadór, hijo A niggardly father has a
gastadór. prodigal son.
- Cada ovéja, con su paréja. All should match with their
equals.
- !Ande yó caliente, y ríase So I keep myself warm, no
la gente. matter if people laugh at
me.
- !Antes que te cáses, mira Mind what you do before
lo que haces. you marry; that is, look
before you leap.
- Amigo del buen tiempo, A fair weather friend, turns
múdase con el viento. with the wind.
- Amigo quebrádo, aunque Friendship that has been
soldádo, nunca es sano. broken, may be patch'd up,
but will never be sound.
- Amigo de uno, enemigo Be a friend but to one, and
de ninguno. an enemy to none.
- A lo que puedes sólo, no When you can do a thing
espéres a otro. yourself, do not wait for
another.
- Al desdichádo, poco le vále If a man is unfortunate, it a-
fer esforzádo. vails him little to be brave.
- Allégate a los buenos, y Keep good company, and you
serás uno déllos. will be one of them.
- Al hombre osádo, la for- Fortune favours the bold.
tuna le da la mano.
- Al buen varón, tierras A good man reckons all
ajénas patria le son. countries his own.
- Al agradecido, mas de lo Give a grateful man more
pedido. than he asks.
- Al villáno dádle el pie, Give a clown an inch, and
tomaráse la mano. he will take an ell.
- Al que da el capón, dále If one gives you a capon, give
la pierna, y el alón. him the leg, and the wing.
- Al que tiene mugér her- He that has a beautiful wife,
mosa, ò cástillo en or a castle on the frontiers,
frontera, or

- frontéra, ò viña en car- or a vineyard upon the
rera, núnca le falta road, is never without
guérra. quarrels.
- A cabállo dádo, no le Do not look a gift horse in
míren el diénte. the mouth.
- Burláos con el áfno, daros Play with an ass, and he'll
ha en la bárba con el slap you on the face with
rábo. his tail. No jesting with
fools.
- Buén principio, la metád A good beginning is half the
es hécha. work done.
- Bocádo de mal pan, ni lo Do not eat a morsel of bad
cómas, ni lo des a tu bread, nor give it to your
can. dog.
- Bocádo comído, no gána What is eaten gains no friend.
amigo. Past favours forgotten.
- Bien áma, quién núnca That's a true lover, that
olvída. never forgets.
- Bien sabe el sábio que no A wise man is sensible of his
sabe, el necio piénfa ignorance, a fool thinks
que sabe. himself wise.
- Béstia que anda lláno, para I would have a beast that
mi me la quíero no para carries easy for myself, not
mi hermano. for my brother; every one
loves the best for himself.
- Cría cuérvo, y sacárte ha Breed up a crow, and he'll
el ojo. pull out your eyes.
- Con latín, rocín, y florín Latin, a nag, and money
andarás el mundo. will carry you through
the world.
- Cóbra buena fama, y Get a good name, and you
échate en la cáma. may lye abed.
- Cortesía de boca mucho Good words are worth much,
vale, y poco cuésta. and cost little.
- Cantarillo que muchas vé- The pitcher that goes often
ces va à la fuente, ò to the well, comes home
déxa la ása, o la frénte. broke at last.
- Cada gállo cánta en su Every cock can crow on his
muladár. own dungbil.

Cánta la rana, y no tiéne pélo, ni lána. *The frog sings, and yet has neither hair, nor wooll.*

The poorest people are merry.

Cása labrada, y viña plantada. *A house ready built, and a vineyard ready planted, i. e. they are best to buy.*

Dó éntra el bebér, fále el fabér. *When the wine is in, the wit is out.*

Por dónde fuéres, ház cómo viéres. *When you are at Rome, do as they do at Rome.*

Dó falta dicha, por demás es diligéncia. *Industry avails little without fortune.*

Do fuérza viéne, derécho se piérde. *Might overcomes right.*

Dícen que éres buéno, méte la máno en tu féno. *They say you are a good man, but put your hand into your bosom; that is, consult your own conscience.*

Dolór de espóso, dolór de códo, duele múcho, y dúra póco. *A husband's sorrow is like a pain in the elbow, very sharp, but soon over.*

De amigo reconciliádo, guárdate del cómo del diáblo. *Never trust a reconciled friend any more than you would the devil.*

Del águá mánfa me guárde diós, que de la bráva yo me sabré guardár. *God deliver me from a still water, for I will deliver myself from that which is rough; alluding to the tempers of people.*

De luéngas vías, luéngas mentíras. *Long travels produce great lies.*

De un hómbré nécio, à véces buén conséjo. *A fool sometimes gives good advice.*

Después de descalobrádo, untár el cásko. *To break a man's head, and then give him a plaister.*

Del lóco, porráda, ò mála palábra. *From a madman you may expect a blow, or ill language.*

Mas

Mas v  le un t  ma, que *A bird in hand, is worth*
dos te dar  . *two in the bush.*

Despu  s de beber, c  da *When people have drunk,*
  no dice su par  cer. *they are open hearted.*

Despu  s de com  r, dor- *After dinner sleep a while,*
m  r ; despu  s de cen  r, *after supper walk a mile.*
p  ssos mil.

Deb  xo de bu  n sayo, est   *A good coat often covers a*
el h  mbre m  lo. *wicked fellow.*

De qui  n p  ne los   jos en *Do not trust a man that*
el su  elo, no f  ies tu di- *looks on the ground with*
n  ro. *your money: that is, an*
hypocrite.

Gu  rdate, de h  mbre que *Take heed of a man that*
no h  bla, y de can que *does not talk, and of a*
no l  dra. *dog that does not bark.*

Ech  r el m  ngo tr  s el de- *To throw the belve after*
stral. *the hatchet.*

'Echate a enferm  r, y fa- *Take your bed, as if you*
br  s qui  n te quiere bien, *were sick, and you will*
y qui  n mal. *know who does, and who*
does not love you.

El dar lim  sna, nunca *Giving alms never lessens the*
m  ngua la b  lfa. *stock.*

El perez  so si   mpre es *A sloathful man is always*
menester  so. *needy.*

El avari  ento r  co, no ti  ne *A covetous rich man has*
pari  nte ni am  go. *neither relations, nor*
friends.

El b  bo si es call  do, por *A fool that says little passes*
f  s  so es reput  do. *for a wise man.*

El que ti  ne tej  dos de vi- *He whose house is covered*
drio, no t  re piedras al *with glass, must not throw*
de su vez  no. *stones at his neighbours.*

El hu  sped, y el p  ce, a *A guest and fish stinks when*
tres dias, hi  de. *kept three days.*

El hart   del ay  no, no *He that is full, has no com-*
ti  ne du  elo alg  no. *passion on him that is*
fasting.

El dar es honor, y el pe- *It is an honour to give, and*
 dir dolor. *a trouble to ask.*

El hombre es el fuego, la *Man is fire, and woman is*
 muger la estopa, viene *tow, the devil comes and*
 el diablo y sópla. *blows.*

El viejo en su tierra, y el *An old man in his own, and a*
 mozo en la ajena, mi- *young man in another coun-*
 énten de una manera. *try, are both lyars alike.*

El lóbo háрто se méte *When the devil was sick, the*
 fráile. *devil a monk would be ;*
when the devil was well,
the devil a monk was be.

En tal signo nací, que *I was born under such a*
 quíero mas para mi que *planet, that I have more*
 para ti. *kindness for my self than*
for you.

En casa llena presto se *When the house is full, the*
 guisa la cena. *supper is soon dress'd.*

Fortuna, y azeituna, a *Fortune, and olives some-*
 véces, mucha, a véces *times come in a glut, and*
 ninguna. *sometimes none at all.*

Gato escaldado, del agua *The burnt child dreads the*
 fría ha miedo. *fire.*

Humo, y gatéra, y mu- *A smoaky house, the rain*
 ger parléra, échan el *coming in, and a scolding*
 hombre de su casa fu- *wife, turn a man out of*
 éra. *doors.*

Hijo malo, mas vale do- *A wicked son is better sick*
 liente que sano. *than in health.*

Juras del que ama muger, *The oaths of one that loves*
 no se han de créer. *a woman are not to be*
regarded.

Los niños de pequeños, *Children must be chastised*
 que no há castigo de- *when they are little, for*
 spués para ellos. *it is afterwards too late.*

Lo que los ojos no vén, *What the eye does not see,*
 corazón no deffea. *the heart does not rue.*

Los yerros del médico, *The earth bides the mistakes*
 la tierra los cubre. *of physicians.*

- Lo que no quíeres pára ti, *Do as you would be done by.*
 no lo quíeras pára mi.
- La oración bréve súbe al *A short prayer reaches*
 ciélo. *heaven.*
- La traición apláce, mas *We love the treason, but not*
 no el que la háce. *the traitor.*
- La mugér compuésta à su *A wise well dressed keeps*
 marido quita de puérta *her husband from run-*
 ajéna. *ning to other women.*
- La víuda ríca, con un ójo *A rich widow weeps with*
 llóra, y con el ótro re- *one eye, and laughs with*
 píca. *the other.*
- La mugér, y el víno, fá- *Women and wine, make a*
 can al hómbré de tíno. *man mad.*
- Múla, que háce hin, y mu- *A mule that kicks, and a*
 gér que parla latín, *woman that speaks latin,*
 núnca hiciéron buén fin. *never come to a good end.*
- Mugéa, viénto, y ventúra *Women, wind, and fortune,*
 présto se múda. *are given to change.*
- Múcho sábe la rapósa, pe- *The fox is very cunning, but*
 ró mas el que la tóma. *he is more cunning that*
catches her.
- Mugér placéra, de tódos *A gossiping woman talks of*
 díce, y tódos délla. *all people, and all of her.*
- Múcho sabía el cornúdo, *The cuckold was very subtle,*
 però mas el que se los *but he was more crafty*
 púso. *that cuckolded him.*
- Méte el ruín en tu pajár, *Let a scoundrel into your*
 y querérte há heredár. *barn, and he will con-*
trive to be your heir.
- Mas vále favór, que ju- *Favour goes farther than*
 stícia, ni razón. *justice and reason.*
- Mas vále pedir, y men- *It is better to ask and beg,*
 digár, que en la hórca *than to swing on the gal-*
 perneár. *lows.*
- Mal me quiéren mis com- *My gossips bear me ill will,*
 mádres, porque dígo *because I speak the truth.*
 las verdádes.

- Mas vále guardár, que demandár. *It is better to be sparing, than to beg.*
- Mas vále mála avenéncia, que buena senténcia. *A bad composition is better than a favourable judgment.*
- Mas fábe el loco en su cása, que el cuérdo en la ajéna. *A mad man knows his own business better than a wise man does another's.*
- Mas vále a quién diós ayúda, que el que mucho madruga. *He thrives better who has God's blessing, than he that rises early.*
- Núnca espéres, que hága tu amigo lo quo tu pudiéres. *Never expect your friend to do that which you can do yourself.*
- No es náda, sinó que mátan a mi marido. *The matter is not much but that they are killing my husband.*
- No hái mejór maéstra, que necesidad y pobreza. *There is no better mistress than necessity and want.*
- No hái mal tan lastiméro, cómo no tener dinéro. *No calamity so grievous, as to be without money.*
- No hái mejór bocádo, que el hurtádo. *No bit so sweet as that which is stolen.*
- No hái peór sórdo, que el que no quiére oír. *None so deaf as he that will not hear.*
- Níña, víña, perál, y habár, malos son de guardár. *A girl, a vineyard, a garden of peas, and a field of beans, are hard to be kept.*
- Ni por cása, ni por víña, no tomes mugér ximia. *Do not for the sake of an house, or of a vineyard take a monkey wife; that is, deformed.*
- No hái sábado sin sol, ni viéjo sin dolor, ni mocita sin arreból. *There is no saturday without some sunshine, nor an old man without an ailing, nor a young wench without a charm.*

- Ni de estopa, buena camisa; ni de puta, buena amiga. *There is no having a good shirt of tow, nor a good friend of a whore.*
- Ni caválgues en pótro, ni tu mugér alábes a ótro. *Do not ride upon a colt, nor praise your wife to another man.*
- Ni firmes carta que no Léas, ni bébas água que no véas. *Never sign any writing without reading, nor drink water without looking into it.*
- Ni à rico débas, ni à pobre prométras. *Never owe money to a rich man, nor promise any thing to a poor one.*
- Nécios, y porfiados hacen ricos los letrados. *Fools, and obstinate people enrich lawyers.*
- Ovéja que bála, bocádo piérde. *The sheep that bleats loses a mouthful.*
- Oír, ver, y callár, récias cosas son de obrár. *It is very hard to hear, see, and say nothing.*
- Por ningún tempéro, déxes el camino réal por el sendéro. *Whatsoever the weather is, do not leave the highway to follow the path.*
- Por hacer placér al suéño, ni faya, ni camisa téngo. *Through indulging of sleep, I have neither petticoat, nor smock.*
- Por mucho madrugár, no amanéce mas aína. *Rising early makes it not day the sooner.*
- Póco, y en paz, mucho se me haz. *A little in peace is much to me.*
- Por el hilo, sacarás el ovillo; y por lo passado, lo no venído. *You will find the clue by the thread, and what is to come by what is past.*
- Por dinéro, báila el pérrro. *The dog dances for money; money makes the mare to go.*
- Por ser Réy, se quiebra toda léy. *All justice is broke to gain a crown.*
- Pléito, y orinál, llévan el hombre al hospítal. *Lawyers and physicians send a man to the hospital.*

- Piénsael ladrón, que todos *The thief thinks all men like*
 son de su condición. *him.*
- Pescador de vara, mas có- *An angler eats more than he*
 me que gana. *gets.*
- Peléan los ladrones, descú- *When thieves fall out, honest*
 brense los hurtos. *men come by their goods,*
- Pérro ladrador, nunca *A barking dog never bites.*
 buen mordedor.
- Pára amor, ni muérte, no *No house is strong enough to*
 hai casa fuerte. *keep out love and death.*
- Paños lúcen en palacio, *Fine cloaths are regarded at*
 que no hijos dalgo. *court, and not gentility.*
- Palabras de santo, y uñas *To talk like a saint, and claw*
 de gato. *like a cat.*
- Paga lo que debes, fabrás *Pay your debts, and you'll*
 lo que tienes. *know what you are worth.*
- Panadera éras ántes, y *Formerly you was a baker,*
 aora tráhes guantes. *and now you wear gloves.*
- Quién á todos crée, yér- *He who believes all men is*
 ra; quién á ninguno, *in the wrong, and he who*
 no aciérta. *believes none is not in the*
right.
- Quién no álza un alfiler, *He that will not take up a*
 no estima á su mugér. *pin, does not value his wife.*
- Quién fia, ó prométe, en *He that is bound for ano-*
 deuda se méte, *ther, or makes a promise,*
contracts a debt.
- Quién dá lo súyo ántes de *He who gives away what*
 morir, aparéjase á bien *he has before he dies, must*
 sufrir. *prepare to endure much.*
- Quién há criados, há ene- *He who has servants, has*
 migos no escusados. *unavoidable enemies.*
- Quién no tuviére que ha- *He who wants something to*
 cér, árme navío, ó tome *do, may fit out a ship, or*
 mugér. *marry a wife.*
- Quién poco tiéne, y ésto *He who has little, and gives*
 dá, presto se arrepentirá. *it away, will soon repent.*
- Quién á la raposa há de *He that will deceive the fox*
 engañar, cúmplele ma- *must rise betimes.*
 drugar.

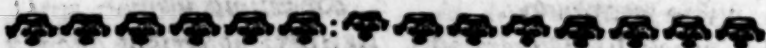
Quién

- Quién tiéne quátro, y gásta cinco, no ha menestér bolsíco. *He who gets four, and spends five, has no need of a purse.*
- Quién ruín es en su tierra, ruín es en la ajéna. *He that is base in his own country, is so in another.*
- Quién lo féo áma, her- móso le paréce, *He who loves that which is deformed, fancies it hand- some.*
- Quién á su pérro quiere matár, rábia le há de levantár. *He that will kill his dog must say he is mad.*
- Quién cóme la váca del Réy, à cien años pága los huéssos. *He who eats the king's cow, pays for the bones an hundred years after.*
- Quién te háce la fiésta, que no te suéle hácer, ò te quiere engañár, ò te há menestér. *He that gives you a treat, and did not use to do it, either designs to deceive, or stands in need of you.*
- Quién de préstó deter- mína, de espácio se ar- repiénte. *He that resolves in haste, repents at leisure.*
- Quién léngua há, à Róma vá. *He who has languages may travel to Rome.*
- Quién bién quiere à Bel- tran, bién quiere à su can. *Love me, and love my dog.*
- Quién al ciélo escúpe, en la cára le cáe. *He that spits at heaven, has it fall in his face.*
- Quién léxos se vá à casár, ò vá engañádo, ò vá à engañar. *He who goes far to be mar- ried, either is deceived, or goes to deceive.*
- Quién siembra en el ca- míno, cánsa los buéyes y piérde el trigo. *He that sows in the high- ways, tires his oxen, and loses his corn.*
- Quiéres que te síga el can, dále pan. *If you would have the dog follow you, give him bread.*
- Quién se cása por amóres, malos dias, y buenas nóches. *They that marry for love, have bad days, and good nights.*

Quién

- Quién pobreza tién, de *He that is poor is despised by*
 sus déudos es desdén; *his kindred, and he that is*
 y el rico sin sérlo, de *rich is a kin to every body,*
 todos es déudo. *though he be not.*
 Quándo el cosfario pro- *When the pyrate makes vows*
 méte missas, y céra, *to heaven, his vessel is in*
 con mal anda la galéra. *a bad plight.*
 Quándo el hiérro está en- *You must strike whilst the*
 cendido, entónces há de *iron is hot.*
 fer batido.
 Quándo el villáno está en *Set a beggar a horse-back,*
 el mulo, no conóce à *and he will ride to the*
 diós, ni al mundo. *devil.*
 Quándo el hombre méa *When a man bepisses his*
 las bótas, no es buéno *boots, he is not fit for*
 para las mózas. *young women.*
 Quándo el diáblo réza, *When the fox preaches, take*
 engañarte quiére. *heed of the geese.*
 Quál el dueño, tal el pérro. *Like master, like man.*
 Riñen las commádras, des- *When gossips quarrel, the*
 cúbrense las verdádes. *truth comes out.*
 Ratón que no sábe mas de *The cat soon catches the*
 un horádo, présto le *mouse that knows but one*
 cóge el gáto. *hole.*
 Sufre por sabér, y trabája *Have patience to learn, and*
 por tenér. *take pains to be rich.*
 Si tenéis la cabéza de ví- *If you have a glass bead,*
 drio, no os toméis à *do not pretend to throw*
 pedrádas conmígo. *stones at me.*
 Siéntate en tu lugár, no *Sit in your own place, and*
 te harán levantár. *you will not be forced to*
rise.
 Si el nécio no fuéffe al *If fools did not go to market,*
 mercádo, no se vende- *that which is nought would*
 ría lo málo. *not be sold.*
 Si quíeres aprendér à orár, *If you would learn to pray,*
 entra en la mar. *go to sea.*
 Si te dá el póbres, es pór- *If a poor man gives, it is in*
 que mas tóme. *hopes to receive more.*

Si quíeres vivír sano, házte viéjo temprano.	<i>If you would be healthy, be old betimes.</i>
Sé mózo bién mandádo, y comerás con tu amo.	<i>Be a diligent servant, and you will eat with your master.</i>
Salió del lódo, y entró en el arróyo.	<i>He leaped out of the frying- pan into the fire.</i>
Tópanse los hombres, y no los móntes.	<i>Men meet, but mountains do not.</i>
Tódos los duélos, con pan son ménos.	<i>Fat sorrows are better than lean.</i>
Una golondrina no háce verano.	<i>One swallow makes no sum- mer.</i>
Viéjo amador, inviérno con flór.	<i>An amorous old man is like flowers in winter.</i>
Vendér miél al colmené- ro.	<i>To sell honey to him that keeps hives; that is, to carry coals to Newcastle.</i>
Vánse los amóres, y qué- dan los dolóres.	<i>Love goes off, but the sting of it remains.</i>
Vánse los gátos, y estién- dense los ráto.	<i>When the cat's away, the mice play.</i>
Yérba mála, no la empéce la heláda.	<i>The frost does not hinder the growth of weeds; that is, ill weeds grow apace.</i>
Yantár tarde, y cenár cé- do, fácan la meriéndá de en médio.	<i>A late dinner, and an early supper, save an after- noon's luncheon.</i>
Zorrilla que mucho tárdá, cáza aguárda.	<i>The fox that stays out long, waits for a prey.</i>
Zorrilla tagarnilléra, há- cese muérta por asír préfa.	<i>The subtle fox counterfeits being dead, to lay bold of the prey.</i>
Por dó salta la cábra, sal- ta la que la máma.	<i>Where the goat leaps, the kid follows; that is, cat after kind.</i>



Nómbres próprios de Hómbres y Mugéres.
Proper Names of Men and Women.

A Mbrósio, <i>Ambrose.</i>	Fernándo, <i>Ferdinand.</i>
Andrés, <i>Andrew.</i>	Juán, <i>John.</i>
Augustín, <i>Augustin.</i>	Lorénzo, <i>Lawrence.</i>
Bartholomé, <i>Bartholomew.</i>	Luís, <i>Lewis.</i>
Benito, <i>Benedict.</i>	Lúcas, <i>Luke.</i>
Bernárdo, <i>Bernard.</i>	Lucía, <i>Lucy.</i>
Catarína, <i>Catherine.</i>	Márcos, <i>Mark.</i>
Cecília, <i>Cecily.</i>	Martín, <i>Martin.</i>
Susána, <i>Susan.</i>	Mathías, <i>Matthias.</i>
Chrisóstomo, <i>Cbrysoftom.</i>	Nicolás, <i>Nicholas.</i>
Christóval, <i>Christopher.</i>	Páblo, <i>Paul.</i>
Cárlos, <i>Charles.</i>	Philípe, <i>Philip.</i>
Domíngo, <i>Dominick.</i>	Margaríta, <i>Margaret.</i>
Estévan, <i>Stephen.</i>	Sebastián, <i>Sebastian.</i>
Francísco, <i>Francis.</i>	Simón, <i>Simon.</i>
Guillérmo, <i>William.</i>	Thomás, <i>Thomas.</i>
Jerónimo, <i>Jerome.</i>	Isabel, <i>Elizabeth.</i>
Jorge, <i>George.</i>	María, <i>Mary.</i>
Diégo, <i>James.</i>	'Ana, <i>Anne.</i>
Henríque, <i>Henry.</i>	Joséph, <i>Joseph.</i>

Vérbos tocántes á las Persónas de Hómbres, y
 Mugéres.

Verbs relating to the Persons of Men and Women.

Andár, <i>to go.</i>	Comér, <i>to eat.</i>
Correr, <i>to run.</i>	Bebér, <i>to drink.</i>
Saltar, <i>to leap.</i>	Hartárse, <i>to gorge.</i>
Danzár, } <i>to dance.</i>	Ayunár, <i>to fast.</i>
báilar, }	Chupár, <i>to suck.</i>
	Mascár,

Mascár, <i>to chew.</i>	Jugár, <i>to play.</i>
Tragár, <i>to swallow.</i>	Trabajar, <i>to work.</i>
Rascár, <i>to scratch.</i>	Escribir, <i>to write.</i>
Espulgár, <i>to pick fleas.</i>	Holgár, <i>to be idle.</i>
Acostárse, <i>to go to bed.</i>	Leer, <i>to read.</i>
Dormir, <i>to sleep.</i>	Despertár, <i>to awake.</i>
Levantárse, <i>to rise.</i>	Huir, <i>to run away.</i>
Vestírse, <i>to put on one's</i>	Braveár, <i>to boast.</i>
<i>cloaths.</i>	Alabár, <i>to praise.</i>
Tocárse, <i>a woman to dress</i>	Despreciar, <i>to despise.</i>
<i>her head.</i>	Soltár, <i>to let go.</i>
Hacérse la bárba, <i>to trim.</i>	Abrazár, <i>to embrace.</i>
Bofezar, <i>to yawn.</i>	Atacár, <i>to lace.</i>
Velár, <i>to watch.</i>	Abotonár, <i>to button.</i>
Calzárse los zapáto, <i>to</i>	llamar, <i>to call.</i>
<i>put on shoes.</i>	Rezár, <i>to pray.</i>
Calzárse las médias, <i>to</i>	Predicár, <i>to preach.</i>
<i>put on stockings.</i>	Obedecer, <i>to obey.</i>
Enfermár, <i>to grow sick.</i>	Mandár, <i>to command.</i>
Curár, <i>to cure.</i>	Gobernár, <i>to govern.</i>
Herir, <i>to wound.</i>	Parir, <i>to bring forth.</i>
Matár, <i>to kill.</i>	Bezár, <i>to kiss.</i>
Emborrachár, } <i>to make</i>	Hacer testamento, <i>to make</i>
embeodár, } <i>drunk.</i>	<i>a will.</i>



Phrases Familiáres. *Familiar Phrases.*

T engo mucho sueño,	Despertád, <i>Awake.</i>
<i>I am very sleepy.</i>	Dormís demasiado, <i>You</i>
Dexádmе dormir, <i>Let me</i>	<i>sleep too much.</i>
<i>sleep.</i>	Levantáos presto, <i>Rise</i>
Dormís? <i>Are you asleep?</i>	<i>quickly.</i>
Estáis aún en la cama?	Porqué no os dáis prisa?
<i>Are you in bed still?</i>	<i>Why do you not make haste?</i>
	Estáis

318 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

- Estáis levantádo? *Are you up?* Queréis salsa? *Will you have sauce?*
- Cuidádo no os resfriéis, *Take care you do not get cold.* Con sal me contento, *I am satisfied with salt.*
- Vestíos, *Put on your cloaths.* Porqué no coméis? *Why do you not eat?*
- Lavád las mãos, *Wash your hands.* Aquí está la pechúga de una pólla, *Here is the wing of a pullet.*
- Peinád la cabeça, *Comb your head.* No coméis pan? *Don't you eat bread?*
- Ataçádmé, *Lace me.* Queréis beber? *Pedídló. Will you drink? Call for it.*
- Ayudádmé, *Help me.* Dádmé un bocádo de qué-so, *Give me a bit of cheese.*
- Calzádmé, *Put on my shoes and stockings.* No háí frúta? *Is there no fruit?*
- Havéis rezádo? *Have you said your prayers?* Quitád los mantéles, *Take off the table-cloth.*
- Adónde están mis horas? *Where is my prayer-book?* Juguémos à los náipes, *Let us play at cards.*
- Queréis almorzár? *Will you breakfast?* Mas vale írnos al jardín, *We had better go into the garden.*
- Decídmé lo que queréis, *Tell me what you will have.* Hâce múcho frío, y nos podrémos acatarrár, *It is very cold, and we may get a cold.*
- Unos huévos, *Some eggs.* Hâce calór y no es fáno el andar à médio día, *The weather is hot, and it is not wholesome to walk at noon.*
- Una xicara de chocolate, *A dish of chocolate.* Quedémonos pués aquí, *Then let us stay here.*
- Es hora de comer, *It is dinner time.* Durmámos la siésta, *Let us take an afternoon's nap.*
- Sentáos à la mésa, *Sit down to table.* Aquí
- No téngo servilléta, ni cuchillo, ni tenedór, *I have no napkin, nor knife, nor fork.*
- Esta ólla está bién gui-fada, *This soup is very well made.*
- No cómo carne górdá, *I eat no fat meat.*

Aquí viéne fuláno, *Here comes such a one.*

Rogadle que éntre, *Desire him to come in.*

Que nuévas tráhe v. md, *What news do you bring.*

No hái cósa de nuévo, *There is nothing new.*

Ciéрто que hái muchas novedádes, *Indeed there is much news.*

Contádnos alguna cósa, *Tell us something.*

Dícen que el cónde de N. se há casádo, *They say the earl of N. is married.*

Que se cáse, ò se déxe de casár, que nos importa? *Whether he marries or marries not, what does it concern us?*

Hái avíso que el duque de N. se ha muerto, *There is advice that the duke of N. is dead.*

Mas quiéro que se muerán séis dúques, que morir-me yó, *I had rather six dukes should die than die myself.*

Si no hacéis cáso de mis nuévas, que queréis que os diga? *If you do not regard my news, what would you have me say to you?*

Morírse éste, ò casárse el ótro, cósa es que cáda día sucéde, y la repub-

lica póco gána, ò piérde en éllo, *For one man to die and another to be married is what happens every day, and the publick neither gains nor loses much by it.*

Múchos son de parecer que havrá guérra, *Many are of opinion that there will be a war.*

Otros porfian que ha de havér paz, *Others affirm there will be peace.*

Los corsários de Argél hacen múcho dáño, *The Algier rovers do much mischief.*

Pués los de Túnes y Trípoli no están ociosos, *Those of Tunis and Tripoli are not idle.*

Conocéis aquélla dáma? *Do you know that lady?*

Bién la conósko, es múi hermosa, *I know her very well, she is a great beauty.*

Múi modesta, y múi discreta, *Very modest, and very discreet.*

Tiéne gran dóte, *She has a great portion.*

Su madre siémpre la acompaña, *Her mother is always with her.*

La hía es múi obediénte, *The daughter is very obedient.*

- Y la madre bien lo merece, *And the mother deserves it.* Que nos importa, *What is that to us.*
- Pues su hijo es bizarro caballero, *Then her son is a fine gentleman.* Vámos a la plaza, *Let us go to the square.*
- Ha servido con reputación en la guerra, *He has served in the war with reputation.* Que harémos allá? *What shall we do there?*
- Además, es hombre de letras, *Besides he is a man of learning.* Ver y ser vistos, *See and be seen.*
- Muí cortés, *Very courteous.* Que hora es? *What a clock is it?*
- Náda fanfarrón, *Nothing given to boasting.* Son las quátro, *Four a clock.*
- Por su valór ha medrado, *He has been preferred for his valour.* No puede ser, *It cannot be.*
- Es Coronél de un tércio, *He is colonel of a regiment.* Por mi relóx así es, *It is so by my watch.*
- Véis aquél que pásá? *Do you see him that goes by?* Por el sol no falta un quárto, *It does not want a quarter by the sun.*
- Quién es? *Who is he?* Aún es tempráno pára salir de casa, *It is too early to go abroad yet.*
- Es todo lo contrario del ótro, *He is just the reverse of the other.* Mas vále andar de día, que de nóche, *It is better to walk by day than by night.*
- Cómo así? *How so?* De nóche todos los gátos son párdos, *At night all cats are gray.*
- Es un miserable, *He is a wretched fellow.* Múchos róbos se cométen de nóche, *Many robberies are committed in the night.*
- Cobárde en estrémo, *A great coward.* Siéndo tantos, quién se há de atrevér? *Being so many, who will dare to attempt us?*
- Sumaménte ignoránte, *Supinely ignorant.* La nóche es múi fría, *The night is very cold.*
- Desvergonzádo, *Impudent.* Hagámos buena lúmbre, *Let us make a good fire.*
- Echadór de bravátas, *Always bullying.* Trahéd

- Trahéd carbón, *Bring coals.* Lástima es que se imprí-
 Echád leña, *Lay on wood.* man tales disparates, *It*
 Cerrád éssa puérta, *Shut* *is pity that such fopperies*
that door. *should be printed.*
- Leámos un ráto, *Let us* La emprénra háce múcho
read a while. bién, y múcho mal,
 Que libros son éstos? *Printing does much good,*
What books are these? *and much harm.*
- Tódos son de entreteni- Adónde hái buen gobiér-
 miénro, *They are all of* no no debiéra hacér mal,
diversion. *Where the government is*
 No gústo de novélas, *I do* good it *should do no harm.*
not like novels. Adónde se hálla ésse buen
 Ahí hái Comedias, *There* gobierno? *Where is that*
are plays. good government to be
 Si son buenas se pueden found?
 leér, *If they are good* En todas pártes hái su lé-
they may be read. gua de mal camíno,
 Son de los mejóres poétas, *There is something amiss*
They are writ by the every where.
best poets.
- Mejór es história, *History* No hái cósa perfecta en
is better. éste mundo, *Nothing is*
perfect in this world.
- Pués que os parece de Dexémonos de cuéntos, y
 viages? *What do you* no juzguémos, *Let us*
think of voyages? leave off stories, and not
 Nos dan a conocér todo judge.
 el mundo, sin salir de Merendémos, *Let's eat*
 nuestra patria, *They* our afternoon's luncheon.
make us acquainted with 'Eso es de niños, *That is*
all the world, without like children.
going out of our native
country. Mózos sómos, comámos
 miéntras podemos, *We*
are young, let's eat
whilst we can.
- A veces nos llénan la ca- Pasécémonos un ráto, *Let*
 béza de mentiras, *Some-* us walk a little.
times they fill our heads
with lies.
- Lo mismo hacen las histó- El áire es templádo, *The*
 rias, *Histories do the same.* air is temperate.

Y

Volvámos

Volvámos à la ciudad, Y sôbre tódo la señôra,
Let us return to the city. And the lady above all.

Linda c  lle es   sta, This Mui obligada les est  i, I
is a fine street. am much obliged to you.

Las ti  ndas son hermos  s, Ad  nde h  i m  rito, no
The shops are beautiful. h  i obligaci  n, Where

Mir  d la p  mpa de aquel tend  ro, See how stately
that shop-keeper is. there is merit, there is no obligation.

Bi  n sob  rbios son muchos, Many are very
proud. Alabad mi haci  nda y no

En teni  ndo din  ero se en- mi persona, Praise my
sanchan, When they goods and not my person.

Aquella tend  ra parece 'E  so fu  era injusticia, That
una cond  esa, That would be unjust.

Compr  mos alg  una c  sa, Compr  d lo que se vende,
Let us buy something. Buy what is to be sold.

Que g  stan vue  stras mer- Mas quisi  ra la se   ora que
c  des? What will you t  da la ti  nda, I would

Una tabaqu  ra curi  sa, rather have the mistress
A curious snuff-box. than all the shop.

Tix  ras de Fr  ncia, Mi marido no me vende,
French scizars. My husband will not sell

Hev  llas de las mejores, Me. Ni el querr   deshacerse de
Some of the best buckles. tal al  ja, ni h  i precio

Aqu  i n  da f  lta, Here is que la c  mpre, Neither
no want of any thing. will be part with such a

Vue  stras mercedes v  an lo jewel, nor will any mo-
que les agrada, ney purchase it.

T  do nos parece bi  n, Aqu  i vi  ne mi marido,
We like all. Here comes my husband.

Dich  so es el, He is a
happy man. Hav  is mostr  do      stos

se   ores lo que les agra-
d  ? Have you shown these gentlemen what they like?

- Tódo aquí nos conténta, De mirár un demónio,
All here pleases us. después de haver visto
 ¡Eſſo es lo que deſéo, *That* un Angel, *To look upon*
is what I wiſh. a devil after having ſeen
 Múi venturóſo ſóis, *You* an angel.
are very fortunate. Tan fea cómo es, preſú-
 No me puédo quexár de me de ſi, *As ugly as ſhe*
 mi fuérte, *I cannot com-* is, *ſhe has a conceit of*
plain of my lot. herſelf.
 Diós os guárde, *God keep* Paſſémos, que no puédo
you. tolerarla, *Let us paſs by,*
 El miſmo váya con vue- *for I cannot endure her.*
 ſtras mercedes, *God go* El Réy viéne, Diós le
with you. guárde, *The king is com-*
 Acá volverémos por lo ing, *God bleſs him.*
 que ſe ofreciere, *We* Parémonos aquí, *Let us*
ſhall return hither for *ſtand here.*
what we want. Quién viéne en el cóche
 Serán ſervidos con toda con ſu mageſtád? *Who*
 eſtimación, *You ſhall be* is in the coach with his
ſerved with all reſpect. majeſty?
 Havéis viſto mas bélla La Reyna nueſtra ſeñóra
 criatúra? *Did you ever* ſoberána, *Our ſovereign*
ſee a more charming lady the queen.
creature? Los ótros dos perſonáges,
 Parece que os há enamó- *The other two great per-*
 rado, *You ſeem to be in* ſons.
 love with her. El caballerízo mayór,
 Mi amor es caſto, *My* *The maſter of the horſe.*
love is chaſte. Y el gran teforéro, *And*
 Su preſéncia lo meréce, *the high treaſurer.*
Her preſence deſerves it. En el primér cóche quien
 Aquí tenéis ótro eſtrémo, *hái? Who is in the firſt*
Here you have the con- coach?
trary extreme. Los gentíles hómbrés,
 Diós nos libre, *God deli-* *The gentlemen uſhers.*
ver us. Las libréas ſon múi rícas,
 De que os aſuſtáis? *What* *The liveries are very*
are you frighted at? rich.

324 *A New SPANISH Grammar.*

- Las guárdas son vistósas, *No señalan los tribútos?*
The guards are a very *Donot they set the Taxes?*
fine sight. También effo les tóca,
Adónde va su magestád? *That also belongs to them.*
Whither is his majesty No lo rehúsan a véces? *Do*
going? *not they refuse it some-*
times.
A la comédia, *To the play.*
Pues lo sabéis, decidme ál- Los Españóles son múi
go de la corte, *Since you* leáles, *The Spaniards are*
know it, tell me some- *very loyal.*
thing of the court.
Las córtés tódas se paré- No respondéis à mi pre-
cen, *All courts resemble* gúnta, *You do not an-*
one another. *swer my question.*
Peró el gobiérno de Espá- Paréceme que sí, *I think I*
ña cómo es? *But how is* *do.*
the government of Spain? Cómo así? *How so?*
El Réy es absoluto, *The* Porque siendo tan leales,
king is absolute. le dan à su Rey lo que
Que son las Córtés? *What* pide, *Because being so*
are the Cortes? *loyal, they give the king*
what he asks.
Los procuradóres del Réi- Y el Réy no pide mas de
no, *The representatives* lo que há menestér,
of the kingdom. *And the king asks no*
Tiénen poder sóbre el more than he wants.
Réy? *Have they any* Dichóso Réy, y dichósa
power above the king? génte, *an happy king,*
El Réy de España no co- and an happy people.
nóce superior, *The king* Contádme las grandézas
of Spain owns no supe- de España, *Tell me*
rior. *what relates to the gran-*
De que sírven las Córtés? *dour of Spain.*
What is the use of the Háí en España doce Réi-
Cortes? nos, ò provincias grán-
De representár las neces- des, *There are in Spain*
sidádes del Réino, *To* twelve kingdoms, or
represent the wants of large provinces.
the kingdom.

Quáles son? *Which are they?* *nasteries are reckoned to be above 9000.*

Castilla, (Castile,) Leon, Las personas religiófas se-
Aragón, Navarra, (Na-
varre) Catalúña (Cata-
lonia) Galicia, Valéncia, tén-
Murcia, Biscáya, (Bis-
cay) Granada, Andalu-
zia, Estremadura. *The religious
persons 70000.*

Estas contienen diez y seís Las haziendas de los Du-
mil, y setecientas villas, ques que son Grandes
*These contain 16700 de España se estiman
towns. The estates of
the dukes that are Gran-
dees 1990000 ducats.*

Once Arzobispados, 11 Las de los Marquésés
*archbishopricks. Grandes trecientos y
cinquenta mil, Those of
the marquesses Grandees
at 350000.*

Quarénta y ocho Opispá-
dos, 48 *bishopricks.*

Quince Universidádes, 15
universities.

Les réntas réales móntan Las de los Condes Gran-
treínta millónes de du-
cádos, *The king's re-
venue amounts to 30
millions of ducats.*

La rénta de los susodí-
chos arzobispados y o-
pispados, dos millónes Las de los Dúques, Mar-
de ducádos, *The revenues quésés, y Cón-
des, que
no son Grandes, tres
millónes ciento y cin-
quenta mil, Those of the
dukes, marquesses, and
earls who are not Gran-
dees three millions
150000.*

Las prebéndas, paróchias, Tódo ésto en España, *All
this in Spain.*

y otros beneficios otro Los domínios de las In-
tanto, *The prebends, pa-
rishes, and other bene-
fices as much more.*

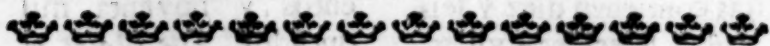
Convéntos se cuéntan mas Los domínios de las In-
de nueve mil, *The mo-
diens son immén-
sos, The
dominions in the Indies
are immense.*

Su theſóro enriquece à todo el mundo, *Its treasures enrich all the world.*

Recojámonos pára tratar deſſas cóſas, que gúſto múcho déllas, *Let us*

go home to talk of theſe affairs, for I am much delighted with them.

Vámos que ſe lléga la nóche, *Let us go, for night draws on.*



Colóquio Priméro en úna Hoſtelería.

First diſcourſe in an Inn.

A. **D**íós ſéa en éſta cáſa. Olá, quien hái allá dentro?

B. En hóra buéna vénga v. m.

A. Sóis vos el hueſpéd?

B. Sói el mózo, y criádo de cáſa, para ſervír à los hueſpedes honrádos como v. m.

A. Seré yó bién hoſpedádo aquí éſta nóche?

B. Si ſeñor, v. m. ſerá mui bien tratádo, y no le faltára cóſa que apetéſca.

A. Cómo ſe lláma el hueſped?

B. Llámáſe Guillérmo el Buéno.

A. Quiéra Díós que tal le hálle. Quál es la enſeña de ſu cáſa?

A. **G**OD be in this houſe. Hoy, who is there within?

B. Sir, you are very welcome.

A. Are you the landlord?

B. I am the man, and ſervant of the houſe, to ſerve ſuch worthy gueſts as you, Sir.

A. Shall I be well entertained here to night?

B. Yes, Sir, you will be very well treated, and ſhall want for nothing you can deſire.

A. What is my landlord's name?

B. His name is William Good.

A. God grant I may find him ſuch. What ſign has he to his houſe?

B. Mejór

B. Mejor no le hallará v. m. en ninguna parte. La enseña es la justicia. *B. You will not find a better any where. The sign is Justice.*

A. Buen huésped en casa, y la justicia à la puerta, no hai mas que desear, sino es que seais vos conforme a lo demás. *A. A good landlord in the house, and justice at the door, there is nothing else to be desired, but that you be suitable to the rest.*

B. V. m. diga de mi lo que la experiencia le enseñare; que no es de hombres honrados alabarse à si propios. *B. Sir, You may speak of me as you shall find by experience; for it is not the part of honest men to commend themselves.*

A. Ea pues, llevád mi caballo a lo caballeriza, dádle harta paja, y no le quitéis luego la silla, que viene sudado. *A. Well then, lead my horse to the stable, litter him well, and take not off his saddle presently, because he is hot.*

B. Manda v. m. que le lleve al río a beber, o que le dé agua en la caballeriza? *B. Do you please I shall lead him to the river to drink, or that I give him water in the stable.*

A. Dexádle primero refrescar, y después dádle el agua, no le de torozón el beber estando tan caliente. *A. Let him cool first, and then give him his water, lest he should have the gripes by drinking when he is hot.*

B. V. m. es servido que le quite las botas, y le trahiga unos pantuflos? *B. Does it please you, Sir, that I draw off your boots, and bring you a pair of slippers.*

A. Bien dices, trahédlos; porqué he perdido mis zapatos en el camino. Trahédme tambien una escobilla para limpiar el vestido, y agua *A. You are in the right; bring them, for I have lost my shoes by the way. Bring me also a brush to clean my cloaths, and water to cool my hands,*

pára refrescárme las má-
nos y la bóca, y quitár
tódo éste pólvó.

*and mouth, and get rid
of all this dust.*

B. Aquí tiéne v. m. tódo
lo que pide; descánse,
y mire si quiere cenár
sólo, o con lós ótros
huéspedes.

B. Here is all you ask for,
Sir, rest your self, and
consider whether you
will sup alone, or with
the other guests.

A. Mas vale cenár adón-
de hai conversación
que sólo, y en cenándo
me acostaré, que véngo
cansádo, y quíero des-
cansár.

A. It is better to sup with
company, than alone,
and when I have supped,
I will go to bed, for I
am weary, and will rest
me.

B. Muí bien hará v. m.
peró con ayuda de un
tragusto de víno, se
duérme mejór.

B. You will do very well,
Sir, but with the help of
a little wine, a man sleeps
better.

A. No es málo él consé-
jo, yó me acomodó
con el; Vámos pués, si
es hóra.

A. Your advice is not amiss,
it fits me; let us go then,
if it is time.

B. Tódo está aparejádo,
y sólo esperan a v. m.

B. All is ready, and they
only wait for you, Sir.

A. Pués yó vói, que no
es razón hacér desco-
modidad à los demás;
y pára decir la verdád,
me hálló bien dispuésto
pára comér; que la
hámbré empiéza à pi-
cár. Múcho me alégro,
Señóres, de hallár tan
buéna compañía, v. m.
se sirvan de sentárse.

A. I go then, for it is not
reasonable to incommode
the rest; and to say the
truth, I find my self well
disposed to eat, for hun-
ger begins to pinch. Gen-
tlemen, I am very glad
to find such good compa-
ny, be pleased to sit
down.

C. En tomádo v. m. su
assiénto, nos irémos tó-
dos acomodádo.

C. Sir, when you are seat-
ed, we will all place our
selves.

A. Múcho

- A. Mucho me honran v. m. yó aquí estói mui bién; no gastémos el tiempo en cumplimientos, que la cena fría no es buena.*
- D. Pues éste Caballéro lo manda, obedescámos. Aquí no son menester trinchantes, mejor es que cada uno éche mano à lo que le agradare, y comámos ahora; que después havrá tiempo para discurrir lo necesario.*
- A. 'Esto es lo que à mi me conviene, por haver hécho jornada larga, y comido poco.*
- E. Mózo, dame de beber, para aguzár el apetito.*
- B. V. m. me diga lo que gusta de beber.*
- E. Dame un buen trago de vino de Fráncia, que es el mejor à mi gusto.*
- A. A mi, un buen vaso de cervéza, que tengo sed, y es buena para matarla.*
- D. Si tenéis buena cidra, por principio de cena me agrada mas que otra bebida.*
- C. Pues para mi, el vino del Rhin es el mayor regalo, si es verdadéro.*
- A. You honour me much, Gentlemen, I am very well here; let us not waste time in compliments, for the supper cold, is not good.*
- D. Since this gentleman commands it, let us obey. Here is no need of carvers, it is better for every one to lay hold of what he likes, and let us eat now, for we shall have time to talk as much as is requisite afterwards.*
- A. That suits me very well, because I have made a long journey, and eaten little.*
- E. Waiter, give me drink to sharpen my appetite.*
- B. Sir, you will tell me what you please to drink.*
- E. Give me a good glass of French wine, which is the best in my opinion.*
- A. Give me a good cup of beer, for I am thirsty, and that is good to quench it.*
- D. If you have good cyder, I like it better than any other liquor to begin with at supper.*
- C. For me, Rhenish wine is most delicious, if it be right.*

E. Dícen,

E. Dicen, que el vino de Canárias es para mugéres, però à mi gústo, no hai ninguno que se le iguale. *E. They say Canary is for women, but for my palate none is to compare to it.*

A. El vino en general es mejor que quantas cosas han inventado los hombres para paladeárse, o antes para destruírse. *A. Wine in general is better than all other things, men have invented to please their palates, or rather to destroy themselves.*

C. Los que excéden dela templánza, para destruírse lo gastan; però con moderación todos los liquores se pueden tomar. *C. Those who exceed temperance, waste it to destroy themselves; but with moderation, all liquors may be used.*

D. Si la gente se gobernara como debe, todas las cosas crió Diós para servicio del género humano, y vemos el exceso que hai en todas. *D. If people would govern themselves as they ought, God created all things for the service of humane race, yet we see the excess there is in all.*

E. Han dado en abrasarse las entrañas con aguaardiente de mil géneros, y las mugéres en hartarse de téa hasta que no les cabe. *E. They are fallen into a way of burning out their bowels with a thousand sorts of strong waters, and the women of filling themselves with tea, till they cannot hold it.*

F. En ésta casa no falta nada, que se pueda apetecer para comer, o beber regaladamente. *F. There is nothing wanting in this house, that can be desired to eat and drink daintily.*

A. Bien se écha de ver por lo que aquí tenemos presente, y será bien no cometamos las *A. That is visible in what we have here before us, and it will be convenient that we do not commit*
cúlpas

cúlpas que condenámos
en ótros.

*the faults we blame in
others.*

C. Que hóra es, pára que
nos acostémos tan pré-
stó, teniéndo ocasion
de divertírnos.?

C. *What a clock is it, that
we should go to bed so ba-
stily, when we can divert
ourselves?*

B. Han dado las dóce.

B. *It has struck twelve.*

C. El tiempo no se siénte
en buena conversación.

C. *Time slips away in good
Company.*

D. Bueno será retirárnos,
que también la gente
de casa ha de descansar.

D. *It will be well for us to
withdraw, for the peo-
ple of the house must rest
too.*

E. Muí buenas nóches les
dé Diós à vuestras mer-
cedes.

E. *God give you a very
good night, Gentlemen.*

A. Veníd vos conmigo,
mózo?

A. *Do you come along with
me, waiter?*

B. Aquí estói pára servir
à su merced.

B. *I am here at your ser-
vice, Sir.*

A. Ayudádme a desn-
dár.

A. *Help to undress me.*

B. Aquí está la servilléta
pára el bonéte.

B. *Here is the napkin for
a cap.*

A. Está bien enjúta, y las
sávanas lo están? mirád
no me matéis con rópa
húmeda.

A. *Is it very dry, and
are the sheets so? Take
heed you do not kill me
with damp linnen.*

B. Mi áma es muí cuida-
dósa en ésse particular,
es mugér de concién-
cia, y no quiere que
padéscan los huéspedes,
por su descuido.

B. *My mistress is very care-
ful in that particular, she
is a conscientious woman,
and will not have her
guests suffer through her
neglect.*

A. Pócas hâi tan cuida-
dósas de sus huéspedes,
o de sus álmâs; las mas
cómo cóbren el dinéro,

A. *Few take such care
of their guests, or of
their own souls, most of
them, so they get the
no*

- no se acuerdan de otra *money, think of nothing*
 cosa. *else.*
- B. V. M. gusta que le *B. Does it please you, Sir,*
 sirva en otra cosa? *I should serve you any*
farther?
- A. Por ahora no me sal- *A. At present I only want*
 ta mas que dormir, y *to sleep, and I find it*
 el sueño se va acercán- *coming upon me.*
 do.
- B. Dios se le dé a v. m. *B. God grant you very*
 descansado. *good rest, Sir.*



Colóquios Españóles è Ingléses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Coloquio segundo, COLLOQUY II.

!Entre dos Caminantes, llama- Between two Travellers,
mados Don Juán, y Don called Mr John, and
Ricardo; interviniendo à Mr Richard; their two
véces sus dos Criados, y Servants, and an Host,
un Huesped. sometimes putting in a
word.

D. J. **S**Alido hémos al *Mr J. **W**E are at*
 fin de Sevilla. *length got*
out of Sevil.

D. R. Háрто me pésa *Mr R. This parting*
 à mi de la salida, però es *troubles me sufficiently, but*
 fuerza hacer de la necesi- *it is requisite to make virtue*
 dad virtúd; que quién *of necessity; for when a*
 mas no puéde, morir se *man can do no more, he*
 déxa. *must submit to dye.*

D. J. Que havéis dex- *Mr J. What have you*
 ádo atrás que tanto os a- *left behind, that you are so*
 flige su ausencia? *much grieved at its absence?*

D. R.

D. R. No he dexádo ménos, que el corazón, y el álma ; que há días, que están en poder de cierta dáma.

Mr R. I have left no less than my heart, and soul, which have been for some time past at the disposal of a certain lady.

J. Dexádla, pués élla se quéda quiéta en su cása, y rogará a Diós por nosotros, que nos vamos cansando por éste camino.

J. Do not mind her, since she is at ease in her house, and will pray to God for us, who are tiring ourselves upon our journey.

R. Podré yó deciros lo que díxo un amigo, à quién se le avía muérto un niño, que consolándole algúnos con decír, tendría quien rogasse por el en el ciélo, respondió ; no se si tendrá tanta habilidad.

R. I may say to you, as a friend did, whose young child was newly dead, when some comforted him, saying, he would have one to pray for him in heaven, and he answered ; I know not whether he is capable of it.

J. Mejor podréis decír lo que díxo el otro llevando à su mugér à enterrar ; que preguntándole cómo no iba con ella en el entiérro, respondió, Váyase esta vez assi, que à ótra yó sé lo que tengo de hacer.

J. You had better say as another did, who when his wife was buried, being asked why he did not go with the burial, answered, let her go so for this time, I know what I have to do in the next.

R. Dexémos grácias, que no puédo tan présto olvidár à quién túve tanta voluntad.

R. Let us leave jesting, for I cannot so soon forget a person I so entirely loved.

J. No sé, si me aventure à decír, que en ésta dáma tuvísteis mal gústo.

J. I know not whether I may venture to say, that you had no good fancy in the lady.

R. Porque ?

R. Why ?

J. Porque es mui gorda.

J. Because she is very fat.

R. Contra

R. *Cóntra gústo, no hái dispúta. Quanto y mas, que la mugér górdas, es frésca en el verano, y en el invierno tiéne con que abrigarse un hómbré, y no huéssos que le hágan mal.* R. *There is no arguing against tastes. Besides, a fat woman is cool in summer, and keeps a man warm in winter, and is not all bones to bruise him.*

J. *No nos metámos en semejante dispúta; dexémos a cáda loco con su téma, y volvámos a hablar de Sevilla, que désde ésta cuésta se divisa alguna párté de su grandéza, que no es tan póca que no se puéda decír múcho en su alabánza.* J. *Let us not enter upon such a controversy; let us leave every mad-man to his own humour, and let us again talk of Sevil, for from this bill, there is a view of some part of its grandeur, which is not so considerable, but that much may be said in praise of it.*

R. *La tórre es la que se parece.* R. *It is the steeple that appears.*

J. *Notáble es su altura, y mas que puéden subir hásta lo álto délla dos persónas júntas a cabállo.* J. *The height of it is very remarkable, and it is so much more that two persons together may ride up a horse-back to the top of it.*

R. *Y la Girálda, * que le fálta si con cáda viénto se múda.* R. *And what can the * Giralda want, if she turns with every wind.*

J. *!Esto yo lo jurára.* J. *I would freely swear it.*

R. *Diréis, que porqué tiéne nómbre de hembra.* R. *You mean, because she bears a woman's name.*

* Note, That this Girálda is the name of a vast Figure of a Woman, that stands on the top of the aforesaid great Steeple of Sevil, and serves for a Weather-cock, turning with the Wind, and is called Girálda for Giradla: and this from Girár, to turn about with the Wind.

J. Y ésto no bálta? Peró volvámos à nuéstro téma.

R. 'Esta tórre con las dos hermánas a los lados, son armas de su santa i- glésia.

J. Quién son las dos hermánas?

R. Santa Jústá, y San- ta Rufina, Patrónas désta gran ciudad.

J. Siénto en el álma el no haber visto en élla el monuménto que hácen el juéves santo.

R. Es cósa peregrína ésto, y las limósñas que se dan éssa semana.

J. Por ciérto, que la Iglésia es sumtuósa.

R. Havéis notádo las muchas Capillas que tié- ne, puértas, y Altáres?

J. No.

R. Pues pássan de fe- rénta los Altáres que hái ella; tiéne también nuéve puértas, y ochénta vidriéras. La grandéza de aquellas grádas es cósa peregrína; y sin ésto, el Arzobispo, Dignidades, Canonigos, Racionerós, Veintenéros, Capellánes, Músicos, Sacristánes, Mó- zos de chóro, Pertigué- ros, y ótros muchos;

J. *And is not that suf- ficient? But let us return to our subject.*

R. *This tower, with the two sisters on the sides of it, are the arms of its holy church.*

J. *Who are the two si- sters?*

R. *St Justa, and St Ru- fina, the patronesses of this great city.*

J. *It grieves me to the heart that I have not seen in it the sepulchre they make on Maundy Thursday.*

R. *That is very extra- ordinary, as are the alms which are given that week.*

J. *The church is cer- tainly very sumptuous.*

R. *Have you observed how many Chapels, Doors, and Altars it has?*

J. No.

R. *Then, there are a- bove seventy Altars in it; it has also nine doors, and eighty windows. The gran- dour of the steps is extraordi- nary, without mentioning the Archbishop, Dignitaries, Ca- nons, Demy-Canons, Va- cars Chorals, Chaplains, Musicians, Sacristans, Sing- ing-boys, Vergers, and ma- ny more; but what is a- bove all the revenue only*
sobre

sobre todo, passa la renta *for repairs, is above fifty*
de sola su fábrica de cin- *thousand Ducats.*
quenta mil Ducados.

J. La custodia, dicen, *J. The tabernacle, they*
que es cosa admirable *say, is a wonderful thing to*
vélla. *be seen.*

R. Es tan grande que *R. It is so big that it is*
la llévan en un carro. *carried in a cart.*

J. Pues que tendrá de *J. What may it weigh*
peso? *then.*

R. Mas de mil y tre- *R. Above a thousand*
cientos marcos de plata, *three hundred marks of*
que hacen veinte y seis *plate, which amount to six*
arróbas; de altura tres *hundred weight and a half;*
varas y media; y esto, *the height three yards and*
sin la cruz que lleva por *a half, without including*
remate, que es de una *the cross on the top, which*
cuarta; y el ancho de co- *is a quarter of a yard long;*
luna tiene cerca de dos *and the breadth of it be-*
varas. *tween the columns, is near*
two yards.

J. Sospecho que es ú- *J. I fancy Sevil is one of*
na de las ciudades mas *the antientest cities in Spain.*
antiguas Sevilla, de quan-
tas hai en España.

R. Mil setecientos y *R. The ancient founda-*
veinte y siete años, antes *tion of it was laid a thou-*
que Christo se encarnasse, *sand seven hundred and*
tuvo principio su antigua *twenty-seven years before*
fundación. Pero dexán- *the incarnation of Christ.*
do esto, es sin número la *Besides, the wealth it con-*
riqueza que en si enciér- *tains is immense, as is the*
ra, y la remota gente que *number of remote nations*
en ella se halla. *that resort to it.*

J. Muchas cosas hai *J. There are many things*
que asómbra en esta *to be admired in this city, as*
ciudad, como la Alcai- *the exchange of shops, the*
zería, el Real Alcázar, *royal palace, the custom-*
la Aduana, casa de la Mo- *house, the mint, the mer-*
neda,

néda, Lónja de los mercaderes, la Cárcel, la Alhóndiga, su jurisdicción con hórca y cuchillo, &c.

R. Sin esto, provée Sevilla de azéite à tódo el Réino, y las *Indias*.

J. Yo he oído decír, que muchos días se registran en la aduána mas de diéz mil arrobas.

R. Hablar de sus bastimentos de pan, vino, carne, frútas, cáza, y pescádo, sería nunca acabar.

J. Las dos colúnas que tiéne, en la úna puésta la figura de *Hercules*, primér fundadór desta gran ciudad; y en la ótra *Julio Cesar*, que la ilustró con los muros, y cercas que la rodéan, y quince puértas en éellos que la engrandézen; son, por cierto, memorábles.

R. Si mirámos en éllo; que mayor grandéza que éstos Caños de *Carmona*, que fabricáron los *Móros*.

J. Pués havéis nombrádo a *Carmona*, decid algo délla, porque yo no la hé vísto mas que de pássó, y sé que dista seis léguas de *Sevilla*.

chants exchange, the goal, the granaries, its jurisdiction with power of life and death, &c.

R. *Besides, Sevil furnishes the whole kingdom, and the West-Indies with oil.*

J. *I have heard it said, that several days, above ten thousand arrobas (that is 125 tun) are entered in the custom house.*

R. *It would be endless to talk of its provisions, of bread, wine, flesh, fruits, fowl, and fish.*

J. *The two pillars in it, with the figure of Hercules, the first founder of this great city on one of them; and on the other, that of Julius Cæsar, who adorned it with the walls, and works that encompass it, and fifteen gates in it that contribute to its grandour, are very remarkable.*

R. *If we rightly consider it; what more grandour than this Aqueduct of Carmona, which was built by the Moors.*

J. *Since you have named Carmona, give some account of it, for I have seen no more than in passing through, and know it is six leagues from Sevil.*

R. La ciudad de *Car-* R. *The city of Carmo-*
móna está puesta en sitio *na is seated on an eminence,*
eminente, con fuertes mu- *and has strong walls, with*
ros, 118 torres, y vistó- *118 towers on them, a*
fo alcázar; regando sus *beautiful palace, and its spa-*
dilatadas végas *Córbones* y *cious meadows are watered*
Guadána. Produce su tér- *by the rivers* *Carbones* and
mino mucho pan, vino, *Guadána.* *Its territory*
azéite, áves, frutas, horta- *produces much corn, wine,*
lizas, ganados, y todo lo *oil, fowl, fruit, herbs, cat-*
que es necesario para la *tle, and all that is necessary*
vida humana. Tiene la *for human life.* *The city*
ciudad tres mil vezinos, *contains three thousand fa-*
divididos en siete Parró- *milies, divided into seven pa-*
chias, con cinco convén- *ishes, with five monasteries*
tos de Frailes, otros tán- *of men, and as many of*
tos de Mónjas, y buenos *nuns, and good Hospitals.*
Hospitales.

J. No havéis oído ha- J. *Have not you heard*
blár de una famosa hechi- *talk of a famous witch said*
zera que dicen hubo un *to have lived sometime in*
tiempo en Sevilla, y des- *Sevil, and to have removed*
pués se pasó à *Carmona?* *thence to Carmona?*

R. No sólo he oído ha- R. *I have not only heard*
blár délla, pero la conocí, *talk of her, but I knew her,*
y ví todos sus instrumén- *and saw all her tools, which*
tos, que no eran sino unas *were mere trumpery, and*
baratijas, por lo qual no *therefore I believe nothing of*
créo en hechizos. *witchcraft.*

J. Yo à la verdad créo J. *For my part I verily*
que los hái; pero que los *believe there is; but whe-*
háya, o no los háya, de- *ther there is, or is not, tell*
cidme lo que sabéis de a- *me what you know of that*
quélla vieja embustera. *cheating old woman.*

R. 'Ella se aprovechá- R. *She made use of a*
ba de mil cosas, como son *thousand things, as beans,*
hábas, verbena, piedra *verbein, eagle's stone, a bad-*
del águila, pié de texón, *ger's foot, a halter one bad*
sóga de ahorcado, granos *been hanged in, the seed of*
de

de helécho, espína de erí- *the fern, the prickle of an*
 zo, flor de yédra, huéssos *hedge-bog, the flower of ivy,*
 de corazón de ciérvo, ó- *the bones of a stag's heart,*
 jos de lóba, unguéntos de *the eyes of a she-wolf, oint-*
 gáto négro, pedazos de *ment of a black cat, pieces*
 agújas clavádas en cora- *of needles stuck in hearts of*
 zónes de cabrítos, sángre *kids, blood and beard of a*
 y bárbas de cabrón bermé- *reddish be-goat, brains of*
 jo, sèssos de asno, y úna *an ass, and a little vial of*
 redomílla de azéite fer- *oil of serpents, besides other*
 pentíno, sin ótras inven- *inventions which I cannot*
 ciones de que no me acu- *call to mind.*
 érdo.

Y. Y en que paráron
 tódos éstos hechizos?

J. *And what came of all*
these spells?

R. En que la encoro-
 zaron, y à élla, y à ótros
 diéz, les diéron treciéntos
 azótes, tras lo qual me
 embió à avisár que se iba
 à Antequéra, que si que-
 ría la fuéssé à ver, y sino
 que me llevaría en bo-
 lándas.

R. *That she was carted,*
and she, and ten more, had
three hundred lashes a-piece,
after which, she sent me
word she was going to An-
tequera, if I pleased I might
go see her, or if not she
would carry me through the
air.

Y. Fuéla à ver, o súpo
 que fin túvo?

J. *Did you go see her, or*
did you hear what end she
had.

R. No la ví, que no
 me importába el buscárla,
 ni pudo élla con todo su
 fabér, hacerme bolár;
 però súpe que fué à An-
 tequéra, dónde la cogié-
 ron haciéndo hilár un ce-
 dazo, y echándo únas há-
 bas, y le diéron ótros do-
 cientos azotes; partió de
 allí à Málaga, adónde dió
 fin à su miserable vida.

R. *I saw her not, for it*
did not concern me to look
for her, nor could she with
all her art make me fly;
but I heard she went to An-
tequera, where she was
taken making a sievespin,
and casting beans, and they
gave her two hundred lashes
more; she set out from thence
to Malaga, where she end-
ed her wretched life.

Criado 1. Señores, no se olviden v^s. m^s. con la conversación, que se va llegando la noche, y si nos quedámos à la seña de la estrella, la cáma será dura, y la cena ligera.

Serv. 1. Gentlemen, let not your discourse make you forget that the night draws on, and if we should take up at the sign of the star (that is under the canopy of heaven) our bed will be hard, and our supper light.

7. La hambre debe de haver llegado, que la noche no está tan cercana, pero el aviso no es para despreciar.

J. It is likely you are hungry, for night is not so near at hand, but the advice is not amiss.

Criado 2. En verdad, señores míos, que mi camarada tiene razón, que lo mejor es llegar con día à la posada, cenar despacio, y acostarnos temprano, pues éstos caballos nos traerán hártos molidos, y los estómagos bien gastados.

Serv. 2. In truth, my masters, my comrade is in the right, for it is best to get into the inn by daylight, to sup at leisure, and go to bed betimes, for these horses will tire us sufficiently, and get us good stomachs, or digest what we have eaten.

R. Pues tenéis parte en élla, no sabríais aprovecharos de la conversación, y no poner todo vuestro cuidado en comer y dormir, que son las cosas en común entre los brutos y los hombres, siendo la razón la que nos diferencia déellos.

R. Since you partake in it, could not you improve upon the discourse, and not set all your thoughts upon eating and sleeping, which are things in common between beasts and men, whereas it is reason that distinguishes us from them.

Criado 1. Señor mas vale una lonja de tozino para quien tiene hambre, y una cáma mullida para quien viene cansado, que toda la razón del mundo;

Serv. 1. Sir, a rasber of bacon is better for a man that is hungry, and a soft bed for him that is tired, than all the reason in the world; and reason itself

y la

y la misma razón nos en- teaches us to seek for that
fena que busquemos lo which necessity requires, and
que requiere la necesidad, to maintain our bodies.
y el sustentár nueſtros cu-
érpos.

J. Ea, caminémos pués, J. Well, let us put on,
aunque no sea por mas que tho' it be only to please our
complacer à éſtos mózos men, who seem to be hungry ;
que parece que van con and what is still worse, I
hámbre ; y lo peor, que am afraid we have lost our
témo havémos errádo el way, and here is no body to
camíno, y aquí no hái à enquire of.
quién preguntár.

R. En cuánto al cami- R. As for the way, I
no, créo que vámos bien fe- believe we are safe enough ;
gúros ; pero con tódo, however, it will not be amiss
buéno será preguntar, pu- to ask, for, if I mistake not,
és, si no me engáño, allí I see a shepherd yonder.
veo un paſtór.

J. Lleguémonos allá à J. Let us go thither to
preguntár. ask.

R. Amigo, decídnos, R. Tell us friend, is this
es éſte el camíno à Car- the way to Carmóna ?
móna ?

Paſtór. Bien van v. m. Shep. You are right,
el camíno es derécho, no Gentlemen, the way is
le puéden errár. ſtraight, you cannot miſs it.

J. Quanto camíno nos J. How far have we yet
quéda aun háſta la ciu- to the city ?
dad ?

Paſtór. Dos léguas y Shep. Two leagues and
média, tódo lláno, ſin ſu- an half, without any aſcent
bída ni baxáda, tierra ráſa, or deſcent, plain ground,
y limpia. and fair.

R. Díos quéde con vos, R. God be with you,
amigo. friend.

Paſtór. Y váya con v. Shep. And go along with
m. you, Gentlemen.

J. Bien podemos caminar de espacio, pues tenemos bastante día, y conviene aliviár los cabállos, que han de caminar mañana.

J. *We may very well ride leisurely, since we have day enough, and it is good to ease the horses, who are to travel to morrow.*

Criado 1. Porcierto, señor, que es mucha la caridad para con los cabállos, sin acordarse de que tambien nosotros no nos hemos de quedár en la cama.

Serv. 1. *In truth, Sir, your charity is very great towards the horses, without considering that we are not like to lie a-bed.*

Criado 2. Y si nos cogen los salteadores, que al anohecér salen de sus escondrijos, quedaremos peor librados, y podrá ser que sin cama, ni camisa.

Serv. 2. *And if we should fall into the hands of the highwaymen, who in the evening come out of their lurking holes, we shall be in a worse plight, and perhaps have neither bed nor shirt.*

R. Pues quién te díxo a ti, que aquí havia salteadores? éstos quando los hai es allá en Sierra Morena; que en tierra descubierta cómo ésta no se atreven à mostrar la cara.

R. *Why, who told you, that here were any highwaymen? when there are any it is yonder on the mountain Sierra Morena; for they dare not show their faces in such an open country as this is.*

J. Quanto y mas que siendo nosotros quatro, y todos con buenas armas de fuego, no han de ser pocos los que nos han de poder robár; porque además del dinero, fuéramos mucha pérdida de reputación dexarnos desvalijár, viniendo tan prevenidos.

J. *Besides that, we being four of us, and all carrying fire-arms, it must be no small number that can rob us; for besides that of our money, it would be a great loss of reputation to suffer ourselves to be stripped when we are so well provided.*

Criado

Criado 1. Yo le dói mi palabra a v. m. que ántes me máten que me quíten lo que llevo, que no me inclíno à passár la nóche en un camíno muriéndo de hámbré; péro, con tódo, mas vále guardár lo que tenémos en paz, que no aventurár las vídas en defénfa déllo, sin neceffidád.

Serv. 1. I give you my word, Sir, they shall sooner kill me than take what I have from me, for I have no mind to lie all night, starving with hunger, upon the high-way; and yet it is better to save what we have in peace, than to hazard our lives in defence of it, without any need.

R. Bién has dicho, y yó créo que Diós nos ha librádo de semejántes aventuras, pués hémos llegado à las puértas de la ciudad.

R. You say well, and I believe God has delivered us from any such adventures, for we are now at the city gates.

J. Apeémonos en éste albergue, que es úno de los mejores.

J. Let us alight at this inn, which is one of the best.

R. Diós féa en ésta casa.

R. God be in this house.

Huesped. V^{os}. m^{rs}. séan muy bién venidos mis señóres.

Host. You are very welcome, my masters.

J. Tendrémos aquí todo lo neceffario, Huesped? mire, que sómos personas que nos tratámos bién.

J. Shall we be furnished with all that is necessary, landlord? take notice, that we are men who make much of our selves.

Huesped. Quánto quisiéren v^{os}. m^{rs}. hallarán, à pedir de boca, camas aseádas y sábanas limpias.

Host. You will find every thing you would have here, Gentlemen, ask and have neat beds, and clean sheets.

Criado 1. Si, però pára cenár, que la cáma sin céna no háce buén sueño.

Serv. 1. Ay, but the supper, for a bed without supper, will not make one sleep sound.

R. Mirád vos por los cabállos, que téngan mucha y buena pája, buen héno, y buena cevada, o avena, y dexád el cuidado de la cena, que en buenas manos queda.

R. Do you look to the horses, that they have plenty, and good straw, good hay, and good barley, or oats, and take no care of the supper, for that is in good hands.

J. Ahora. huesped, que hái que comer?

J. Now, landlord, what is there to eat?

Huesped. Háiliebres, conejos, perdices, pollos, pollas, capones, gansos, ánades, pavos, carnero, vaca, puérco, cabrito; escojan mis Señores.

Host. There is hare, rabbits, partridges, chickens, pullets, capons, geese, ducks, turkeys, mutton, beef, pork, kid; do you choose, Gentlemen.

R. Con un par de perdices, & una buena polla, habrá para nosotros; pero para los mozos será menester cosa de mas peso.

R. A couple of partridges, and a good pullet, will be enough for us; but our men must have something more substantial.

Huesped. Dexénlo vs. m. a mi cuenta que yo procuraré agradar a ámos, y criados.

Host. Leave it to me, Gentlemen, and I will endeavour to please both masters and servants.

J. Séa así, haya bastante para todos; y dadnos ahora a probar de vuestro vino, mientras se guisa la cena.

J. Let it be so, provide enough for all; and now let us taste your wine, whilst the supper is dressing.

Huesped. En quanto al vino, no le hái mejor en toda España; que aunque no soi borracho, ni bebedor, lo que yo gasto quiero que sea bueno, y tal le doi a mis huéspedes honrados.

Host. As for wine, there is no better in Spain; for tho' I am no drunkard, nor yet a drinker, what I drink must be very good, and such I give to my worthy guests.

R. No quisiéra decir disparates, pero los buenos

R. I would not talk foolishly, but great drinkers

nos

nos bebedóres tiénen por *have a saying, that good*
 refrán, que el buen vino *wine carries men to heaven.*
 lléva los hombres al ciélo.

J. No entiendo cómo *J. I do not understand*
 esso pueda ser. *how that can be.*

R. Dícen ellos, que el *R. They say good wine*
 buen vino cría buena san- *breeds good blood, good blood*
 gre, la buena sangre en- *begets good conditions, good*
 gendra buena condición, *conditions bring forth good*
 la buena condición páre *works, good works carry*
 buenas obras, las buenas *men to heaven.*
 obras llévan los hombres
 al ciélo.

J. Dexémos éstos dí- *J. Let us lay aside these*
 chos profanos, y vámonos *profane sayings, and go to*
 à la iglésia mas cercána, à *the next church, to return*
 dar gracias à Diós que nos *thanks to God for having*
 ha trahído aquí con bién, *brought us hither in safety,*
 y rogár nos guarde en a- *and pray he will protect*
 delánte. *us for the future.*

Pláticas éntre cena. Discourse at supper.

R. No hái mayor re- *R. There is no greater*
 gálo que úna perdíz. *dainty than a partridge.*

J. Pára mi no le hái *J. There is no greater for*
 mayor, que una buena *me, than a good pullet.*
 pólla.

R. Contra gústo no hái *R. There is no disputing*
 dispúta. Por esto se gásta *against tastes. That is the*
 todo. *reason that all things go off.*

J. La experiéncia nos *J. Experience shows,*
 muéstra, que lo mas ef- *that whatsoever is most*
 cáso es siémpre lo mas e- *scarce, is ever most valued ;*
 stimádo ; que lo que án- *for that which is over plen-*
 da sobrádo, en póco es *tiful, is made little account*
 tenído. *of.*

R. 'Ella es verdád múi *R. That is a truth well*
 conocida, y arguir contra *known, and to argue against*
 ella

ella fuéa negárse à lo que *it, would be opposing that*
 estámos viéndo con los o- *which we daily see with our*
 jos ; però hai pérsonas tan *eyes; but there are some*
 amígas de porfiár, que *men so fond of contending,*
 aún lo que está paténte à *that they will not believe*
 los ójos no quiéren conce- *what is evident to their eyes.*
 dér.

Ÿ. Por éssó hái tantas *J. That is the reason,*
 dispútas en el mundo, por *why there are so many dis-*
 el mal naturál de táles per- *putes in the world, through*
 sónas, que no quiéren dex- *the ill disposition of such per-*
 árse llevár de la razón, si- *sons, who will not suffer*
 nó de su vanidad, la qual *themselves to be led by rea-*
 los háce nécios por no pa- *son, but by their vanity,*
 recérlo. *which makes them fools for*
fear of being thought so.

R. Essá vanidad es la *R. That vanity has the*
 que mas pártte tiéne en tó- *greatest share in most things*
 do lo que hacémos, y de- *we do, and say; for there*
 címos ; porqué pocas ó- *are few words or actions free*
 bras, o palábras hái que *from some touch of that*
 no téngan su púnta deste *vice.*
 vício.

Huesped. Con su buena *Host. With your good*
 licéncia de v. m. véngo *leave, Gentlemen, I come*
 à saber si está la cena à *to know whether you like*
 gústo ; si falta alguna có- *your supper; or whether*
 sa en que les podámos ser- *any thing be wanting that*
 vír en esta cása, y si con- *this house affords, and whe-*
 ténta el vino. *ther the wine is to your li-*
king.

Ÿ. Si nos quexáramos, *J. If we should complain,*
 la culpa fuéa nuéstra ; *it would be our own fault;*
 que en verdád las áves no *for in truth the fowls cannot*
 puéden ser mejóres, ni *be better, nor better dressed,*
 mejor guisádas, y el vino *and the wine is such, that*
 es tal, que si tuviéramos *if we were wont so to do,*
 tal costúmbre nos hiciéra *it would intice us to drink*
 bebér mas de lo necesário ; *more than is necessary, but*
 però

peró fin cometer excéſſo *we will make much of our*
 nos hemos de regalár con *ſelves without exceeding, for*
 el, porque alégria el cora- *it cheers the heart.*
 zón.

R. Es mui honrádo *R. Our Hoſt is a very*
 nuéſtro huésped, y ſu trá- *honeſt man, and behaves*
 to es conforme, y tal ſerá *himſelf accordingly, and on*
 de nuéſtra pártela pága. *our part the pay ſhall be ſui-*
table.

Hueſped. Viván mis ſeñó- *Hoſt. God preſerve you*
 res muchos años, por la *many years, my maſters,*
 mucha merced que me *for the great favour you do*
 hacen, y el contento que *me, and the ſatisfaction I*
 me dan en ſervir perſonas *receive in ſerving perſons of*
 que tanto merecen; por- *ſo much worth; for ſome-*
 qué à veces después de *times after all poſſible pains*
 haver trabajado lo poſſible *has been taken to pleaſe,*
 por agradár, hai algúnos *there are ſome that cannot*
 que no pueden dar buena *give a good word.*
 palabra.

Y. Eſſo ò procéde de *J. That either proceeds*
 tener mui perversa condi- *from a perverſe temper, or*
 ción, ò de ſu natural mi- *from their covetous nature,*
 ſerable; por parecerles, *believing that deſpiſing all*
 que deſpreciando cuánto *that is ſet before them, they*
 les pónen delante, quedan *are the leſs obliged to pay*
 menos obligados à la bu- *generouſly, always making*
 éna pága, riñendo ſiem- *a broil about the reckoning.*
 pre ſobre la cuenta.

R. Eſſo mañana lo ve- *R. We ſhall ſee that to*
 rémos; y tengo en tan *morrow; and I have ſo good*
 buena opinión à nuéſtro *an opinion of my hoſt, that*
 huésped, que no créo *I do not believe there will*
 habrá porqué reñir; quan- *be any cauſe to differ; be-*
 to y mas que no me hallo *ſides that, I am no way in-*
 inclináo à eſſas pendén- *clined to thoſe quarrels, and*
 cias, y ſi me la hacen una *if I am once put upon, I*
 vez me guárdo de la ſe- *take care of being ſo a ſecond*
 gúnda,

gúnda, y aviso à todos los *time, and give notice to as*
 que puédo que se guárden. *many as I can, that they*
may secure themselves.

Huesped. Yo les promé- *Host.* I promise you,
 to à v^s. m^s. que no tendrán *Gentlemen, you shall have*
 de que guardárse, si la cu- *no occasion to shun me, if*
 énta no les contentáre, pa- *the reckoning does not please*
 garán lo que gustáren; *you, you shall pay what you*
 que yó sé que no han de *please, for I know you*
 querér que les sirvan de *would not be served for no-*
 válde, ò que piérda quién *thing, or have me lose by*
 les sirve. *serving you.*

¶. Amígo, vuéstro bu- *J. Friend, your civility*
 én proceder nos tiéne ob- *has obliged us, and we will*
 ligádos, y nosótro no *not fail to do accordingly;*
 dexarémos de correspon- *let us now go to bed, and*
 dér; acostémonos ahóra, *a good night to you.*
 y quedád à buénas nó-
 ches.

Huesped. Múi buénas se *Host.* God give you a
 las dé Diós à v^s. m^s. *very good night, Gentlemen.*





Colóquios Españóles è Ingléses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio tercero. COLLOQUY III.

Entre un 'Amo llamado Don Alónfo, y su Criado, un Sástre, y una Lavandéra, y Don Pédro. Between a Master called *Don Alonso*, and his Servant, a Taylor, and a Laundress, and *Don Pédro*.

Acérca de lo que tóca al vestirse, cortesía, y nuevas. About what belongs to dressing, civility, and news.

Amo. O Yés, mózo, que hóra es? Master. *D*O you bear, lad, what time of the day is it?

Criado. Son las nueve dadas. Servant. *I*t has struck nine.

A. Porqué me dexáste dormir, sabiendo que tenía que hacer? *A.* Why did you let me sleep, knowing that I had business to do?

C. Por no enojár à v. m. pues quién duerme siémpre siénte que le inquieten. *S.* For fear of making you angry, Sir, for they that sleep, are always vexed to be disturbed.

A. Yá no se puéde remediár. Enciende ahóra la lúmbre, y caliéntame una camisa, y unas calcetas, y fíacame ótros calzones, que me quíero levantar. *M.* There is no remedy now. Light the fire, and warm me a shirt, and a pair of under-stockings, and take me out another pair of breeches, for I will rise.

C. Qual

C. Qual vestido gusta v. m. de ponerse? S. *What suit of cloaths will you please to put on, Sir?*

A. Dáme el negro. M. *Give me the black.*

C. Lo peor es, que no hai camisa limpia. S. *The worst of it is, that there is no clean shirt.*

A. Pues cómo, teniendo tantas? Eres descuidado en extremo, y me gastas la paciencia. M. *How so, when I have so many? You are excessive careless, and tire my patience.*

C. No se impaciente v. m. pues bien sabe que todas viniéron trahidas del camino, y que no ha havido tiempo de lavar, y enjugarlas, aunque yo mucho se lo encomendé à la lavandera; pero ella se ha venido, sin llamarla. S. *Sir, be not impatient; for you know they were all worn, upon our journey, and there has not been time to wash and dry them, though I gave the Laundress a great charge about it; but she is come, without sending for.*

A. Bien ha sucedido, y ella merece ser muy bien pagada por su cuidado, y diligencia. M. *It has hapned well, and she deserves to be very well paid for her care, and expedition.*

Lavandera. Dios le pague à v. m. éssa buena consideración, y charidad; que muchos caballeros hai, que quieren que los pobres les sirvan de valde. Laundress. *God reward you, Sir, for that good consideration, and charity; for there are many Gentlemen, who would have the poor to serve them for nothing.*

A. No se entiende ésto conmigo; decid lo que monta la ropa, y se os pagará. M. *That is not my temper; say what the Linnen comes to, and you shall be paid.*

L. El criado, Señor, la contará, y me dará lo que daba à otras. L. *The Servant, Sir, may count it, and give me as he gave another.*

C. A mi cuenta, monta diez reales. S. *According to my reckoning, it comes to ten royals.*

A. *Esse*

A. 'Effe es hacér la cuenta fin la huéspedá ; de-
zíd vos, Senóra, lo que os
contentará ?

L. 'Effe, Senór, es precio sabído, no hái que re-
plicar ; si v. m. fuére ser-
vído de dárme algúna có-
sa por havér trasnochá-
do pára servirle, le esti-
maré la mercéd.

A. Bien lo havéis me-
recído, ahí tenéys los di-
éz reáles que móna la ró-
pa, y éstos dos de ventája.

L. Mil años viva mi
Sénór, à quién suplico
mánde siémpre à ésta su
póbre criada.

A. Id con Diós, y bol-
ved el sábado. Mózo,
mandástes venir el Sástre ?

C. Dos horas há que le
llamé, y créo que el es
que súbe la escaléra.

A. A buén tiempo lle-
gáis, que ya estába para
salír ; cómo havéis tardá-
do tanto ?

Sastre. No púde mas,
Señór ; que quién sirve à
múchos, no es dueño de
su tiémpo.

A. Bien está, yó os hé
embiádo à llamár pára que
me hagáis un par de ve-
stidos.

M. That is reckoning
without your Hostess ; do
you say, mistress, what will
content you ?

L. That, Sir, is a known
price, there is nothing to say
to it ; if it shall please you
to give me something for
having sat up to serve you,
I will be thankful for the
favour.

M. You have well de-
served it, there are the ten
royals the linnen amounts to,
and two royals over.

L. May my master live
a thousand years, and I be-
seech you always to employ
this your poor servant.

M. God go with you,
and come again on Satur-
day. Lad, did you order
the Taylor to come ?

S. I called him two hours
ago, and believe it is he that
is coming up the stairs.

M. You are just come in
time, for I was ready to go
abroad ; what made you stay
so long ?

Taylor. I could not help
it, Sir ; for he that is to serve
many, is not master of his
own time.

M. It is well, I have
sent for you to make me two
suits of cloaths.

S. Ordéne

S. Ordéne v. m. cómo los quiere, y pára cuándo.
T. Give your orders, Sir, how you will have them made, and against what time.

A. Haréisme un vestido entéro de escarláta, con sus guarniciones de oro, de las mejores. El otro será blanquecino llano, sin guarnición alguna.
M. You must make me a whole suit of scarlet, with gold trimming of the best. The other of a whitish colour plain, without any lacing.

S. Aquí tráhigo buena cantidad de muéstras de todos géneros, v. m. mire si le agrádan.
T. I have brought a considerable quantity of patterns of all sorts, see, Sir, whether you like them.

A. No es menester mirállo mas; éstas dos muéstras escójo, y los vestidos se hágan con toda brevedad.
M. There is no need of looking any farther; I choose these two patterns, and let the cloaths be made as soon as possible.

S. Si v. m. no manda otra cosa, me vói à disponer lo que me há ordenado.
T. If you have no other commands, Sir, I will go to provide what you have ordered.

A. Bien sabéis la confianza que hágo de vos, compradme un par de medias de seda, y otro de estambre, dígo de medias pára cáda vestido: y media docéna de guantes blancos; todo que sea presto, porque cómo vengo de camíno no téngo lo necesario pára parecer en la córte.
M. You know how much I confide in you, buy me one pair of silk stockings, and another of worsted, I mean stockings for each suit: and half a dozen of white gloves; all as soon as may be, because being come off a journey, I have not necessaries to appear at court.

S. Mañana à la nóche estará aqui el vestido llano, y de alli à dos dias el guarnecido, en esto no avrá falta.
T. To-morrow night, the plain suit shall be here, and, two days after, the laced, there shall be no failure in it.

A. Si

A. Si así lo cumplís, *M.* If you perform it, I
no pido mas. *desire no more.*

C. Señor, aquí está Don *S.* Sir, Don Pédro is
Pédro. *here.*

A. Entre su mercéd, *M.* Let him come in,
pues me la hace tan grán- *since he does me so great a*
de en adelantarse en ve- *favour as to be before-hand*
nirme à vér, siendo mi *with me in coming to see me,*
obligación haver ido à be- *when it was my duty to have*
sarle la mano. *gone to kiss his hands.*

D. P. Dexémos cum- *D. P.* Let us lay aside
plimiéntos, que parecen *compliments, which do not*
mal éntre amigos verda- *look well among real friends.*
deros. *V. m^d.* sea múi *You are very welcome, Sir,*
bién venido, y me alégro *and I am glad to see you in*
de verle bueno. *good health.*

A. Y yo lo mismo de *M.* And so am I to find
hallarle aquí y bueno. *you here and well.*

D. P. Yá que ha lle- *D. P.* Since the happy
gado la feliz hora de vol- *hour is come, that we are*
vérnos à juntár, decídme *met again, tell me something*
alguna cosa de lo que ha- *of what you have seen in*
véis visto en Fráncia, *France, which I have so*
que tanto la he deseado *much coveted to see my*
ver. *self.*

A. Los que han cami- *A.* Travellers are often
nado à véces son sospe- *liable to be suspected, as*
chosos, tomándose la li- *taking the liberty to invent*
bertad de inventár lo que *whatsoever their imagina-*
les dicta su imaginacion; *tion dictates to them; some*
unos exagerando las cosas *extolling things far beyond*
múi allá de la verdád, y *truth, and others despising*
ótro despreciando cuánto *all that is out of their own*
háí fuera de sus propias *countries. France is such*
tierras. *Fráncia* es tal que *a one, that it needs no by-*
no necesita de hypér- *perboles to commend it, as*
boles para alabarla, te- *having so much truly to be*
niendo tanto verdadero *admired, that the eyes are*
A a *que*

que admirár, que no se *not satiated with beholding,*
 hártan los ójos de mirár; *and it is a shame there*
 y es verguénza, que háya *should be such foul tongues*
 lénguas maldiciéntes que *as do speak ill of it.*
 se attrévan à hablár mal
 della.

D. P. Por sabér con *D. P. As I very well*
 quánto defensádo algunas *know with what an air*
 persónas cuéntan lo que *some persons tell what they*
 apénas han soñádo, yo *scarce dreamed, I give lit-*
 dói póco crédito à lo que *tle credit to what I hear in*
 óigo en las conversaci- *conversation that accidental-*
 ónes que acaso se ofrécen, *ly occurs, being satisfied there*
 conocién-do, que no fáltan *are men that value them-*
 hómbres, que se precian *selves upon lying; whereas*
 de mentír; sién-do un ví- *it is a vice that all men who*
 cio de que tódo hómbre *are well born ought to be*
 bién nacido se debe afren- *ashamed of.*
 tár.

A. Infáme cósa es no *A. It is an infamous*
 tratár verdád. *thing not to speak truth.*

D. P. Infinitos son los *D. P. Infinite mischiefs*
 daños que acarréan éstas *are the consequence of that*
 maldítas hablíllas. *curst tittle tattle.*

A. Quántos predica- *M. All the preachers in*
 dóres hái no son bastán- *the world are not able to*
 tes pára ponér fréno à las *curb tongues, it is not likely*
 lénguas, mal lo harémos *that we should do it.*
 nosóttros.

D. P. A que propósito *D. P. To what purpose is*
 es el predicár, si la vída *it to preach, if the preacher's*
 del predicadór no corres- *life is not suitable to the ser-*
 pón-de con el sermón. *mon. One bad example is*
 Mas fuérza tiéne un mal *more prevalent than ten bo-*
 exémplo que diéz pláticas *ly discourses. And what is*
 fantas. Y lo que peór es, *still worse, the sermons be-*
 cómo los sermónes se há- *ing made for worldly ends,*
 cen por fines mundános, *it is not to be wondered*

no hái que espántar que *that they produce no spiri-*
no hágan frútos espiritu- *tual fruit.*
ales.

A. La mála vída de *M.* *The ill lives of the*
los ecclesiásticos es la *churchmen are the ruin of*
perdición de los seglares. *the laity. But let us not*
Peró no nos vámos em- *launch out too far in other*
barcádo en vídas ajénas; *mens lives; let every man*
cada úno mire por sí, y *look to himself, and the*
andaré el mundo mejor. *world will go better.*

D. P. Así es; volvá- *D. P.* *That is right; let*
mos pues à vueétro viáge, *us therefore return to your*
y contádme alguna cósa *travels, and tell me some-*
del. *thing of them.*

A. Que os hé de con- *A.* *What shall I tell*
tár? Estas relaciones pí- *you? Those relations re-*
den múcho espácio; si *quire much leisure; if you*
deseáis informáros, leéd *desire to be informed, read*
éssos borradores, en los *these notes, in which you*
quáles hallaréis muchas *will find many particulars,*
particularidades, que iba *that I still wrote down,*
assentádo miéntras las te- *whilst they were fresh in*
nía fréscas en la memoria. *my memory.*

D. P. Para mi no *D. P.* *Nothing can be*
havrá mayor placér. Pe- *more pleasing to me. But*
ro decidme que os paré- *tell me your opinion of the*
ce de la nación *Francésa.* *French nation.*

A. Acerca de la Na- *A.* *As to the French na-*
ción *Francésa* no tengo *tion, I have nothing else to*
que decír ótra cosa, sino *say, than that all in gene-*
que todos, en común, son *ral are very civil; but to*
múi civiles, pero es me- *treat with them, is requisite*
nestér una grande arte pa- *great consideration, because*
ra tratár con ellos, pues *they are very cunning and*
son múi sagáces y enga- *deceitful.*
ñosos.

D. P. Eflo yá me lo *D. P.* *That I knew be-*
sabía yo antes, pués úno *fore, since one of them*
de ellos me engañó condos *cheated me of 200 pieces of*

mil pesos que le presté; *eight that I lent him; and*
y lo peor es, que jamás *what is the worst, is, that*
oí palabra de el hasta la *I never heard a word from*
semana pasada, que rece- *him till last week, that I*
bí una carta súya. *received a letter from him.*

A. Apostaré, que es la *M.* I will lay a wager
misma persona que yo ví *that is the same person I*
en Orleans, pues me ha- *saw at Orleans, because he*
bló de v. m. este se lla- *spoke to me of you, his name*
maba *was*

D. P. El mismo, pero *D. P.* The very same,
la carta que tengo, lléva *but the letter I have from*
la fecha de París. *him, bears its date from*
Paris.

A. Bien puede ser, *M.* That may well be,
porque según me díxo, *because as he told me, he*
tenía intención de partirse *had a mind to set out for*
para París el día sigui- *Paris the next day.*
ente.

D. P. Que haré yo pa- *D. P.* What shall I do
ra cobrar mi dinero? *to get my money?*

A. Que? Venírse con- *M.* What? Come to
migo à París, y obligarle *Paris with me, and oblige*
allí que le pague; yo in- *him there to pay you; I in-*
tento volver allá dentro *tend to return thither within*
de dos meses, y el me *two months, and he told me*
díxo que quería estable- *that he would settle himself*
cerce alla en la calle de *there in St Anthony's street,*
San Antonio, en donde vi- *where his parents live. And*
ven sus Padres. Y con *with this opportunity you*
esto v. m.^d. tendrá el gusto *will have the pleasure of see-*
de ver las muchas y mag- *ing the many and magnifi-*
níficas fábricas que hái en *cent buildings that are*
Francia, y especialmente *in France, and especially*
el Palacio y jardines de *the palace and gardens of*
Versailles, que son los me- *Versailles, which are the*
jores del mundo. *best in the world.*

D. P. Así lo haré, y *D. P.* So I will, and I
voíme ahora à hablar so- *go now to speak to my fa-*
bre

bre ello à mi Padre que *ther about it, who is at*
 está en casa. *home.*

A. A Diós pués, pero *M. Farewel then, but*
 déxese ver mañana, y ha- *let me see you to-morrow,*
 blarémos mas sobre esto. *and we will speak more up-*
on this subject.

D. P. Está bien ; à Dí- *D. P. It is well ; fare-*
 os. *well.*



Colóquios Españóles è Ingléses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio quarto.

COLLOQUY IV.

Sôbre várias Matérias, én- Upon several Subjects,
tre quátro Camarádas, between four Compan-
Diégo, Fernádo, Tho- nions, James, Ferdin-
más, y Eduárdo. and, Thomas, and Ed-
ward.

D. Y' A que hémos co- *J. N* OW we have
 mído, vámonos *. dined, let us go*
 à passeár al jardín, que *walk in the garden, which*
 dicén es buéno pára la di- *they say is good for digestion,*
 gestión, y escusarémos de *and we shall avoid sleeping*
 dormir la siésta. *the afternoon nap.*

F. Dezís bien, que ésta *P. You are in the right,*
 costúmbre de dormir es *for this custom of sleeping is*
 muí perezósa, y si no es *very hurtful, and unless it*
 en tiempo de grandíssima *be when the heat is excessive,*
 calor, mejor es divertír- *it is better to take some di-*
 nos. *version.*

T. No gastémos el ti- *T. Let us not spend time*
 émpo en ceremonias, que *in ceremonies, for it is very*

es muí mal gastádo, y no ill spent, and I do not love
gústo déllas. them.

E. A mi no me agrá- E, I like them not, but
dan, mas la cortesía siem- civility is always good.
pre es buena.

D. Repáren bien en lo J. Take good notice of
que viéren, y verán mú- what you see, and you will
cha curiosidád en éste jar- see much curiosity in this
dín, que es úno de los me- garden, which is one of the
jóres que se hállan en éstas best that are in these parts.
pártes.

F. 'Estos andámios son F. These walks are very
muí agradables por la agreeable for the shade of
sómбра de los árboles, y the trees, and the sweet
lo odorífero de las múrtas. scent of the myrtle.

T. 'Otra buena calidad T. They have another
tiénen, que es, ser lár- good quality, which is, that
para évitar las muchas they are long to save the of-
vuéltas à que obligan los ten turning there must be in
córtos; y lo ángo que short ones; and their
puéden andar seis persónas breadth, that six persons
à la par con descánso. can walk abreast in them.

E. Las éras tan límpias E. The beds are so neat
que se puéde dormir en that they are fit to sleep on
éllas; y según la yérba e- them; and the grass so green,
stá vérde parécen mullí- that they look soft, and in-
das, y comvídan à echárse vite to lie down upon them.
en éllas.

D. 'Essa enramáda es D. That arbour is de-
deleitósa en el veráno, ef- lightful in summer, exposed
puésta à tódos los viéntos to all winds to refresh, and
para refrescár, y libre de free from the sun-beams.
los ráyos del sol.

F. 'Esta grúta con tódo, F. However this grotto,
en mi opinión, le háze mú- in my opinion, is much be-
cha ventája en lo fresco, y yond it for coolness, and a-
en lo apacible, semejáse greeableness, it looks very
múcho con lo natural, y natural, and has the orna-
méta los adórnos del ánte. ments of art.

T. Aquélla

T. Aquélla fuénte es bella, y aquélla cascáda háce un ruído que parece alégra, y al mismo tiémpo adorméce los sentidos con lo incessáble del sonido. T. *That fountain is beautiful, and that cascade makes a noise that seems to exhilarate, and at the same time lulls the senses asleep with the incessant sound.*

E. Adelantémonos un póco à ver los frutales, y gozár de su frúta. E. *Let us advance a little to see the fruit trees, and enjoy the fruit.*

D. Pára mi no la hái mas deliciosa que los higos, y aquí los hái en perfección. J. *None is more delicious to me than figs, and here they are in perfection.*

F. Yo me conténto con duráznos, cuándo son grandes y madúros, cómo los deste arbol. F. *I am satisfied with peaches, when they are large and ripe, as these on this tree.*

T. ¡Estos melocotones me llévan à mi los ojos, y tienén ellos un gústo soberáno. T. *These melocotones charm my eyes, and they have a sovereign taste.*

E. Por no querér lo que ótro quíere, pués todos se han diferenciádo, yó escójo pára mi éstas Péras bergamótas, y regalémonos cáda qual confórme à su apetito. E. *Because I will not be for the same as another is, since you have all varied, I make choice of those bergamot pears, and let us treat ourselves every one to his own appetite.*

D. No nos dexémos llevar, cómo les niños, de la frúta, que Diós crió pára el susténto, y no pára engolosinárnos. Escuchémos un ráto el dulce canto de los pajarillos, que sin ayúda de maéstrs hacen una musica, quán- J. *Let us not be deluded like children, by the fruit, which God made for sustenance, and not to indulge our appetite. Let us a while listen to the sweet singing of the little birds, who without the help of masters make such musick, as is the more*

to mas natural, mas maravillosa. *wonderful, the more natural it is.*

F. Ellos los únos de los otros aprénden, y los que mas habilidad tiénen salen mas diestros, cómo éntre los hombres; que cada discípulo sale conforme al talento que Dios le dió, y no conforme al maestro. *F. They learn of one another, and those which have the best capacity prove most skilful, as it is among men; for every learner proves according to the talent God has given him, and not according to the master,*

T. El Ruiseñor es milagro de la naturaleza, y háce ventaja à todos los demás. No lo he visto, pero afirman que es tanta à veces la fuerza que ponen en cantar, que se caen muertos. *T. The nightingale is a wonder in nature, and surpasses all others. I have not seen it, but it is affirmed, that they sometimes strain themselves so much with singing, that they drop down dead.*

E. La calandria no le queda à debér mucho al ruiseñor, y no se fi à veces no le iguala; ni es ménos de estimar al gileguero, pero sobre todos es el canario. *E. The lark comes not far behind the nightingale, and perhaps sometimes equals him; nor is the goldfinch less valuable, but the canary bird is beyond them all.*

D. De los cantores habéis nombrado los principales y merecen ser estimados; pero que haya papayos que aprendan à formar voz humana, y hablar palabras distintas, es lo mas de maravillar, y he oído yó mismo un papagayo que cantava de tal manera, que quantos le oían sin verle, juzgavan que era persona humana. *J. You have named the chiefest of the singers, and they deserve to be valued; but that there should be birds that learn to form an human voice, and speak distinct words, is most to be admired, and I my self have heard a parrot that sung after such a manner, that all who heard and did not see him, concluded it was some human person.*

F. También hablan las marícas, y los tórdos; però jamás con la perfección que los Papagayos; y es digno de reparar que teniendo estas aves picos y no bocas como nosotros, puedan formar palabras, lo qual por esto ellas hacen allá en el gazzate.

T. Mucho hai que considerar en el hablar y cantar de las aves; però tambien me parece que merece nuestra atención aquella prodigiosa variedad de colores, que se halla entre ellas, porque apenas el arte ha llegado à igualárlas.

E. Mui hermosas las produce nuestra Europa, però no llégan con mucho à las que se hallan en la Asia, y la América.

D. Conversando acerca de las aves nos hallamos entre estos estanques, que se hallan mui bien proveídos de todos los géneros de peces que viven en semejantes aguas, y hai diferentes géneros dellos.

F. Lo principal en estos estanques son picas, o lúfos, y carpas; però en este río se cogen infinitas truchas, y à su tiempo salmones que suben de la

E. Magpies, and black-birds, also talk; but never so perfectly as parrots; and it is worth observing, that those birds having beaks, and not mouths like us, they can form words, which they do within their throats.

F. Much reflexion may be made upon the talking and singing of birds; but I am of opinion that the prodigious variety of colours, that is found among them, deserves our observation, for art has scarce been able to match them.

E. Europe produces very beautiful birds, but they do not come near those that are found in Asia, and America.

D. Discoursing concerning the birds we are come among these ponds, which are very well stored with all the sorts of fish that live in such waters, there are several sorts of them.

F. The chiefest in these ponds are pikes, or jacks, and carps; but in this river an infinite number of trouts are taken, and in the season, salmon, that come up
mar

mar à desovar, y después *from the sea to spawn, and*
 en su sazón los salmonzillos *afterwards at their time the*
 que báxan à criarse en *small salmon that go down*
 la mar. *to thrive in the sea.*

T. 'Esta es otrá de las *T. This is another of the*
 maravillas de la natura- *wonders of nature, or to*
 léza, o hablándo con mas *speak more properly, of the*
 propiedad, de la divina *divine wisdom, the immen-*
 sabiduría, la inmensidad *sity of the sorts of fishes,*
 de géneros de peces, sus *their different shapes, that*
 diferentes formas, aquél- *hideous magnitude of some,*
 la espantósa grandeza de *and the strange smallness of*
 los unos, y la rara peque- *others.*
 ñez de ótros.

E. Múcha es la distin- *E. There is a great di-*
 ción en los tamaños, cómo *versity in sizes, as also in*
 también en la figura, o *the figure, or make, but as*
 hechura, però en lo que *for beauty, I know not of*
 toca à hermosúra, no sé *any that is among them all,*
 que se hálle en algúno dél- *on the contrary most of them*
 los, ántes los mas son dif- *are misshapen, and no way*
 formes, y póco agradábiles *pleasing to the sight, having*
 à la vista, sin tener cósa *nothing agreeable to the eyes,*
 que conténte à los ojos, a- *besides their being dumb, and*
 demás de ser múdos, y *having no voice.*
 faltárles voz.

D. Si no puéden entre- *J. Though they cannot*
 tener los ojos, ni los oídos; *entertain the eyes, nor the*
 aloménos no les falta con *ears; however, they do not*
 que satisfacér el gústo; *want something to please the*
 pués no háí mayor regálo *taste; for there are no*
 que el que nos dan la mar, *greater dainties than those*
 y los ríos, en tan vários *the sea, and rivers afford*
 plátos cómo déellos se fa- *us, in such variety of dishes*
 can, si no faltan buénos *as are taken from them,*
 cocinéros que los sépan *if there be no want of cooks*
 guisar. *that know how to dress*
them,

F. No quiero despreciar lo que tanta parte del mundo estima; pero para mi mas vale una pierna de carnero, o un lomo de vaca que quanto las aguas producen; y si vamos a las aves, estas en delicadeza sobrepujan quanto hai en el universo para el sustento humano.

T. Digo que tenéis buen gusto, y me atengo yo a la carne que cria carne, y satisface, dexando el estomago bien proveído para en adelante; siendo el pescado de la naturaleza del elemento en que se cria, que por mas que se harte una persona, luego se halla con hambre, porque no queda substancia.

E. No puedo ir contra esse parecer, pero con todo vemos que hai gentes en el mundo que mas viven de pescado que de carne, y noobstante son robustas, y en las grandes mesas tienen en mucho el salmon, las langostas, las ostras, y otros muchos generos; y los pescados salados, y en escabeche dan mas nutrimento, entre los quales se pueden contar el abadejo, el esturion, y el atun.

F. I will not undervalue that which so great part of the world values; but for my part I had rather have a leg of mutton, or a surloin of beef, than all that the waters produce; and if we go on to the fowls, they in delicacy exceed all the world affords for the sustenance of men.

T. I say you are in the right, and I am for flesh which breeds flesh, and satisfies, leaving the stomach well furnished for the time to come; whereas fish is of the nature of the element it is bred in, so that though a man eat never so much to satiety, he is presently hungry again, because no substance remains.

E. I cannot oppose that opinion, however we see there are people in the world who live more upon fish than upon flesh, and nevertheless they are strong, and at great tables they highly value salmon, lobsters, oysters, and many other sorts; and fish that is salted, or pickled affords more nutriment, among which may be reckoned poor jack, surgeon, and tunny fish.

D. Con

D. Con qualquier cosa que nos criemos es cierto que hemos de crecer, y hallarnos bien; assi vemos que no hai hombres mas fuertes y bien dispuestos que los de algunas partes mui septentrionales, donde desde la niñez, su principal sustento, es pan de cebada, y avena, alguna leche, raíces, sin saber que cosa es vino, y mui poco de carne, o pescádo.

D. Whatsoever it is that we are bred with, it is certain that we shall thrive, and do well; thus we see there are no men stronger, and lustier than those of some of the very northern parts, where from their infancy, their main sustenance is barley, or eaten bread, some milk, roots, without being ever acquainted with wine, and very little with flesh, or fish.

F. Los que se crían con regalo no pueden con estos mantenimientos. La naturaleza con poco se contenta, pero háse de hacer el cuerpo a ello desde los primeros años, que después es tarde. Mirémos nuestras damas melindrosas, si les pusiéran delante lo que son regalos para nuestras labradoras, no les entrara bocádo en el cuerpo.

F. Those who are daintily bred cannot bear that sort of food. Nature is satisfied with little, but the body must be innured to it from the first years, for afterwards it is too late. Let us look upon our squeamish ladies, if they should have such things set before them, as are dainties for our country women, not one morsel would go into their stomach.

T. Yá que se ha hablado tanto del comer, razón será no nos olvidemos que tambien se ha de beber, y dexando aparte el agua que crió Dios en general no sólo para los hombres, sino también para quantos animales ha puesto en este mundo, es el vino el mas soberano

T. Since so much has been said of eating, it is but reasonable we should not forget that we are also to drink, and leaving aside the water which God created not only for men, but also for all the creatures he has placed in this world in general, wine is the most sovereign of all

soberano

soberano de cuántos li- *the liquors that have been*
quóres hasta este día se han *known to this day, or that*
conocido, o que las edá- *future ages, and human in-*
des venidéras, y la humá- *vention will ever find out for*
na invención hallarán pa- *the benefit of rational crea-*
ra bién de las criatúras ra- *tures.*
cionáles.

E. Los vinos que pro-
duce sólo *España* apénas
se pueden contar, pués
que será de todas las ótras
tierras? Hablar déssó fué-
ra nunca acabár. El ví-
no en general tiéne mú-
chas virtúdes templada-
mente usado, y sin ser me-
nester acudir á los médi-
cos que nos las dígan, o
á los autóres antiguos, la
éxperiencia nos enléña que
da fuerzas, alégria el ró-
stro, fortifica los nérvios,
ayúda á la vísta de los ójos,
esfuérza el estómago, há-
ce buena digestión, despi-
érta el apetito, háce buen
suéño, quita la tristeza, y
póne alegría en el corazón,
que son bastánte alabán-
zas, y verdádes conocí-
das, que no hái quien las
pueda negar, y sin todo
esto es tan agradable al
paladár que por ésse solo
gústó hái tantos que se pi-
érden.

D. En verdád que ha-
véis acertádo en no can-
sarnos con los disparátes

E. *The wines Spain a-*
lone produces are hardly to
be reckoned up, what then
must there be in all other
countries? To talk of that
would be endless. Wine in
general has many virtues
moderately used, and with-
out being obliged to have re-
course to physicians, or an-
cient authors, experience
teaches us, that it gives
strength, makes the coun-
tenance chearful, fortifies
the nerves, helps the sight
of the eyes, cherishes the sto-
mach, causes good digestion,
sharpens the appetite, causes
sound sleep, drives away me-
lancholy, and rejoyces the
heart, which are sufficient
commendations, and known
truths, which no man can
deny, and besides all this it
is so agreeable to the palate,
that so many are ruined on-
ly for that pleasure.

J. *In truth you have*
been in the right in not tir-
ing us with the absurdities
de

de muchos de los antiguos, con que siempre nos están empalagando los modernos que quieren ganar fama de muy leídos, porque son tan enfadósas sus reglas, que no hai paciencia que baste para ellas. 'Uno nos enseña quánta agua se ha de mezclár con el vino; ótro póné tássa en las veces que se ha de beber; otro nos dize hasta que edad nos hemos de abstener; ótro no quiere que lo béban las mugéres; y assi ótras mil pataratas conforme à lo que cada uno dellos tenía entonces en la cabeça.

F. Yo no entiendo para que son tantos preceptos, todo hombre templado sabe lo que en éste caso le conviene, sin que sean menester cuéntos viejos de dos mil años; y los borrachos se rién, y reniegan de todas éstas vejézes. Quánto y mas que hai mósos que no necesitan ménos de un trágó de vino que los viejos, y hai estómagos que requieren dobladá la cantitád que ótros. Pués decír que no lo béban las mugéres tambien tiéne su pedázo de locúra, cómo si sus cuerpos

of many of the ancients, with which the moderns who would gain the reputation of having read much are always cloying us, for their rules are so disagreeable, that no patience can bear with them. One of them teaches us how much water must be mixed with our wine; another fixes the number of glasses that is to be drunk; another tells us till what age we must abstain; another will not allow women to drink it; and thus a thousand fopperies, according to what every one of them had at that time in his head.

F. I do not understand what so many precepts are for, every moderate man knows what is fit for him in this case, without standing in need of old stories of two thousand years; and drunkards laugh at, and curse all those antiquities. Besides that, there are some young men who have no less occasion for a glass of wine than the old, and there are stomachs that require double the quantity as others. Then to say that women must not drink it, is also a piece of madness; as if their bodies were not human, and did

érpos no fuéran humanos, *not stand in need of that*
 y no necesitáran de aquél *comfort as well as men.*
 alivio también cómo los
 hombres.

T. Que mayor locura *T. What greater mad-*
 puede haver que el ir à pe- *ness can there be than to go*
 dír consejo de los muertos *ask advice of the dead, for*
 para lo que estamos vién- *those things we see with our*
 do con los ojos, y palpán- *eyes, and feel with our*
 do con las manos? Però *hands? But that custom is*
 está éssa costumbre tan in- *so established, that the bea-*
 troducida, que no sólo en *then philosophers are not on-*
 las conversaciones entrán *ly thrust into conversation,*
 los philosophos gentiles, *without head or tail; but*
 sin que ni para que; mas *the very preachers stun us*
 los mismos predicadores *with sentences from Plato,*
 nos atúrden con sentén- *Seneca, Pliny, Socrates,*
 cias de Platón, de Seneca, *&c. as if there were no bo-*
 de Plinio, de Sócrates, &c. *ly fathers, and christian*
 cómo si no huviéra, san- *doctors to have recourse to.*
 tos padres, y doctóres
 christíanos à quién acudir.

E. No háí cosa mas e- *E. Nothing is more noto-*
 vidénte que los grandes *rious than the great bene-*
 biénes que háce el vino al *fits human race receives*
 género humano; però *from wine; but at the same*
 también es gran lástima *time it is a great pity that*
 que la demasia cause tán- *the excess of it should occa-*
 tos daños, y no es de ef- *sion so many mischiefs, nor*
 pantár, porque según ré- *is it to be wondered at, for*
 glas de philosophía la cor- *according to the maxims of*
 rupción de lo mejor es la *philosophy, the corruption of*
 peor, es à saber, que *the best things is worst, that*
 cuánto mejores son las có- *is, how much the better*
 sas en si mismas tanto *things are in themselves, so*
 mas perniciosas son, cuán- *much the more pernicious*
 do o éllas se corrompen, *they are, when either they*
 o nosotros usamos mal *are themselves corrupted, or*
 déllas. *we make an illuse of them.*

D. Bien

D. Bien haveis reparádo en éllo, porqué es cierto que no hai cósa que mas máles acarrée que el demasiádo beber. Quántas muértes, quántos alborótos, quántas deshonestidádes ha ocasionádo la embriaguéz; y quántos milláres, sin hacer daño à ótros han destruído su salud, è incurrido en infinitas desgracias, por havérse facádo de juício con éste abominable vicio; sin hablar de la deshónra, o por mejor decír infamia de ponérse un hombre en peor éstado que las béstias mas brútas, por tan estragádo apetíto cómo es el beber con demasia.

F. En muchas pártes del mundo, no las quiéro nombrár por no ofendér à nádie, y por no ser necesario, pues tódos los conócen, se ha introducido tánto ésta maldíta costúmbre, que el emborrachárse no se tiéne por afrenta; ántes hái lócos, que no les puédo dar ótro título, que se précian de emborrachár à ótros, y cuéntan éstas fealdádes cómo si fuéran las mayores hazánas. Y me avergu-

J. You have observed right, for it is certain that nothing produces more mischief than too much drinking. How many murders, how many uproars, how many lewd practices has drunkenness occasioned; and how many thousands, without doing harm to others have destroyed their own health, and fallen into infinite misfortunes by having put themselves beside their reason by this abominable vice; not to speak of the dishonour, or to speak more properly of the infamy of a man's putting himself into a worse condition than the most brutal beasts, for the sake of so depraved an appetite as drinking too much.

F. In several parts of the world, I will not name them to avoid giving offence to any body, and because it is not necessary, since all men know them, this cursed custom has so far taken place, that to be drunk is not looked upon as a disgrace; on the contrary there are mad men, for I can give them no other title, who value themselves upon making others drunk, and relate those shameful actions, as if they were the greatest
énço

énzo de decillo, hái yá exploits. And I am ashamed to tell it, there are now women that can match the most infamous men in this vile practice, exposing themselves to any folly; for when they have lost their reason, there is little trusting to the rest.

T. Con ser cósa natural el beber águá, no se han contentádo los hombres con élla; que en las tiérras adónde no náce víno, han inventádo ótros géneros de breváges, éntre los quáles el mas usádo es la cervéza, la qual hacen tan fuérte que á vecés soprepúja el víno, aunque no es tan sana; con que le fálta lo buéno, y le sóbra lo málo, y en particular lléna los cuérpos de ventosidad.

E. Pués la cidra, aunque es mas natural, y le hace múcha ventája á la cervéza, no puéde competir con el víno, siendo muí crúda; con que cáusa desconciérto en los que no se han bién acostumbraído á élla.

D. También se bébe el zúmo de las péras, y es tenído por mas pernicioso que la cidra. La alója es cósa regaláda en el

T. Though it be natural to drink water, men have not been satisfied with it, for in those countries which produce no wine, they have invented other sorts of liquors, among which, the most usual is beer, which they make so strong, that it sometimes exceeds wine, though it is not so wholesome, so that it wants the good, and has too much of the evil, and particularly it fills the bodies with wind.

E. Then as for cider, though it is more natural, and much preferable to beer, it cannot stand in competition with wine, as being very raw, so that it occasions fluxes in such as are not well used to it.

J. The juice of pears (perry) is also drunk, and is looked upon as more mischievous than cider. Mead is very delicious in summer,

B b veráno,

veráno, si se repára en so- if we only look to our pa-
lo el apetito ; pero si mirá- late ; but if we regard
mos la salud, es muí fría health, it is too cold for the
para el estómago, y por stomach, and therefore it is
ésto se ha introducido el become customary, to tem-
mezclarla con ún poco de per it with a little brandy ;
agua ardiénate ; pero aún but even in that case it is
en ésto es menester andar requisite to use caution, that
con tiénato que no sea de- it be not too much.
masiada.

F. En buena conversa- V. We are got into a ve-
ción nos hemos metido, ry fine discourse, that if any
que quien nos oyése, pu- should hear us they might
diéra tenérnos en opinión take us for good drinkers,
de buenos bebedóres, sin though we have not deserv-
haber merecido tan mala ed that bad name. Let us
fama. Volvamos pues à then return home, whilst
casa mientras se hace hó- supper-time comes on, for it
ra de cenar, que ya pré- will soon draw near, and
sto se irá llegando, y no we shall not want something
faltará en que entretenér- to divert us.
nos.

T. Tenéis mucha ra- T. You are much in the
zón, pues agora da el re- right, for the clock now
lój las siete, y es bueno strikes seven, and it is good
cenar temprano, para no to sup early, to avoid go-
acostarse con el estómago ing to bed with a full sto-
cargado, y tener tiempo mach, and to have time to
de parlár, y divertírnos. chat and to divert ourselves.

E. 'Eso muí bien se E. That can be very
hace sobre cena, y mas well done after supper, es-
con un traguito de vino pecially with a moderate
moderado, que así alégra glass of wine, for so it
el corazón. cheers the heart.



Coloquios Españóles è Ingléses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio quinto.

COLLOQUY V.

Entre dos Dámas, dos Caballéros, y dos Criádas.

Between two Ladies, two Gentlemen, and two Maid-Servants.

Sôbre várias Matérias.

Upon various Subjects.

D. 1. **V**ENÍd acá Ma- 1 Lady. **C**OME hither
ría, y compo- Mary, and
nédme éste tocádo ; no os order this head-dress for
detengáis en impertinén- me ; do not dwell upon im-
cias, bién sabéis que no pertinence, you know I
presúmo de mi, ni deséo have no conceit of my self,
enamorár à nádie ; bástá nor do I desire to make any
para mi el adórno decen- body fall in love ; it is e-
te, pára no parecér ridí- nough for me to be decently
cula. dressed, not to appear ridi-
culous.

Cr. 1. Es v. m. muí 1. Serv. Madam, you
fácil de contentár, dichó- are easily pleased, I am
sa yó en servir à quién happy in serving one that
tiéne tan buén gústo ; y has so good a fancy ; and
bien desdichádas de las unhappy they who must be
que han de estár quátro four hours standing to dress
hóras en pié pára compo- a lady, and after all they
nér úna Dâma, y por cá- think nothing well done.
bo les parece que no hâi
côsa bién hécha.

D. 1. Si en mi hallá- 1 L. If you see any thing
res côsa buéna, no quiéro that is good in me, I would
B b 2 que

que me lo digas, que pa- not have you tell me of it,
 réce adulación, cuéntalo, for it looks like flattery, you
 si quisiéres, en mi ausén- may tell it, if you will, in
 cia ; lo malo que en mi my absence ; what ill you
 viéres, dímelo à mi, que see in me, tell me of it, and
 te lo agradeceré ; y callalo I will thank you ; and con-
 afuera. ceal it abroad.

Cr. 2. Mi Señora Do- 2 Serv. My Lady Su-
 ña Susana está aquí. fanna is here.

D. 1. Pues la tienes al- 1 L. Do you keep her
 lá, sin decirle que éntre ? there, without bringing her
 Como os hacéis Señora in ? Madam, why do you
 tan estraña ; siendo tan a make your self so great
 mías, para que usáys de a stranger, when we are
 cumplimientos, sabiendo such friends, why do you
 que no gusto dellos ? use compliments, knowing I
 do not love them ?

D. 2. No parece cor- 2 L. It does not look like
 tesía entrarse sin avisar ; y good breeding, to come in
 aunque nuestra amistad without giving notice ; and
 parece disculpa, siempre tho' our friendship seems an
 es bueno el decóro, y dí- excuse, yet decency is al-
 cen que la demasiada fa- ways good, and it is a say-
 miliaridad causa despré- ing, that too much familia-
 cio. rity breeds contempt.

D. 1. 'Eso no se en- 1 L. That is not to be
 tiende éntre nosótras ; pe- understood between us ; but
 ró aquí viene Don Juan, here comes Don John, who
 que es persona de mucho is a person of much worth,
 mérito, y muí entretení- and very good company.

Cabal. 1. Mil años vi- 1 Gent. Long may they
 va quien tanta honra me live who do me so much ho-
 hace, mereciendo yó tan nour, when I deserve so lit-
 poco ; aunque no estói tle ; tho' I am not quite
 sin mérito, pues trahigo a void of merit, for I have
 quí à Don Rodrigo, en brought Don Rodrigo, on
 quien serán bien emple- whom those commendations
 adas éssas alabanzas. may be well bestowed.

Cab. 2. No quiero responder, no piensen éstas Señoras que venimos de concierto à decir bien de nosotros mismos. 2 Gent. I will not answer, lest these ladies should think, that we have agreed to speak favourably of our selves.

D. 1. Sienténse v^s. m^s. sin ceremonias, que es tiempo perdido el que se gasta en ellas. 1 L. Be pleased to sit down without ceremony, for all the time that is spent in it is lost.

Cab. 1. No es ceremonia el respéto que se debe à las Dámas; ni es lisonja decir lo que está patente à todos; y por ésto podré afirmar que éntre las ótras perfecciones que acompañan à mi Señora Doña Isabel, se esméra en escogér criadas; qué si no estuviéran presentes dos tales bellézas, parecióra soberána la desta donzella, à quien Diós haga dichosa. 1 Gent. The respect that is due to Ladies is no ceremony; nor is it any flattery to utter that which is apparent to all men; and therefore I may affirm, that among all the perfections that attend my Lady I-Doña Isabel, she excels in the choice of her maids; for if there were not two such beauties present, that of this maiden would seem surprizing, God make her very fortunate.

D. 1. Si le decís à la mugér que es hermosa una vez, el diáblo se lo dirá diéz, según la vulgar opinión; por ésto mejor es callár las alabanzas, aunque sean verdaderas, que no ponerles motivos de vanidad, que siémpre sóbran en nosótras. 1 L. If you tell a woman once that she is handsome, the devil will tell her so ten times, according to the vulgar notion; for which reason it is better to forbear praises, though they be true, than to give them occasion for vanity, which is always overflowing in us.

D. 2. No se que tienen los hombres, que por mas que apetézcan las hermosas cómo háya dinéros se casan con las feás. 2 L. I know not what ails men, that though they are never so fond of beautiful women, provided there be money, they marry the ugly.

Cab. 2. 'Ellos dicen que las toman à péso, sin mirár en la hechúra. 2 *Gent.* *They say they take them by weight, without regarding the fashion.*

D. 1. Si no fuéa así, muchas desgraciadas se fuéran vírgenes à la sepultura. 1 *L.* *If it were not for that, many unfortunate ones would carry their maidenheads to their graves.*

Cab. 1. Despoblárase déssa manéra el mundo, pués es verdád conocida, que pára úna buena cara hái tres malas, y mas de quátro que apénas se pueden llamar passadéras. 1 *G.* *That way the world would be unpeopled, since it is a known truth, that for one good face there are three bad ones, and above four that can scarce be called tolerable.*

D. 2. Por lo que se ha dicho, hái tantos mal casádos; porqué tomándose à péso, no pueden con la carga, y dan con élla en el suélo, buscádo ótros entretenimiéntos. 2 *L.* *That which has been said is the reason that there are so many unhappy couples; for as they take one another by weight, they cannot bear the burden, but let it drop to seek other diversions.*

Cab. 2. No salen siémpre desgraciádos los casamiéntos por las malas caras, antes mas véces por las peóres condiciones. 2 *Gent.* *Marriages are not always unhappy by reason of the bad faces, but oftner on account of the worse conditions.*

D. 1. Pués así es, me parece que cómo hái Tribunales pára todos delitos, le havía de haver particular pára los que cométen los casádos; no digo sólo pára los adultérios, pero también para castigár las culpas que se cométen entre marido y mugér en no tratárse cómo deben con amor, y respéto, dexándose 1 *L.* *Since it is so, I am of opinion, that as there are Courts for all crimes, there ought to be in particular for those that married persons are guilty of; I do not mean only for adulteries, but also to punish the faults that are committed between husband and wife in not treating one another as they ought, with*

dexándose llevar de sus *affection, and respect*, giving way to their passions, con que se pi- *ing way to their passions*, érde la paz para siémpre. *which destroys some for ever.*

Cab. 1. 'Essos juéces *1 G. Those judges ought*
havían de tener don de *to have the gift of prophecy;*
prophecía; que de ótra *for otherwise it would be*
manéra fuéa imposible *impossible to decide who had*
averiguár quién tenía mas *been most to blame in those*
cúlpa en éstas pendéncias *home broils; and for the*
caséras; y las mas véces *most part the women are*
son las mugéres las que- *the plaintiffs, the men being*
xófas, calládo los hóm- *silent to avoid discovering*
bres por no descubrir su *their shame.*
afrénta.

Cab. 2. Pués se ha ha- *2 G. Since mention has*
bládo de juicios, aunque *been made of judgments,*
no séa à éste propósito, *though it be not to this pur-*
fino les desagráda à é- *pose, if it be not displeasing*
stas Señóras, diré úno no- *to these Ladies, I will re-*
table del Rey Don Pédro, *late a very notable one of*
que por ser desgraciádo, *King Peter, whom because*
le llamaron el cruél. *he was unfortunate, they*
called the cruel.

D. 2. Díga v. m. mui *2 L. Tell it, in God's*
en buena hóra, pués no *name, Sir, since we are*
tenémos obligación de a- *not bound to confine our*
tarnos à úna matéria, y *selves to one subject, and*
la variedád es agradáble. *variety is pleasing.*

Cav. 2. Con éssa licén- *2 G. Upon that permis-*
cia dígo, que un Arcedi- *sion, I say, that an Arch-*
áno de la Iglésia de Sevíl- *deacon of the church of Se-*
la, mató à un zapatéro, vil *la, killed a shoemaker, and*
y un hijo súyo fué à pe- *a son of his went to demand*
dír justícia. Condenóle *justice. The ecclesiastical*
el Juéz Ecclesiástico en *Judge condemned him not to*
que no dixesse missa un *say mass in one year. Soon*
año. Désde à pocos dí- *after King Peter came to*
as vino el Rey Don Pédro *Sevil, and the dead man's*
a Sevilla, y el hijo del *son complained to him of*
muerto

muerto se le quexó de la *that murder. The King ask-*
 dicha muerte. El Rey le *ed him, whether he had*
 pereguntó, si había pedi- *demanded justice. He told*
 do justícia. El le contó *him the case as it was. The*
 el caso cómo passaba. *king said to him, Have you*
 Dixo el Rey, Serás tu hom- *courage enough to kill him,*
 bre para matá-le, pues no *since they will not do you*
 te hacen justícia? Si Se- *justice? Yes, Sir, answered*
 ñor, respondió el zapaté- *the shoemaker. Do so then,*
 ro. Pues házlo así, dixo *said the king. The next day*
 el Rey. El día siguién- *the arch-deacon walking ve-*
 yendo el Arcediáno bién *ry near the king in a pro-*
 cerca del Rey en una pro- *cession, the injured man*
 cession, llegóse el agravi- *stept up, and stabbed him*
 ado, y dióle dos puñalá- *in two places, so that he*
 das de que cayó muerto. *dropt down dead. The of-*
 Prendióle la justícia, y *ficers apprehended him, and*
 mándo el Réy que le trux- *the king ordered that he*
 éssen ánte el, y pregun- *should be brought before him,*
 tole, porqué había muerto *and asked him why he killed*
 el hombre. El mózo dixo, *that man. The young man*
 Señor, porqué mato á mi *said, Sir, because he killed*
 padre; y aunque pedí ju- *my father, and though I*
 stícia no me la hicieron. *demanded justice, it was*
 El juéz ecclesiástico, que *not done me. The ecclesi-*
 cerca estaba, respondió *astical judge, who was by,*
 por sí, que se la había hé- *answered for himself, that*
 cho, y muí cumplida. El *he had done him justice, and*
 Réy quiso saber la justícia. *very fully. The king would*
 El juéz respondió que le *know what justice it was.*
 había condenádo que en un *The judge answered he had*
 año no dixesse missa. El *condemned him not to say*
 Réy díxo á su alcálde, Sol- *mass in a year. The king*
 tad ésse hombre, y yó le *then said to the goaler, Dis-*
 condéno, que en un año *miss that man, and I con-*
 no cosa zapátos. *demn him not to sow any*
shoes in a year.

D. I. Si mirámos en el *I L. If we look upon*
 modo de proceder, bién *the manner of the proceed-*
se

se ve que no es conforme à las leyes ; mas si en las leyes no se hálle la justicia, razón es que no fálte por ótra vía. El matár al clérigo el ofendido, parece sacrilégio también cómo vengánza, según la opinión christiana, y con todo tiéne su justificación, fiendo por mandádo de un Réy, que es juez supremo, y por no havér ótro camino de castigár tan gráve delito : pués el no decír missa en un año no era péna competente à tal maldád, y las que cometen las personas dedicadas à Diós, merecen mayor castigo que las de los seglares.

ing, it is plain it is not according to law ; but if the law will not afford justice, it is but reasonable that other means be found for it. The plaintiff's killing a clergyman, looks like sacrilege as well as revenge, according to the christian notion, and yet it is in some manner justifiable, being done by the command of a king, who is supreme judge, and there being no other way to punish so heinous a crime : for the not saying mass during a year, was not an equivalent penalty to such an offence, and those that are committed by persons dedicated to God, deserve greater punishment than those of the laity.

Cab. 1. No pudiéra averlo decidído mejór el mas famoso letrado ; y éste caso me tráhe à la memoria lo que hizo el Alcálde Calderón. Fuése à quexár à el un criado de unos Religiosos, de que habiéndoles servído el tiempo à que estáva obligádo por concierto, no le querían pagar, porqué se quedáffe con ellos, pareciéndoles bien su servicio. El Alcálde embio à llamar al pádre Procurádor,

I G. The ablest lawyer could not have decided it better, and this case puts me in mind of what the Alcalde Calderon did. A servant belonging to certain religious men went to complain to him, that having served them the time he was obliged to by contract, they would not pay him, that he might stay with them, they liking his service. The Alcalde, or judge, sent for the father procurator, in-
supli-

suplicando por merced viniéssse à su casa, à tratar sóbre ciérto negocio; y avisó à un Alguazil, que en viniendo le tomássse la mula, en que venía, y la pusiéssse à buen recaudo. Venido el, recibióle el Alcálde con mucha cortesía, y le rogó pagássse aquel póbre hombre, que se quería ir à su tierra. El procurador se sonrió, diciendo, v. m. no es nuéstro juéz, sinó de los seglares, si algo debémos à ésse hombre, pídale ánte nuéstro juéz, el qual le hará justícia. Con ésto se despidió, y pidiendo su mula, dixo el mózo, que un Alguazil se la havia llevado. Bolvió à quexárse al Alcálde, el qual le respondió: Señor, vueéstra reverencia no me podrá negár que la mula es seglar. Cómo tal la guardó, hásta que pague el procurador al criado.

D. 2. Buéna gracia tu-
vo por ciérto el Alcálde.
Táles debiéran de ser tó-
dos los juéces, para alí-
vio de los que no le hal-
lán por ótra manéra. Y
pués va de senténcias, vá-
ya también esta. Trahían

2 L. *Indeed the Alcalde
was very pleasant. All judges
ought to be like him, for the
benefit of those who cannot
be otherwise relieved. And
since we are upon judgments,
take this also. There was
a controversy in an univer-
pleyto*

pleito en una universidad *sity, about precedency be-*
 sobre quién iría delante, *tween the doctors of law,*
 los doctóres jurístas, y los *and the doctors of physick.*
 de medicina. Preguntó el *The judge asked the parties,*
 juéz à las partes; Quán- *When a man is carried to*
 do llévan alguno à justi- *execution for being a thief,*
 ciár por ladrón, qual va *which goes foremost, the*
 delante, el que ajustician, *criminal, or the executio-*
 o el verdúgo? Respondi- *ner? They answered, the*
 éron, el que ajustician va *criminal goes before. If it*
 delante. Si así es, díxo *is so, said the judge, let the*
 el juéz, vayan delante los *lawyers go foremost as*
 jurístas cómo ladrones, y *thieves, and let the physi-*
 sígan los médicos cómo *cians follow them as exe-*
 verdúgos. *cutioners.*

Cab. 2. Ya que hémos 2 G. *Since we are fal-*
 dado con los médicos, *len upon physicians, I will*
 daré yó mi badajáda. En *let my clapper go. At pope*
 la mésa del pápa Alexán- *Alexander the sixth's table*
 dro vi. se disputaba un *it was argued one day,*
 día, si éra provechoso que *whether it were advanta-*
 huviéssse en la republica *gious to the public to have*
 médicos? La mayor parte *physicians. The majority*
 túvo que no; y alegaron *affirmed it was not, and*
 en su razón, que Róma e- *alleged to make good their*
 stúvo 600 años sin ellos. *assertion, that Rome sub-*
 Díxo el papa, que el no *sisted 600 years without*
 éra de aquel parecer; por- *them. The pope said he*
 qué à faltár ellos, crece- *was not of that opinion; be-*
 ría tanto la multitud de *cause if there were none of*
 los hombres, que no ca- *them, the multitude of men*
 brían en el mundo. *would increase so much,*
that the world could not
contain them.

D. 1. No digámos mal 1 L. *Let us not speak ill*
 de los médicos, pués en *of physicians, since when*
 teniendo necesidad los ha- *we shall be in want, we*
 vémós de llamar aunque *must send for them, though*
 nos

nos pése, y ellos à véces *ever so much against our*
 nos hacen mal porqué as- *wills, and they sometimes*
 sí lo queremos, cómo le *do us harm because we will*
 pudo suceder à un hom- *have it so, as might hap-*
 bre mui rico, que havi- *pen to a very rich man,*
 éndose hallado algo in- *who having found himself*
 dispuesto la nóche antes, *somewhat indisposed the*
 embió à llamar un médi- *night before, he had a phy-*
 co; el qual venido, havi- *sician called; who being*
 éndole tomado el púlso, *come, and having felt his*
 preguntó, si comía bien? *pulse, asked, whether he*
 Respondió, que sí. Bol- *did eat his meat heartily?*
 vió à preguntár el me- *He answered he did. The*
 dico, si dormía bien? *physician asked again, whe-*
 Respondió, que sí. Re- *ther he slept well, he answer-*
 plicó el médico, Pues yó *ed he did. The physician*
 os daré con que se os quí- *replied, Then I will give*
 te todo ésto. *you something that shall re-*
move all that.

Cab. 1. Buena respuésta; *I G. A good answer;*
 y bien empleádo el qui- *and it is not done amiss to*
 tárla la salud à quien no *deprive one of his health,*
 está conténto con élla. A- *who is not satisfied with it.*
 unqué no parésca tan a- *Though it looks not so exact*
 justádo en todo, por haver *in all points, since it con-*
 cura y salud, diré lo que *cerns curing, and health:*
 me ha venido à la cabé- *I will tell what is come in-*
 za. Descalabró uno à su *to my head. A man broke*
 mugér, por ciérta terri- *his wife's head for her in-*
 bilidad que en élla había, *tolerable temper, and bad*
 y curóla con mucha cósta *her cured with much cost*
 y cuidádo, tanto que élla *and care, in so much, that*
 decía éntre sí: Yo estói *she said to herself: I am*
 segura de aquí adelante no *safe enough, that for the*
 óse mi marido hacérme *future, my husband will*
 mal, por no gastár ótro *not dare hurt me, for fear*
 tanto cómo ha gastádo. *of being at so great an ex-*
 Comunico éste pensami- *pence as he has now been.*
 énto con sus vezinas y no *She told her neighbours*
 falto

falto quién se lo contáſſe al *what ſhe thought, and ſome-*
 marido. Calló el háſta *body told her huſband. He*
 que eſtúvo ſana, cuándo *took no notice till ſhe was*
 llamándo al cirujáno ánte *well, when calling the ſur-*
 élla, y ſabído lo que mon- *geon before her, and under-*
 tába la cúra, le dixo. A- *ſtanding what the cure came*
 qui tiene v. m. lo que le *to, he ſaid to him, Sir,*
 débo, y ótro tánto pára *here is what I owe you,*
 ótra vez, ſi ſe le ofreci- *and as much more for ano-*
 ére que lo háya meneſtér *ther time, if my wife ſhall*
 mi mugér. *happen to have occaſion.*

D. 2. Táles mugéres 2 L. *Such women de-*
 tal tráto merécen : que a- *ſerve ſuch uſage: for though*
 unqué no es de hómbrs *it does not become men of*
 de porte ponér las mános *faſhion to ſtrike them, there*
 en éllas, lénguas hái, y *are ſuch tongues and tem-*
 condicónes que oblígan *pers as oblige people to do*
 à lo que no ſe pienſa. Por *what they never thought.*
 eſto ſe díce que el pádre *Therefore they ſay the fa-*
 da el dote, y Diós la bu- *ther gives the portion, and*
 éna mugér. Pero hái *God the good wiſe. But*
 hombres tan ſufrídos que *there are ſome men ſo pa-*
 por tódo paſſan ; tal éra *tient, that they bear with*
 un cornúdo, à quién ſen- *all things ; ſuch a one was*
 tenció la juſticia, que le *a cuckold, who was adjudg-*
 azotáſſe ſu mugér, y que *ed in court to be whipped*
 ſi no le diéſſe récio le di- *by his wife, and in caſe ſhe*
 eſſe à élla el verdúgo. El *did not ſtrike bard, the ex-*
 buén hómbrs volvió la *ecutioner was to ſtrike her.*
 cabéza, y díxo, Dáme *The good man looked about,*
 récio à mi Catarína, no *and ſaid, ſtrike me bard*
 te den à ti. *Catherine, that they may*
not ſtrike you.

Cab. 2. No éra tan ſu- 2 G. *A ſon-in-law was*
 frído un yerno que rogó *not ſo patient, who deſired*
 à ſu ſuégro que caſtigáſſe *his father-in-law to chaſtiſe*
 ſu hija, porqué ſi el la ca- *his daughter, becauſe if he*
 ſtigába ſería muí peór, y *did it himſelf, ſhe would be*
 el ſabía que le hacía trai- *worſe, and he knew ſhe*
 cion.

cion. Respondió el suegro, reposaos hijo, que por vida de entrámbos, lo mismo hizo su madre hasta que llegó à los sesenta. Ella lo perderá, que así lo hizo ella. Por esto se dice, que se van al cielo los cornudos, porque tanta paciencia no puede quedár sin premio.

was false to him. The father-in-law answered, Be easy, my son, for by both our lives, her mother did the same, till she came to sixty years of age. She will leave it off, for so the other did. Therefore they say cuckolds go to heaven, because so much patience cannot go unrewarded.

D. 1. Algo groseros, con perdon, son estos cuentos, y por mudár, ya que en lo último se habló de ir al cielo, diré lo que he oído acerca de irse al infierno. A un buen predicador, porque decia las verdades, le daban un opispado en las Indias, en tiempo del Emperador Carlos quinto. Propusosele el secretario de estado, y el respondió desta manera. Sépa vuestra señoría, que el oficio de obispo es muy gran trabajo, para quien le ha de servir como es obligado; y así conociendo yo mi flaqueza de no le poder administrar como debo, créo que puesto en el sería caminar al infierno, pues ir por las Indias, paréceme gran rodeo.

I L. Begging your pardon, these tales are somewhat coarse, and to change, since in the last there was mention of going to heaven, I will say what I have heard about going to hell. Because a good preacher spoke the naked truth, they offered him a bishoprick in the West-Indies, in the days of the Emperor Charles the fifth. The Secretary of state proposed it to him, and he answered thus. Your lordship must understand, that the office of a bishop is very troublesome, for one that will execute it according to his duty; so that I being sensible of my incapacity to perform it as I ought, do think that if I were once settled in it, I should be in the way to hell, and to go by the way of the West-Indies, is very far about.

Cab. I. Grandéza de ánimo christiano fué no admitir un obispado, cosa háрто rara en nuéstras dias, quándo mas se trabája por ganár una mitra que por ganár el ciélo. Si es generosidad rehusar lo que no se possée, no lo es ménos dár con máno liberal y buena gracia lo que yá es propio. Esta virtud estúvo en su punto en el Conde de Uréna. Llegó à el Don Pedro de Guzman, à suplicalle le mandásse dar algun trigo, porque estába fálto de pan, que aquél año se havia cogido póco. Dixo el Conde à su secretário le hiciéssse un libramiénto pára un mayordómo súyo, de mil hanégas de trigo, y miéntras el secretário le escribía, quedó hablando con Don Pédro. Venido el secretário con el libramiénto, halló que decía, Daréis à Don Pédro mil hanégas de trigo, de que yo le hágo mercéd. Rasgó el libramiénto, y con alguna cólera dixo al secretário, No havéis de decir, sinó que el Señor Don Pédro de Guzmán me háce mercéd de recibir de mi. Esta es la verdadera

I. G. *It was a christian act of generosity not to accept of a bishoprick, a thing very rare in our days, when more pains is taken to get a mitre, than to gain heaven. If it is generosity to refuse what we have not in possession, it is no less so to give freely, and with a good grace that which is our own already. This virtue was in much peresection in the Count de Ureña. Don Pedro de Guzman came to desire he would order him some corn, because it was scarce with him, that year having yielded very little. The Count commanded his secretary to write an order to one of his stewards for a thousand bushels of wheat, and whilst the secretary was writing, he discoursed with Don Pedro. When the secretary brought the order, he found it run, You shall deliver to Don Pedro a thousand bushels of wheat, which I favour him with. He tore the order, and with some heat said to the secretary, You are not to say so, but which Don Pedro de Guzman does me the favour to accept from me. This is true nobility, to give as becomes the giver, nobléza,*

nobléza, dar conforme à *and not to the receiver, and*
 quién da y no à quién re- *to save him that asks the*
 cíbe, y quitar la vergüen- *shame by the way of giving.*
 za à quién pide con el
 módo de dar.

D. 2. Mas gustóla ma- *2 L. The subject we have*
 téria es la que tenemos én- *in hand is more agreeable*
 tre mãos que la pasáda, *than the last, in as much as*
 cuánto es mas de estimar *virtue is more to be valued*
 la virtud que el vicio. Pá- *than vice. To go on with*
 ra proseguir con élla, al *it, an old gentlewoman*
 Dúque de *Alva* suplicó ú- *prayed the Duke de Alva*
 na dueña le ayudáse pára *to give her something to-*
 casar una hija. El Duque *wards marrying off a daugh-*
 le mandó dar véinte du- *ter. The Duke ordered her*
 cádos. El camaréro à *twenty ducats. The gen-*
 quien lo mandó dióle do- *tleman be ordered to do it,*
 cientos. Al tomárle des- *gave her two hundred.*
 pues la cuenta halló pu- *When he came afterwards*
 éstos docientos ducádos *to take his accounts, he*
 en lugar de véinte. Díxole *found two hundred ducats*
 al camaréro cómo pusíste *set down instead of twenty.*
 aqui docientos ducádos, *He said to the gentleman,*
 no haviendo de ser sinó *How came you to set down*
 veinte. El camarero res- *two hundred ducats, where-*
 pondió. Señor, yó oí *as there should be but twen-*
 docientos ducádos. Re- *ty. The gentleman answer-*
 plicó el Dúque. Bendito *ed, my lord, I understood*
 sea Dios, que te dió me- *two hundred. The Duke*
 jores oídos, que à mi lén- *replied, God be praised, for*
 gua. Y pasó en cuenta *giving you better ears, than*
 los docientos ducádos. *me a tongue. And so he*
passed the two hundred du-
cats in the account.

Cab. 2. Bien enmendó *2 G. He made good a-*
 la falta en el dar con la li- *mends for the error in giv-*
 beralidad de consentir en *ing by his liberality in con-*
 lo dado. El Conde de *senting to what had been*
 Féria tenía tanta grandé- *given. The Count de Feria*
 za

za de animó, que dáva à todos quántos le pedían. Tenía costúmbre de dezir à su mayordómo, Dad à fuláno tréinta, o quarénta escúdos; dad à citáno cien escúdos, o ciento y cinquenta, de manera que nunca decía cosa señalada. El mayordómo le díxo, de que v^a. s^a. manda dar algo, dice tréinte o quarénta, y así de otros números, con que quedo confuso, sin saber à que me atenga. Respondió el Conde; Por tu vida te atén siémpre à lo mas, no mudes mi condición.

D. I. Céssen un rato las pláticas, y sirvânse v^s. m^s. de tomar algún refresco, o colación. Aquí hai chocoláte, téa, dulces, y un trágó de víno, para que escója cáda qual lo que mas le agradare; que ésto de hablar, sino es trabájo, gasta el aliento, y es menester dar algún alívio al estómagó, que son muchas las horas entre la comída y la cena.

I L. Let us for a while cease this discourse, and be pleased to take some refreshment, or collation. Here is chocolate, tea, sweet-meats, and a glass of wine, that every one may choose what he likes best; for talking, though it be no labour, spends the breath, and it is convenient to give some support to the stomach, for there are many hours between dinner and supper.



Coloquios Españóles è Ingléses.
Spanish and English Colloquies.

Colóquio sexto.

COLLOQUY VI.

Entre dos Capitánes, y dos Cortesános. *Between two Captains, and two Courtiers.*

1 Cap. **B**Uen encuen- 1 Cap. **W**E L L met,
tro, Señóres, *Gentlemen,*
dos à dos; conque está- *two and two; so that we*
mos iguáles, no nos lle- *are equal, we shall have no*
varémos ventája en la *superiority in conversation;*
Conversación; y si huvi- *and if we should happen to*
éremos de reñir, à páres *fall out, we are ready pair-*
venímos. *ed.*

1 Cor. A essa cuenta, 1 Cour. *After that rate,*
mas vále no estár tan iguá- *it is better not to be so equal,*
les, que en términos de *than just fitted to make*
armár pendências. *quarrels.*

2 Cap. Bién dice v. 2 Cap. *You are in the*
m^d. que acá éntre Amí- *right, Sir, for here among*
gos sólo seha de tratár de *friends we must only talk of*
Paz; la Guerra há de ser *peace; War must be with*
con los enemigos del *the King's enemies.*
Rey.

2 Cor. Y ésta para v. 2 Cour. *And that is for*
m^{ds}. que han tomado por *you, Gentlemen, who have*
esse camíno; que nosó- *taken to that way; for we*
tros múi bién nos hallá- *are very well satisfied with*
mos con la quietúd de la *the repose of the Court.*
Corte.

1 Cap. 'A nosótro nos 1 Cap. *This has fallen*
há cabído esto en parte, *to our lot, and the other to*
y à

y à v. mds. lo otro ; Cada uno se acomóda con aquéllo paraque nació.

yours ; every one suits himself to that he was born for.

1 Cor. Fuérza es que háya de todo en éste mundo : 'Unos hizo Diós pára la Milícia, ótros pára Palácio ; únos pára Religiosos, ótros para tratan-
tes ; unos para oficios me-
cánicos, ótros pára labradóres ; únos pára mandár, y ótros para ser-
vír.

1 Cour. *There must of necessity be of all sorts in this world : God made some for warfare, others for the Court ; some for religious men, others for trades ; some for mechanic employ-ments, others for Peasants ; some to command, and others to serve.*

2 Cap. La misma variedad que se hálla en los diferentes estádos, vémos en las Capacidades y disposiciones de los hombres. Personas hái que son hábiles para tódos los puestos, péro son pocas ; y estas si son afortunadas van subiendo de úno en ótro hásta alcanzár múi grandes honras. Al contrario hái ótros, que no teniendo habilidad pára cósa alguna, alcanzan lo que quíeren ; y generalmente hablando, los mas beneméritos son desgraciados, digo de los buenos soldados.

2 Cap. *The same variety that is found in several states, we see in the capacities and dispositions of men. There are some persons qualified for all posts, but they are few ; and those if they are fortunate, rise from one to the other, till they attain to great honours. On the contrary there are others, that being very undeserving obtain what they please ; and generally speaking, the most deserving are unlucky, I speak of the good soldiers.*

2 Cor. Lo mismo sucede en la Corte, en donde solo aquellos que empleán tódo su talento en agasajár las Dámas y agra-

2 Cour. *The same happens at Court, where only those that spend all their talent in making much of the Ladies and pleasing*

dárlas, son losque mé- *them, are the persons that*
 dran. *thrive.*

1 *Cap.* Eſſo es verdád ; 1 *Cap.* *That is true ;*
 y quantos hémos viſto al- *and how many we have*
 canzár puestos de mucha *ſeen advanced to poſts of*
 reputación por ſóla ſu *much reputation, only for*
 deſverguenza, ò por ſu *their impudence, or their*
 dinero, quedandole atrás *money, the deſerving per-*
 las perſónas de mérito. *ſons being laid aſide.*

1 *Cor.* Quien es enco- 1 *Cour.* *He that is baſh-*
 gído guárdeſe de entrár *ful muſt take heed of going*
 en córtés ; ningunos mé- *to courts ; none thrive like*
 dran como los deſcarados, *foreheads of braſs, flatte-*
 aduladores, y losque tié- *rers, and thoſe that have*
 nen deſpéjo. *confidence with themſelves.*

2 *Cap.* Los ſoldádos 2 *Cap.* *We the ſoldiers*
 tenemos algo de eſſe ví- *have ſome ſhare in that*
 cio, porque de ótra fuer- *vice, becauſe otherwiſe we*
 te no fuéramos de prové- *ſhould not be fit for war :*
 cho pára la guérrea : tres *we have three motives to*
 motivos tenemos para ex- *expoſe ourſelves to ſo many*
 ponernos à tantos trabájos *hardſhips and dangers ;*
 y peligros ; que ſon, por *which are, for the Faith,*
 la Fé, por la honra, y *for honour, and for pro-*
 por el provécho. Los *fit. We the ſoldiers,*
 ſoldádos (Díós nos per- *(God forgive us) though we*
 dóne) aunque hagámos *make war againſt the In-*
 guerra à Infiéles, mas *fidels, human advantages*
 nos muéven las médras *have more influence over us*
 humanas, que las esperan- *than the hopes of heaven.*
 zas del Cielo. La hon- *Honour is a ſovereign mo-*
 ra es un motivo ſoberáno ; *tive ; and though they ſay,*
 y aunque dícen, que bon- *that the ſame bag cannot*
 ra y provécho no cáben en *hold honour and profit,*
 un ſáco, yo digo que bon- *I ſay that honour with-*
 ra ſin provécho es ſombra *out profit is a ſhadow*
 ſin ſubſtancia. Quién ga- *without ſubſtance. Who*
 nó mas honra que el fa- *is there that gained more*
 moſo Capitán Belifário ? *honour than the famous*

Y qui-

Y quien mas desgraciá- Commander Belisarius?
do? And who more unfortu-
nate?

2 Cor. Grande fué la 2 Cour. Great was the
Caída de Belisário, y no fall of Belisarius, nor was
fué menór la de António that of António Pérez
Pérez; aquél fué Gene- less; the former was the
ral del Imperador Justini- Emperor Justinian's Ge-
áno, y éste Ministro fa- neral, and this favorite
vorecido del Rey Don Minister to King Philip
Pbelípe el segundo; el ú- the second; the one a great
no Gran soldádo, el ótro soldier, the other no less a
no menor Cortesáno. Fal- Courtier. Belisarius want-
tóle la ventúra à Belisá- ed the fortune to have it in
rio de poder, y tener à his power, and have a
donde huír; túvola Antó- place to fly to; António
nio Pérez, en escapárse y Pérez had it in making his
hallár un Rey de Frán- escape, and finding a King
cia que le sustentáse con- of France to maintain him
forme à su Calidád. according to his quality.

1 Cap. Ahí se vé lo 1 Cap. That shows how
póco que háí que fiár en little trust is to be reposed in
las grandézas de ésta ví- the grandours of this life.
da. Dos de los mayores Two of the greatest men
hombres que húvo en el there have been in the
mundo, el úno sacádos world, one of them his eyes
los ójos, el ótro puesto put out, the other put up-
en un tormento; el úno on a rack; the one beg-
mendigando por las cál- ging in the streets, the other
les, el ótro huyendo por flying to save his life; and
librárla la vída, y ésto not for any offence of either
sin culpa de ninguno de of them.
ellos.

1 Cor. Que un Rey 1 Cour. For a King to
castigue à sus Vasállos punish his subjects for being
por desleáles, es justícia; disloyal, it is justice; to per-
péro que persiga sin pie- secute his subject without
dad un Vasállo, solo por mercy, only for having
haverle

haverle obedecido, es in- *obeyed him, is such an hor-*
 humanidad tan horrible, *rid inhumanity, that the*
 que apenas se hallará se- *like of it can scarce be found*
 mejante entre las mas bár- *among the most barbarous*
 baras naciones. Mucho *nations. Some authors*
 han escrito algunos Au- *have writ much in com-*
 tores en alabanza de a- *mendation of that King, but*
 quel Rey, pero quien *whosoever shall read his life*
 leyere su vida con aten- *with attention, will find*
 ción, hallará que el fué la *that he was the ruin of*
 ruína de España. *Spain.*

2 Cap. Loque à nosó- *2 Cap. What concerns*
 tros nos importa, es pro- *us, is to endeavour to rise,*
 curar subir, sin ponernos *without standing to consider*
 à pensar si podremos caer; *whether we may fall; the*
 la dificultad está en lo pri- *difficulty consists in the first*
 méro, y venga después *part, and let what will af-*
 loque viniere. *terwards follow.*

2 Cor. Habilidad y bu- *2 Cour. There must be*
 en ánimo es menester pa- *capacity and a good heart*
 ra todo, y lo cierto es, *for every thing, and it is*
 que elque no tiene su pun- *certain, that he who has*
 to de Ambición, mas es *not some share in ambition,*
 para un convento que pá- *is fitter for a monastery than*
 ra el mundo. *for the world.*

1 Cap. Quién le há *1 Cap. Who has told*
 dicho, que en los Con- *you, that there is no ambi-*
 ventos no se hálle ambi- *tion in the convents? Do*
 ción? No vemos todos *not we see every day, there*
 los días que son demasiá- *are too many that trouble*
 dos losque revuelven el *all the world to rise to be*
 mundo para ser Superi- *Superiors, and even Bi-*
 ores, y aún Obispos? *shops?*

1 Cor. Es cierto, y *1 Cour. It is certain,*
 harto nos dan enque en- *and we have enough to do*
 tender. *with them.*

2 Cap. Dexémoslos al- *2 Cap. Let us leave*
 lá, y solo digo, que nu- *them there, I only say,*
 estra

estra veréda es múi estre- *that our path is very nar-*
 cha, y cáda pássó se há *row, and every step is to*
 de ír ganando à fuégo y *be gained with fire and*
 à sangre; y si despues *blood; and if after all we*
 de esto se alcanza algo, *attain something, an unhap-*
 lléga una desdicháda bála *py ball comes and over-*
 y dá con tódo en tier- *throws it all.*
 ra.

2 Cor. Aunque noso- 2 Cour. *Although we*
 tros no estámos tan su- *are not so subject to so ma-*
 jétos à tantos trabájos y *ny hardships and fatigues,*
 fatigas, neccesidádes, frí- *wants, colds, heats, bad*
 os, calóres, malos días y *days, and worse nights, to*
 peóres nóches, à tantas *so many wounds, and to*
 herídas, y à tantos ries- *so many dangers, fatal effects*
 gos, (efectos fatales de la *of war; notwithstanding,*
 guerra): sin embargo, *I assure you, that we have*
 les asseguro, que no nos *war and dangers enough in*
 faltan guerra y pelígrós *courts, although we do*
 en la corte aunque la ha- *make it after another man-*
 cémos de otra fuerte; no *ner; we do not make our*
 ensangrentámos las espá- *swords bloody, we spend no*
 das, no gastámos pólvó- *powder; bullets do not kill;*
 ra; no mátan las bálas; *all victories are gained by*
 todas las vitórias se gá- *contrivance and stratagems;*
 nan por ardídes y estra- *wit, the pen, and tongue*
 tagémas; el ingénio, la *work, and not force. It*
 pluma, y lengua obran, *is true, that there reign*
 no la fuerza. Es verdád, *envy, hypocrisy, flattery,*
 que allí reinan la invídia, *deceits, falsities, frauds,*
 hypocresía, lisonjas, en- *and other sorts of wicked-*
 gáños, falsedádes, fráu- *ness, that I am ashamed*
 des, y ótros maldádes, *to make them public, I be-*
 que, à no avergonzarme, *ing one of them; but from*
 por ser uno de ellos, las *what is said you may in-*
 dixéra; pero de lo dicho *fer what passes there.*
 v. m^{da}. puéden inferir lo-
 que allí se passá.

1 y 2 Caps. Si essa es 1 and 2 Caps. If that be
 la vida de la Corte, vi- the Court life, we rather
 vámos y murámos nosó- chuse to live and die in the
 tros en la campaña; don- field; where we fight
 de nos reñimos con nu- with our enemies, and
 éstros enemigos, y tratá- deal justly with our
 mos verdad con los a- friends.
 mígos.

F I N I S.

